

DIPLOMACY IN THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION

Why didn't France want to take back
Canada?

JEAN CLAUDE CASTEX

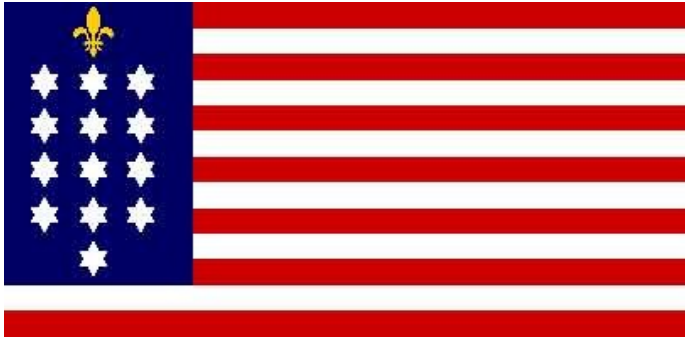


This book is dedicated to the 10,644 American POWs murdered in the internment camp of New York [see Chapter 7].

This book is a critical edition because "without the freedom to blame, there is no flattering praise".

DIPLOMACY
IN THE
AMERICAN REVOLUTION

Why didn't France want to take back Canada?



Flag of the France-America Alliance
1782-1783

JEAN-CLAUDE CASTEX

Lulu.com

Castex, Jean-Claude, 1941-

Title: Diplomacy in the American Revolution.
Why didn't France want to take back Canada?

Book Cover: Scene of the Naval Battle of the Chesapeake Bay, September 5, 1781. Oil on canvas, 60x90cm, by Patrick O'Brien, sea artist. It is also known as the Battle of the Virginia Capes. The Americans, who today do not like to emphasize that they owe their independence to French arms, generally downplay the two great decisive battles of Yorktown and Chesapeake Bay, won by the French over the English. The latter is often referred to as: "The Forgotten Battle Which Won The American Revolution."

Distribution:

www.lulu.com

www.amazon.fr

www.fnac.com

www.chapter.com

www.librairieduquebec.fr

www.lalibrairie.com

ISBN: 978-1-387-52632-1

©Lulu.com

Legal Deposit 2022

National Library of Canada, Ottawa.

Bibliothèque Nationale du Québec, Montréal.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Chapter 1 State of the Thirteen American Colonies between the end of the Seven Years' War and the beginning of the American War of Independence. Economic and religious restraint laws. French spies.

Chapter 2 The causes of this American revolt against England. Huge debt and the refusal to make England's lobbies pay. Discontent and revolt against the tax avalanche. Deportations of English criminals to America. From the reaction of England to the effervescence in the Thirteen Colonies and the movements of rebellion: organized violence; occupation of ports; escalation of unrest; tougher laws. Reactions in Europe. Devastation in retaliation. Native American participation, African slaves. Popular reactions in France. The general behavior of France. English "disinformation" And fakenews.

Chapter 3 Various origins of the soldiers in the English army; in the French and American armies. The pay. Recruitment of German mercenaries. Irish and Amerindian contingents.

Chapter 4 Leniency of France towards England. Navety of France. Direct aid.

Chapter 5 Role of Canada and Canadians. The Test Act imposed everywhere in the Empire, including Canada. Reaction (Quebec Act). Participation of French-Canadians in the two opposing sides. The conquest of Canada either by France or by the Americans. American Proclamations in regard to the Canadians.

Chapter 6 The Battle of Saratoga, the turning point. Decision of the French to intervene. Real causes of the

French intervention. Reception of the French soldiers in America

Chapter 7 POW and hellish pontoons. Crimes against Humanity.

Chapter 8 Battle of the Chesapeake (Naval Waterloo) and Yorktown. Negotiations. Peace signatures In Paris and Versailles.

Chapter 9 Human losses. Reparations. Fate of countries.

Appendix.



CHAPTER 1

State of the Thirteen American Colonies between the end of the Seven Years' War and the beginning of the American War of Independence. Economic and religious restraint laws. French spies.

One day in 1778, after 27 years of exile in his château of Cirey-sur-Blaise, old Voltaire asked to see the man everyone in France and in the world was talking about: Benjamin Franklin. The American came to visit him and Voltaire, who had prepared himself well for this visit, rose theatrically from his bed to recite a few lines from *Thomson's Ode to Liberty*¹.

"Over there, in the south, under a beneficent sun, lie happy colonies, a calm retreat from undeserved poverty, an asylum for those whom bigots are driving out of foreign lands. They are not founded on rapine, servitude and pain to become one day the prey of some miserable tyrant, no, they rise strong and united among themselves by Liberty²."

These happy colonies bathed in a beneficent sun no longer evoked in his mind the *few acres of Canadian snow*. It is true that it was in 1778, the year of his death; it had been 14 years since Madame de Pompadour had left her

¹ • *Ode to Liberty*, by James Thomson. Levine, William, *Studies in English Literature, 1500-1900*, Book.34, No.3, *Restoration and Eighteenth Century*, Rice University, Houston, 1994. pp. 553-577. James Thomson is the poet who created the patriotic poem "Rule, Britannia! Rule the waves: "Britons never will be slaves," "Rule, England, Rule the waves. Britons will never be slaves," a poem that was curiously composed in 1740, at the very moment when England enjoyed a monopoly on the slave trade to the Spanish Empire, and also, on its own Empire.

² • Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye of the Institut de France and Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Book II (1775-1790); p.p. 50; p. 55 et seq.

palace of the Elysée to join the heavenly Elysée, and Nicolas Arouet did not have to rhyme any more the verses of his bad faith to defend his dear commoner friend victim of jealous aristocrats.



This Versailles mistress had given him fat royal pensions in gratitude for his acrimonious defense against all those who pilloried her for the scandals of the Seven Years' War, which she had actively stirred up by her lack of judgment and flippancy, and which had led to the immolation of New France and its French-speaking people, sacrificed by the indifference of Louis XV. And this abandonment of the Canadians had only been the prodrome of the ingratitude of the French government towards the harkis in the time of General de Gaulle. In this ode, England was no longer the paradise of tolerance sung by the same Voltaire in his *Lettres anglaises* —uniquely to lower the arrogance of the French aristocrats who had shown him contempt— but a land of bigots, as blameworthy as the land of France.

If the French soldiers fought as bravely as usual, during this American War of Independence, the French diplomats showed themselves to be as deplorable as usual, since, for reasons that we will highlight in the following pages, they did not demand from the defeated England the restitution of Canada to France at the end of this victorious war, and instead took great care that this country (Canada) remained under the domination of England. Likewise, at the end of the Seven Years' War, only the French Chambers of Commerce protested against the abandonment of Canada, but they preached in the desert³.

³ ●Report of the Archivist of the Province of Quebec (RAPQ), Year 1924-1925: Letters of protest from various Chambers of Commerce of France in 1760-1762, against the

Before plunging into the diplomatic mysteries of the American War of Independence, let us get acquainted with the population of these Thirteen British Colonies that huddled together along the western coast of the Atlantic.

| US Population in 1780 | | | |
|-----------------------|------------------|-----------|-------|
| 1 | English | 1,497,090 | 53.7% |
| 2 | Africans | 538,984 | 19.3% |
| 3 | Irish | 213,000 | 7.6% |
| 4 | Germans | 191,700 | 6.8% |
| 5 | Scots | 106,500 | 3.8% |
| 6 | Dutch | 71,000 | 2.5% |
| 7 | French-Huguenots | 10,650 | 0.3% |
| 8 | Welsh | 7,100 | 0.2% |
| 9 | Swedish | 1,420 | 0.05% |
| | Others | 142,000 | 5.0% |
| | TOTAL | 2,786,744 | 100% |

Source: ICPS Research Inter-University Consortium for Political and Social

If the population of the former New France was still 99.9% very homogeneous, that of New England shone by its strong ethnic heterogeneity. Moreover, the development of the two colonies was also very different.

The historian Francis Parkman commented on this two-speed development: "The growth of New England was the result of the aggregate efforts of busy multitude, each in his narrow circle painting his own corner, toiling for himself to amass wealth or skills. The expansion of New France was the achievement of a gigantic ambition striving to grasp a continent. It was a vain attempt⁴." But this *gigantic ambition* was only an idealized –if not chimerical– missionary dream of the *Eldest Daughter of the Church*⁵ eager to share Heaven with all humans, and not

intention of the Government to cede Canada. (Protest of the Chambers of Commerce of Bordeaux, La Rochelle, Nantes, Marseille, Lyon, Le Havre, Dunkirk and Montpellier) pp. 199-228

⁴ ●Parkman, Francis, *Pioneers of France in the New World*, Little, Brown & Co., Boston, 1896. Introduction of the book, page XXII.

⁵ ●Elder daughter of the Church = old nickname of France.

an intrinsic need of individuals to selfishly improve their individual life. *Personal initiative* was generally discouraged in New France by the French Administration and by the Canadian Catholic clergy. But the French established schools and hospitals throughout the West to train minds and heal bodies. The lamentable story of Des Groseilliers and Radisson perfectly illustrates, if need be, this muzzling of the individual initiative of the French colonists. These two energetic *coureurs-de-bois* (*voyageurs*), proposed to the Governor of Quebec to go on a distant expedition in 1659 to Hudson Bay. But the Governor looked down on them and imposed, if they were lucky enough to return with furs, to pay half of their profits in taxes⁶. The two explorers left anyway. Upon their return, the furs were seized. Disillusioned, the two Frenchmen entered the service of England, were showered with honours and money, and founded the fabulous Hudson's Bay Company for the benefit of that country. England—already in control of the recalcitrant peoples who populated the British Isles⁷, and now in control of these Thirteen Colonies, which promised a grandiose future—, was likely to become a quite formidable superpower. If these prefiguration was to become a reality, the London Merchant Lobbies, insatiable bulimics, becoming the masters of the world, would not hesitate to crush the rest of Europe in order to increase their wealth tenfold, for the sole pleasure of enlarging the mountain of gold they already possessed. This prospect frightened the European courts, especially the court of Versailles, which did not want to be dethrone itself from its continental hegemony, even if, thanks to its money and German blood,

⁶ • We were still far from the 75% required by certain French governments of the 21st century, which shows that four centuries later, the French Government still haven't understood anything about the capitalistic system.

⁷ • These recalcitrant peoples, those of Ireland and Scotland, whom England took centuries to subjugate.

England succeeded very well in uniting the European nations against the French.

| US Population in 1790 | | | |
|--|------------------|-----------|-------|
| 1 | English | 2,100,000 | 53.8% |
| 2 | Africans | 757,000 | 19.4% |
| 3 | Irish | 300,000 | 7.6% |
| 4 | Germans | 270,000 | 6.9% |
| 5 | Scots | 150,000 | 3.8% |
| 6 | Dutch | 100,000 | 2.5% |
| 7 | French-Huguenots | 15,000 | 0.4% |
| 8 | Welsh | 10,000 | 0.2% |
| 9 | Swedish | 2,000 | 0.05% |
| | Others | 200,000 | 5.0% |
| | TOTAL | 3,900,000 | 100% |
| Source: ICPS Research Inter-University Consortium for Political and Social | | | |

The surveillance of the London lobbies thus became one of the essential axes of the French espionage services: "You feel, Sir, of what importance it is, if we cannot divert the blow, to foresee at least the time approximately when it could be struck. This is what the different intelligences will be able to provide for yourself: the correspondence of the ports, the information you receive from the Plantation Office⁸, and the connections you have in the Opposition party [of the English Parliament]... The King does not intend ... that you should suppress [the financing] which you have proposed to provide our intelligence services in the British Plantation Office⁹." Observing the Thirteen

⁸ • London's merchant lobbies were organized as a veritable Royal Administration which bore the official name of *Board of Commerce and Foreign Plantations*. This organization was created by the Crown of England in 1696 as the Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations. It was composed of ex-officio commissioners unpaid who were not required to attend regular meetings and 8 paid commissioners who ran the commercial strategy of the English Government for the benefit of commercial lobbies and financial circles. The oldest (senior) Paid Commissioner was styled the First Lord and presided over the entire Council. Former Commissioners officio consisted of an aristocrat who could thus oversee and influence the House of Lords. Joined them Bishop of London in 1702 and Surveyor and Auditor General of the Plantations in 1721.

⁹ • The Comte de Vergennes to the Comte de Guines, August 7th, 1775 at Versailles. Cornelis De Witt, Thomas Jefferson, *History on American democracy*, Didier, Paris, 1861. p. 470.

English Colonies and looking for deficiencies in this country that hinted at a future of superpower, thus became imperative activities as soon as the fall of New France. To this end, several spies were dispatched by the French intelligence services to observe America.

Monsieur de Pontleroy¹⁰, a lieutenant and artillery officer, began his meticulous study of the Thirteen Colonies at the end of the Seven Years War. "Beaulieu", his code name, presented him as a simple commercial traveler. Officially in the service of a merchant, Pontleroy criss-crossed the coastal seas, charted harbors, probed dangerous passages, and even trained Canadians as pilots and guides whose mission would be to lead French squadrons in a hypothetical invasion; *si vis pacem, para bellum*.

Another anonymous spy published, as early as 1765, *the Journal of a French Traveler in the Colonies*¹¹. He prophetically affirmed that "the American colonies felt their strength growing and were too opulent to persevere in obedience to England. The hope of becoming masters of the fisheries and fur trade, of shaking off the obstacles and impediments to their navigation, and of being able to invade the sugar colonies near the continent on their own account, will sooner or later seduce them, and England must foresee a revolution towards which all the care this country is taking for the improvement of these three colonies¹²."

¹⁰ ●Nicolas Sarrebource de Pontleroy, was a military officer and engineer, born June 12th, 1717, in Marseille, France, son of Jacques Sarrebource Pontleroy de Beaulieu and Madeleine Coustan; married in Sedan on April 17th, 1761 to Elisabeth Arbalestre of Melun, France; and died on August 6th, 1802 in Château-Thierry. Source: Bibliographic Canadian dictionary, Laval University. This officer had fought with General Lévis in Canada until the Treaty of Paris.

¹¹ *American Historical Review* [AHR], Oxford University Press, Cary, North Carolina. XXVI (1920-1921) pp. 726-747; and XXVII (1921-1922) pp. 70-89.

¹² ●De Witt, Cornelis Henri, Thomas Jefferson, *Historical Study of American Democracy*, Academic Bookstore Didier et Cie, Paris, 1862. Durand to Choiseul on August 3, 1766, p. 408. The spy Pontleroy (Beaulieu) mainly describes colonies of New York,

This spy of surprising foresight threw in the same letter a comment of quite divinatory perspicacity, when he added: "Perhaps the English have hastened the loss which they must make, by freeing these colonies from the fear which the arms of France inspired in them when they held Canada."

| US Population in 2000 | | | |
|-----------------------|--|-------------|-------|
| 1 | Germans | 49,206,934 | 17.1% |
| 2 | Africans | 41,284,752 | 13.6% |
| 3 | Irish | 35,523,082 | 11.6% |
| 4 | Mexicans | 31,789,483 | 10.9% |
| 5 | English | 26,923,091 | 9.0% |
| 6 | Italians | 17,558,598 | 5.9% |
| 7 | Polish | 9,739,653 | 3.0% |
| 8 | French | 9,136,092 | 2.9% |
| 9 | Scots | 5,706,263 | 1.9% |
| 10 | Protestant Scots from Ireland | 5,102,858 | 1.7% |
| | Celts already included without the Welsh | 46,332,203 | 15.2% |
| | TOTAL | 282,200,000 | 100% |

Source: United States 2010 Census.

He also added that, if we disregard the colonies of New York, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, "the rest of the country has real strength only in the great number of inhabitants whose *population doubles every twenty years*¹³." They would therefore have "the strength to resist the Metropolis and to become one day the greatest maritime power in the world¹⁴".

In 1766, M. Durant, head of French espionage at the French embassy in London, noted the impressive power of the English financial lobbies that directed all British politics with a rigorous hand¹⁵. He sent his insightful

Maryland and Pennsylvania [Sic!] which he more particularly visited and which are "in all their perfection" according to him.

¹³ • Ibidem. Letter written in London by Monsieur Durand to the Duc de Choiseul in France, August 3rd, 1766, pp. 409-410.

¹⁴ Ibidem. P.409.

¹⁵ •As they still do in this 21st century in England, and in Washington. Read, to be convinced, the book by Carroll Quigley, Professor of Foreign Service at Georgetown

comments to the Duc de Choiseul¹⁶ in Paris, who ruled the country without having the title. It seems to me, he wrote, "that our wars with the English would last less, if so many citizens of London, whom war enriches and who desire it, saw at first hand the horrors it brings with it, and if their trade had suffered losses strong enough to bring them back to more humane feelings... If the violence of England obliged France to renew the war, I would believe, according to this principle, that she should apply herself rather to making her blows fall on the fortunes of individuals than to detach a few parts of the enemy's domain, because public sentiment in these losses would never have as much effect on the deliberations of the nation as the personal interest of those who would have to suffer from the kind of war France would make¹⁷."

According to this Mr. Durant, in case of war, it would be more profitable for France to hit the lobbies in the heart, that is, in the wallet. According to the reports of Pontleroy, who stayed in Philadelphia, the capital of Pennsylvania and of the recalcitrant colonies, two classes of citizens are strongly opposed in this colony. The Quakers and the Presbyterians. The Quakers were English in origin, generally wealthy, and thus controlled the government. "As for the Presbyterians, they are the most numerous but they are a collection of Germans who are very weary of the English government, and who openly say that Pennsylvania will one day be called *Little Germania*. In the last war, these Germans refused to enlist in the service of

University, (Jesuit Catholic University of Washington): *The Anglo-American Establishment*.

¹⁶ • Étienne-François, Comte de Choiseul then Duc de Choiseul-Stainville (1719-1785) was the *de facto* Prime Minister of Louis XV between 1758 and 1770.

¹⁷ • De Witt, Cornélis Henri, Thomas Jefferson, *Étude historique sur la démocratie américaine*, Librairie académique Didier et Cie, Paris, 1862. Durant to Choiseul on August 3rd, 1766, p. 410

England. German officers were brought in who, in a month and a half, enlisted 7,000 men; only in this province and in that of New York, only by officers of that nation. Very few of them spoke English, and they avoided dealing with the English, whom they regard as people always ready to deceive them. They idolize the King of Prussia and respect all those who have been in his service. *If ever France made some enterprise in this country, it would be advantageous to employ German regiments and to put at their head a person of a name known to the worse*¹⁸. Their colonists do not even suffer willingly the establishment of fortresses in their midst. New England and the city of Boston which is its capital, have neither citadels nor strongholds. These peoples fear that they will be used to force them to submit to Acts of Parliament contrary to the privileges they enjoy¹⁹.

Overall, the Germanic group was still a minority, but rapidly growing, and whose pent-up anger could be translated into frustration, into Anglophobia, and used to efficient effect by skilled agitators. The discrimination and contempt that the Germans suffered from the English, who were much richer *by right* in their colonies, and very arrogant, would, in due course, engender terrible reprisals against English Tories. Moreover, they did not refrain to despise the English, who kept their voices high but refused to fight *en masse* in their own armed forces.

Today, in the 21st century, most Germans —now in the majority— firmly believe that there was once a vote to decide what the official language of the United States

¹⁸ • From the Holy Roman Empire, of course, and not from the English Empire. This is why Rochambeau's French Expeditionary Corps will include a German regiment, le Royal Deux-Ponts.

¹⁹ • De Witt, Cornelis Henri, Thomas Jefferson, Historical Study of American Democracy, Didier & Co, Paris, 1862. Durand (in London) to the duke of Choiseul (in Compiègne) on August 7, 1766, pp. 411-412, based on Pontleroy's information.

would be. The German language was, in their opinion, eliminated by only one vote in favor of the English language²⁰. According to some historians of English origin, this was not the case. However, the language became a political issue as early as 1750, when Pennsylvania English settlers began to fear that the influx of Germans ($\frac{1}{3}$ of the population in this province) would jeopardize their race. The fearful anti-immigration arguments were the same as they are today. The philosopher Benjamin Franklin himself considered Pennsylvania Germans as a "swarthy" racial group, distinct from the colony's English majority."

| Demographic size of Caucasian Americans in the year 2100. | | |
|---|--------------------|--------------------|
| 1 | Caucasian or White | 108,928,000 |
| 2 | Others | 364,672,000 |
| TOTAL US POPULATION | | 473,600,000 |
| Source: Calculations from UN Statistics. | | |

In 1751, the same Franklin wrote, "Why should the Palatine Boors be suffered to swarm into our Settlements, and by herding together establish their Language and Manners to the exclusion of ours? Why should Pennsylvania, founded by the English, become a Colony of Aliens, who will shortly be so numerous as to Germanize us instead of us Anglifying them, and will never adopt our Language or Customs, any more than they can acquire our Complexion?"²¹

The English settlers of that time also accused the German immigrants of all evils: laziness, illiteracy, clan spirit, refusal to assimilate (to the English), excessive fertility, and —worst than any— of Catholicism²², when they

²⁰ ● "The Mühlenberg Vote."

²¹ ● Benjamin Franklin's Papers. Ed. Leonard W. Labaree, Yale University Press, New Haven, 1959. Vol.4, p.234.

²² ● Mittelberger, Gottlieb, Journey to Pennsylvania in the year 1750 and return to Germany in the year 1754, Trans. Carl T. Eben, Philadelphia, 1898. p. 104.

practiced that religion. For many of the Germanic immigrants actually came from the southern regions of the Holy Roman Empire (Bavaria and Austria).

In order to analyze specifically the state of mind of these American settlers from the Holy Roman Empire, another French spy of German extraction was dispatched for six months by Choiseul: the Bavarian *baron Johann de Kalb*²³. His mission was to study specifically the opinions of the German population of the Thirteen Colonies and to estimate its strength and its determination²⁴. Himself coming from the Holy Roman Empire, Kalb inspired the Germanic population. Despite his discretion, he was undoubtedly spotted by English authorities because he thought his mail was unsealed. He then returned to France without visiting Canada. His mission was also to sound out the Canadian populations. This abandonment led to his dismissal by Choiseul.

More efficient, the spy Pontleroy made strategic suggestions which could have been very interesting if they had succeeded by convincing the French strategists, but he was only a lieutenant and the generals' minds were as hierarchical as their social caste. He said that the best way to protect those colonies would perhaps be to let them defend themselves alone. For, instead of intervening by flying to the aid of the attacked colony, it would be more effective to attack the enemy's colonies. The very weakness that the enemy finds in ours, exists in his own, and we would have had the same success against the English as they have had

²³ •Johann von Robais, Baron de Kalb 1721-1780) was a Franconian-born French military spy who served as a major general in the Continental Army. He was killed during the Battle of Camden.

²⁴ •Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 47.

against us, since they take very few precautions to guarantee their possessions from a surprise²⁵."

As in any country of immigration today, the diversity of the populations of the Thirteen Colonies was very large. A non-homogeneous country with poorly assimilated populations can expect a strong defection in the event of a war. Many of those who find themselves in some affinity—religious, ethnic, or ideological—with the enemy, will be tempted to betray. But they were not the only ones; even the English who had left their homeland to find and enjoy religious tolerance, felt immediately threatened when the London government wished to impose on them its will and especially a shower of taxes, as we shall see in the second chapter.

In a letter to the Duc de Choiseul, written by M. Durand, head of the French Espionage Bureau in London²⁶, and sent from that city on August 11th, 1767, the author illustrated the ethnic diversity by these words: "In New York City, divine service is held in English, French, German and Dutch patois²⁷

In 1774, the population of the Thirteen Colonies was 2.5 million; 50% of this population (or 1,250,000) considered England to be their *mother country*. They did not mix well with the 554,400 Celts (20%) who saw England as their stepmother, including 125,000 Irish, 100,000 Scots,

²⁵ ●Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson : Étude historique sur la démocratie américaine, Librairie académique Didier et Cie, Paris, 1861. page 411.

²⁶ ● It was Jacques-Abraham Durand d'Aubigny, Minister of the King at the French Embassy in London. Expilly, abbé, Dictionnaire géographique, historique et politique des Gaules et de la France, Tome V., published in Amsterdam, 1768.

²⁷ ●Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson : étude historique sur la démocratie américaine, Page 421.. Letter from M. Durand to the Duc de Choiseul and written in London on August 11, 1767, in connection with information from spies installed in the Thirteen Colonies. In Dutch dialect, as New York had previously been, an English colony.

254,400 Irish-Scottish²⁸ and 75,000 Welsh. In its original homeland island, the Irish Catholic nation, colonized with a view of elimination by the Anglo-Protestant English nation, was the victim of unprecedented violence through the *Test Act*, which demanded that every Catholic citizen join the Anglican Church in order to regain their civil rights²⁹. The Test Act was applied in all the British colonies. This segregationist legislation was to result in the mass recruitment of Irishmen³⁰ into the ranks of the revolutionaries and later by active participation in Fenian Raids, which led to reprisals against Canada, English possession in the 19th century.

Curiously, the anti-Catholic intolerance that was raging in England at the time of the events that we relate in those lines, had long since been imported into the Thirteen American Colonies by the very immigrants who had fled their English homeland for its intolerance. The American historian John Highham described the primary anti-Catholicism in the United States as "the most luxuriant, tenacious tradition of paranoid agitation in American History." The Scots in America who had been subjected to barbarity in the Caledonian Highlands, harbored similar grudges, for in Upper Scotland the clans had just been outlawed and the massacres of Glencoe³¹ and Culloden had sown many resentments scars and even hatred among the

²⁸ ●The Irish Scottish are in fact Protestants from Scotland established as settlers in Ireland together with Anglo-Protestants, in order to erase Catholicism from that island, in the long run.

²⁹ ●The *Test Act* was officially abolished in 1829 by the *Catholic Relief Act*, but thereafter the mentality created by the long habit of discrimination meant that everywhere, and even on university application forms, religion was inquired and if the unfortunate Catholic confessed the truth, he was systematically turned away for whatever reason.

³⁰ ●Whose mind was plagued by the memory of the massacres perpetrated by Oliver Cromwell who considered himself as the *God's Executioner*.

³¹ ●The Protestant Campbell Clan, by secret order of the King of England, massacred a Catholic MacDonald Clan.

Scots who had been forcibly exiled after the burning³² of their villages. As a result, at the slightest call, all these Celts would join the armies of the Insurgents *en masse*, and it was not the 475,000 African slaves (19% of the total population of the Thirteen-Colonies) who would oppose the torments inflicted on the English Tories³³.



All these Americans of various strains had given much more blood than the English, proportionally, to eliminate the dreaded North American Troy, in other words the impregnable Fortress of Quebec³⁴ whose 60,000 inhabitants had shaken the million three hundred thousand inhabitants of the Thirteen Colonies during the Seven Years' War. If a good deed is never lost; a bad deed is even less so! "What is missing is only arms, a leader, and courage to the inhabitants that England has gathered from all parts of Europe in its colonies, to make themselves independent³⁵," affirmed Monsieur Durant to the Duc de Choiseul, only three years after the end of the Seven Years War.

The 30,000 Amerindians surviving in these Thirteen Colonies, whom the English had subjected to bacteriological warfare at the end of the of the Seven Years' War³⁶, and the 50,000 French Huguenots (2%), were not better disposed. Among the English population, Quaker opposition to the idea of a separate country from England, gave some concern to the supporters of independence. This sect,

³² ● *Les Highland Clearances*, in Scottish Gaelic *Fuadaich nan Gàidheal*, "the expulsion of the Gaels." This horrific crime, a true Shoah, can also be further explored by reading: Prebble, John, *The Highland Clearances*, Penguin Books, London, 1963.

³³ ● Also called *Conservatives*, *Royalists*, or later *Loyalists*.

³⁴ ● The ramparts of Quebec have never been stormed, not in 1759, not in 1760, nor in 1775-1776

³⁵ ● De Witt, Cornélis Henri, Thomas Jefferson, *Étude historique sur la démocratie américaine*, 1862. M. Durant au duc de Choiseul le 3 août 1766, p. 409

³⁶ ● This bacteriological warfare using smallpox-contaminated blankets was outlined in the *Dictionnaire des batailles terrestres franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Sept Ans*, same author, Laval University Press, Québec, 2004. ISBN 2-7637-8061-X

originally from England, had kept very strong emotional links with the mother country. Therefore, it was ultimately the beginning of the end for this very sympathetic community. "I went to Congress, wrote Henry Laurens, to debate for five hours on an inconsistent point, whether certain persons, principally the Quakers, who gave the strongest evidence that could, in these times, be expected of their avowed attachment to the cause of our enemies, who peremptorily refused to take the oath or affirm their allegiance to the state³⁷, can be considered reliable." Even if the charges of treason were brought against the head of this sect, the "Congress recommended that the Executive Council hear their allegations "to erase the suspicion whether they are enemies of the independence of the United States. I am greatly mistaken if, on this shifting ground, the cry of persecution is not ten times higher³⁸."



In questioning the people, the French spies were unanimous in predicting that the Thirteen Colonies would sooner or later separate from England. After having used England's fleet to eliminate France from North America, the "colonists" were now going to use France's land and naval power to eliminate England.

But the French spies discovered at the same time, that there was still a great deal of distrust of France. Generations of anti-French propaganda had left deep traces. They therefore recommended waiting for the Americans to take up arms and demonstrate, by their determination, that their Revolution was becoming certain and without possibility of return. The French diplomats were not unaware, of course, that these Thirteen Colonies, once

³⁷ •Letter from Henry Laurens to John Lewis Gervais of September 5, 1777. LMCC II 478-483 Letters of Members of the Continental Congress, Burnett edition.

³⁸ •Ibidem. pp.478-483

independent and powerful, could become disastrous for the colonial empires of the Europeans. Mr. Durant, chief of espionage at the French Embassy (in London), had even written to Choiseul, on August 3rd, 1766, that these colonies, once independent, "would one day be fatal to all the sugar colonies of Europe³⁹." He even predicted that France and Spain had as much to fear from a revolution in these colonies as England itself⁴⁰. But anything was better than an English superpower that ruled the world according to its own lobbies and whims, just as 50 years later these same lobbies would force the *Canadian North West Company* to scuttle itself to prevent any competition with the *British Hudson's Bay Company*, founded, as mentioned above, by two disappointed Frenchmen.

Another French spy was thus sent to the Thirteen Colonies. The baron-general Jean de Kalb⁴¹, mentioned above, was a well-built Bavarois, born Johann Kalb, then naturalized French citizen. After having explored the Thirteen Colonies and its large German communities, he too had a premonition that the American colonies would soon break away from England. General de Kalb sensed that a French intervention would be inappropriate as long as these colonies did not take up arms against England. They had to declare themselves independent, and form themselves into a federation. The French diplomacy of Monsieur de Vergennes, Minister of Foreign Affairs of Louis XVI, followed this wise policy from 1775 onwards.

In general, Americans, subjected for generations to anti-Catholic propaganda, distrusted France as a papist

³⁹ ● De Witt, Cornélis Henri, Thomas Jefferson, An historical study of American Democracy, Lettre de M. Durand au duc de Choiseul 30 août 1767. p. 408

⁴⁰ ● Ibidem, p. 427.

⁴¹ ● De Colleville, vicomte, The Secret Missions of General Major Baron de Kalb and his Role in the American Revolutionary War., Librairie académique Didier, Emile Perin, Paris, 1885.

state. Catholics were then in English-speaking countries as despised as the Cagots in medieval Pyrenees or Jews in the Third Reich. If the latter owed their subhuman status to the three Nuremberg Laws between 1935 and 1945, the Catholics of England and of the whole empire, owed their pitiful fate to the Laws of the Test⁴² in force between 1661 and 1829. In spite of this unfair treatment of a part of its population, England considered itself to be the only *constitutional monarchy*, even though the merchant lobbies, the notorious Plantations Office, totally drowned and phagocytized the Parliament and subjected it to absolute control—as can still be seen today in Great Britain, the United States and the European Union—for the sole benefit of Financiers.

The information collected on the territory of the Thirteen American Colonies also included a great deal of military information which suggested a possibility of intervention more or less distant in the future. One of them mentions for example that Philadelphia has "barracks that can accommodate 1,500 infantrymen; but no fortifications, only one battery that beats the river. This battery is at the end of the city. It has 32 cannons, 31 of which were interlocked [*encloués*] in 1765, and are perhaps still interlocked today⁴³." He also describes the system of defenses of New-York and further on, that of Boston⁴⁴.

●

This fear of England becoming a super-power too uncontrollable and disruptive on the European chessboard, was expressed to the King of France as early as 1765, when the duke de Choiseul wrote: " There can only be a

⁴² ● Test Act.

⁴³ ● Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson : An historical study of American Democracy, Librairie académique Didier et Cie, Paris, 1861. p. 413

⁴⁴ Ibidem. P.414

revolution in America, which will come sooner or later, but which we will probably not see, to put England back in the state of weakness in which she will no longer be to be feared in Europe (...) the extent of the English possessions in America will operate the separation from England⁴⁵."

Certainly, Choiseul's vision was remarkably correct, except for one detail: he would see this American Revolution before he died. But Fate full of pity would narrowly spare him (4 years) another Revolution which would have given him a chill and, therefore, less intellectual satisfaction: *the dreadful French Revolution*.



⁴⁵ ●Memoire presented to the King in 1765, from Mémoires du duc de Choiseul, 1719-1785, p. 393

Chapitre 2

Causes of this American revolt against England. Huge debt and refusal to make England's Lobbies pay. Discontent and revolt in the Thirteen Colonies against the tax avalanche. Deportations of English criminals to America. Reaction in England to the effervescence in the Thirteen Colonies and the movements of rebellion. Organized violence; Occupation of ports; Escalation of punishments; Tougher laws. Reactions in Europe. Devastation in retaliation. Native American participation. African slaves involvement. Popular reactions in France. English "disinformation." and "fake news".

The London Merchant Lobbies that, through the Seven Years' War, had left unfathomable debts in the coffers of the Bank of England¹, were careful not to shed the blood of their fellow citizens so as not to provoke a pacifist reaction among the English population which would have jeopardized the continuation of hostilities, and, as a result, put at risk the increase of their profits by the war. As mentioned above, the London Merchant Lobbies were solidly organized in the eighteenth century into a truly centralized organization, even more so than the lobbies that control American international politics in the twenty-first century². What we commonly refer to in these lines "*the*

¹ •Which was still a private company. It was not nationalized until after the Second World War by the Labour Party. But the Government (whose members were shareholders) already used it as a *state bank*.

² •The Oil Lobby, masked under the cryptic name of Energy Lobby, AIPAC, the Defense Industry (war profiteers) or the NRA, the Pharmaceutical and Health Products Industry... to name only the most powerful and influential in American politics.

London Lobbies" was organized in a real Royal Administration, which was called *the Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations*. Paradoxically, this kind of organization was able to flourish in England because it was then the only large European state that was not an autocrat monarchy. Contrary to the situation in England, French monarchs have always been suspicious of the "merchants" whom the aristocracy strongly despised, to the point that if an aristocrat indulged in this occupation in the country, all his Nobility titles were forfeited. The King of France despised the lamentations of all these shopkeepers, and their protests became inaudible in the hushed salons of Versailles. Thus, were ignored the protests of the French Chambers of Commerce when Louis XV and the Pompadour abandoned New France and its French inhabitants with a stroke of the pen.

In England, on the other hand, finance ruled according to the goodwill of the possessing Class; moreover, to have the right to vote, one had to be the owner of real estate and personal property. When this country was forced by some treaty to grant economic advantages to the French, it tried to procrastinate, to drag its feet and to sabotage the execution of this promise. The protests of the Court of France, distracted by the pleasures of Versailles, were so debonair that London did not really take them seriously. For example, since the Treaty of Paris (1763), England took the liberty of not respecting the clauses it had sworn to honour, without triggering any strong reaction from the French monarchs; by the Article 11 of this same Treaty of 1763, England had committed itself to restore to France the various trading posts in the Indies that France held at the beginning of the year 1749: "One sees by these stipulations, wrote Vergennes, that our right of commerce in the Indies has remained intact without

restriction. However, the employees of the English Company [British East India Co.] have not ceased until now to inflict on our establishments vexations of all kinds and to have recourse to all sorts of maneuvers to prevent the French from trading Indian goods. The Comte du Châtelet has been charged with bringing complaints on this subject to the Court of London in 1768; they have been renewed since then as the Company has added new grievances to the old ones... But all our representations have remained without effect, despite the fine promises of the British Ministry. The impunity of the English employees emboldens them more and more³." The owner and administrator of India being the British East India Co., the English government was hiding behind the commercial rights of the private company. As in our day, it hid behind an illusory autonomy to let 15 English islands⁴ serve as Tax Heavens, while officially condemning the ignominy of this practice.

In the same way, the rights of French fishermen in Newfoundland were continually violated. In circumstances where the English would have immediately dispatched a squadron to restore their rights. The indifferent and nonchalant King of France let it linger, considering the merchants to be rather contemptible and lying people, and this behavior allowed the English to dither and to procrastinate forever. Thus, this text given to French ambassadors at the beginning of the 18th century: "Before committing

³ • Directives from Louis Gravier de Vergennes on behalf of Louis XVI. Memorandum to serve as instructions to the Marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as the King's ambassador to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. in *Recueil des Instructions donné aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française*, XXV 2 Angleterre, Tome 3 (1698- 1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. p. 498. At the same time, non-compliance with the peace clauses was also taking place off Newfoundland, where French fishermen were being denied their rights not only by English fishermen but also by English warships that supported their fishermen.

⁴ • In particular the island of Mans, Jersey, the Cayman Islands, Gibraltar ...

to support the demands of merchants, [the French ambassador] must carefully examine what the basis of the claim will be. They usually have inclination to complain, and, when one believes them, they attribute to *ill will* against the whole nation what they suffer in particular. Sometimes they even represent as an injustice the punishments that they deserved and that one must rather look at as the effect of the accuracy of the people in charge of watching over the frauds and to prevent them⁵.

In England, therefore, where absolute power was not in the hands of the King, it became easy to stipend the elected members of the House of Commons and even the unelected Lords of the House of Lords, by giving them a stake in the economic affairs of the country. Today, in the United States, the same lobbies contribute to re-elect members of Congress if they agree to cast their votes in favor of their cause. If they refuse, the contribution is given to their opponent. Paradoxically, it seems clear that absolute monarchies of the eighteenth century were more difficult to control (by merchants) than the English Constitutional Democracy. Lobbies directly influence and control Parliament. They also had, since the beginning of the eighteenth century, a great deal of influence on London public opinion—the only one that mattered in England, as the opinion of the Parisians prevailed on that of all the French—through their magazines (especially the very popular *Gentleman's Magazine* and *London Magazine*⁶) and newspapers, which led London public opinion "like a

⁵ • Segment not highlighted in the original text. This text is taken from the Collection of Instructions given to the Ambassadors and Ministers of France from the Treaties of Westphalia to the French Revolution, Volume XII, Espagne, avec une introduction et des notes par A. Morel-Fatio et H. Léonardon, Commission des Archives Diplomatiques au Ministère des Affaires Étrangères, Ancienne Librairie Germer Baillière et Cie, Félix Alcan, Éditeur, Paris, 1898; Tome deuxième (1701-1722), pages 206.

⁶ • You can find a list of several dozen on wikipedia, under List of 18th-century British periodicals

Briard its merinos." Benjamin Franklin, who was preparing to come to France, had well understood the influence of the London press and the biased use that was made of it by the Lobbies: "I am persuaded that the bulk of the British people are our friends; but they change, and by your lying press they may soon become our enemy. Our respect for them will diminish in proportion, and I can see clearly that we are on the road to mutual hatred and family detestation. A separation will of course be inevitable... If you flatter yourself that you can subdue us by violence, you know neither our people nor our country⁷."

In 1797, long after gaining independence, the same Franklin could not help but explain to the Englishman Alexander Small how difficult it was for him to understand how the English people could unleash the misfortunes of war for the sole purpose of personal enrichment: "You have one of the most beautiful countries in the world and you would make it one of the happiest if you could cure yourself once and for all from the folly of waging war for your trade. These wars always cost more than the trade can bring in. Make of your natural advantages instead of trying to undermine those of other nations. And there is no doubt that you will be able to still thrive and grow. Start to stop considering France as a natural enemy, it will be a sign that the common sense of the nation is in progress. Posterity will benefit from this, because wars will become rarer, taxes will decrease, and wealth will increase⁸." Franklin forgot that the London Lobbies, the great beneficiaries of

⁷ • Letter from Benjamin Franklin to David Hartley, October 3, 1775, II, Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye of the Institute of France and Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790) ; p. 103.

⁸ • Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, Volume II (1775-1790); pp. 422 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Englishman Alexander Small, written in Philadelphia on February 19, 1787.

wars, was fighting with the people's money, not theirs. And they themselves stubbornly refused to raise taxes to reduce the public debt⁹. The government in power gambled with the currency, organized *lotteries* that were fed by the little people, and used the thaumaturgical alchemy of the "*sinking funds*" to defraud the debt.

These Lobbies, therefore, which were so sparing with *English blood* in the many wars they instigated and from which they profited¹⁰, did not hesitate to push the English state to largely and generously subsidize the armies that were allied to them, especially in the form of German regiments purchased from the princes of the Holy Roman Germanic Empire, on condition that these allies agreed to join forces against their great economic rival, France. Henceforth, at the end of this Seven Years' War, so profitable for the CTFP¹¹ and for the narcissistic auto-philia of the whole nation, it was necessary to find funds to reimburse all the war profiteers who had invested heavily in this flourishing industry, since England was (after France) the European country that started the greatest number of conflicts. France, on the other hand, indulged without limit to this destructive art, because this country was ruled by a nobility which was dying of boredom and could only find its full blossoming in the most illusory and fruitless military glory, while England aimed at the acquisition of economic advantages.

⁹ • Similarly, Republicans refused to raise taxes on the rich to pay off the two Iraq wars at the turn of the twenty-first century.

¹⁰ • The Parliament of London never voted the general mobilization of the English people, not even during the two World Wars of the twentieth century. On the other hand, Canada and the other countries dependent on the English crown (including Scotland and – during the Great War – Ireland) were strongly encouraged to force their citizens to come and fight to liberate the English Metropolis.

¹¹ • Council of Trade and Foreign Plantation; In other words: the famous London Merchant Lobbies.

The 233 millionaire representatives of the American Republican Party, the main beneficiaries of the American wars (in Iraq and Afghanistan...), proposed to cut public aid to the poor, the disenfranchised, and the veterans, in order to avoid raising taxes on multi-millionaires. By this we understand that nothing has changed in the minds of the plutocrats.

In desperation, the London Parliament decided [after the Seven Years' War] that it would be the American colonists who would pay off the huge debt generated by the successful Seven Years' War. The Thirteen Colonies had already provided—with the German mercenaries—almost all of the fighting men who had conquered New France. The Americans had not only paid with their blood, they had also become heavily indebted during this War. According to De Witt, the Thirteen Colonies "had raised, clothed and paid off, in the late war nearly 25,000 men. Pennsylvania spent, on this occasion, £500,000 sterling, of which they had reimbursed by the Parliament of England, only a sum of £60,000¹². Henceforth, the English proposed to make the Colonists pay" the complete totality of this Seven Years' War which had seen the English debt rise from £72,000 sterling¹³ in 1755 to 130,000,000 £ in 1764. "The gold given by Pitt to the King of Prussia, Frederick II," wrote the American historian Balch, ignited the continental [European] war known as the Seven Years' War¹⁴."

The same gold, for which England wanted to make the Americans pay, ignited a second war that cost this country the benefit of the first. The fate of nations and

¹² ●Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson : Historical study on the American Democracy, 1861. Page 423.

¹³ ●In pounds sterling today, from 9 to 15 billion pounds.

¹⁴ ●Balch, Thomas, The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 46 de la version française.

empires is uncertain. After this war, the usefulness of England to the Americans was definitely over and the time had come to get rid of it. Since the Thirteen Colonies had been "freed from the anxieties which France gave them by her North American possessions, their recourse to England was only useless. "It is now up to them to feel the usefulness that they can draw from this country. England has neglected its colonies by allowing them only the cultivation of those commodities which this country could not supply¹⁵." Given the fairly anti-English mindset that prevailed among some of the colonial populations of the American Thirteen Colonies, a spark was likely to ignite the powder keg. The London Lobbies were to act as the spark. Eager to transfer the burden of repayment into the hands of the American colonials, they wished to impose a double taxation on them to pay off and wipe out the abysmal debt of the Seven Years' War; one could easily envisage that the "colonists" would not accept to be taken for dupes and would not let themselves be led as bad as the Irish and the Scots had been over the centuries. These two countries were too geographically subjugated to the Power that dominated them. Having provided¹⁶ most of the soldiers to acquire New France for England¹⁷, those countries considered that the English should at least accept to pay the financial debts — from which the lobbies had pocketed the fruit. To describe what England demanded from its colonies, one could have been parodied in the famous phrase that John Fitzgerald Kennedy made fashionable: "Ask not

¹⁵ ●Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson : étude historique sur la démocratie américaine, Librairie académique Didier et Cie, Paris, 1861. Page 422. England allowed in the colonies only what we now call the primary sector, and prohibited the development of the secondary sector (manufacturing).

¹⁶ ●The Thirteen Colonies, Scotland and Ireland, in proportion to their population.

¹⁷ ●By subsidizing the purchase of mercenaries or "ammunition for food and war", as it was then called..

what England can do for its colonies but what the colonies can do for England's benefit." So the colonial economy had been harshly muzzled over time by the London Merchant Lobbies.

Act after act, the Thirteen Colonies had been transformed into mere suppliers of raw materials in order to reserve for the Mother country the monopoly of the processing industry. In 1699, the **Wool Act** had taxed and thus controlled the wool produced at low cost by slaves in the colonies, and this law allowed the export only to England. In 1707, the lobbies had passed the **Navigation Act** to prohibit the colonies from using non-English ships to trade with the mother country. In 1733, the lobbies succeeded in imposing a special tax on molasses with the **Molasses Act**¹⁸. In 1750, the **Iron Act** prohibited the colonies from manufacturing iron and steel and to transform them into manufactured objects¹⁹.

An American who erected blast furnaces, hammer forges, iron-rolling machines, was considered a criminal and was liable to the worst of punishments²⁰. Nothing could compete with the manufacturing plants of the mother country, which was gradually beginning to take on the features of a stepmother. On April 5th, 1764, the **Sugar Act** introduced a special tax on sugar, *coffee*, *wine* and *indigo*. Everything had to be paid to the English Treasury. French wines and rums were forbidden to be imported into

¹⁸ • In particular, this law prohibited Americans from buying molasses from the French West Indies. But French producers continued their sales,... smuggled.

¹⁹ . • "Act 1750 (Statute 23 Geo. II c. 29) was one of the legislative measures introduced by the British Parliament, seeking to restrict manufacturing activities in British colonies, particularly in North America, and encourage manufacture to take place in Great Britain."

²⁰ • In Canada, on the other hand, the Forges du Saint-Maurice manufactured cast iron and steel from 1733 (at the time of New France) until 1883 (Canadian Confederation). They were an exception in the English colonies but were put under English control from the annexation of Canada to England.

the Thirteen Colonies, while in England, the aristocracy did not hesitate to gorge itself with Bordeaux and Burgundy²¹. The anger rose to a new level.



Spanish silver Real de a ocho used in Canada and North America. Priv.Coll.

The worst news had not yet reached America; on April 19th, 1764, the ***Currency Act*** was passed by the Parliament of London under the influence of the merchants' lobbies whose fertile and rapacious spirit wanted to prohibit the Thirteen Colonies from issuing banknotes. How develop a viable economy without money? England deprived

its colonies of money to handicap their economy. The Americans had to return to bartering at the local level. But foreign trade (or smuggling) became impossible with the few British pounds or the Spanish *real de a ocho* (Spanish dollars) or the French pounds, which had managed to defy the prohibitions to infiltrate the colonies. England deprived its colonies of any currency in order to handicap their economy and force them to buy from England. This law was applicable in Canada since 1763 so that, in order

²¹ 6 ● In the Indian subcontinent under English control, the London Parliament also introduced tariffs and regulations that prohibited Indians from competing with the factories of England. Thus, the Indian textile industry disappeared, killed by customs duties, and the Indians had to buy their textiles in England. The British East India Company thus transformed India into simple producers of raw materials (cotton) for the benefit of the industries of England. A little later, it also produced opium which it flooded China, the Empire and Europe.

to trade, Canadians had to use multiple currencies, including the old ones from the now defunct New France²².

Until 1763, the presence of New France had forced England not to push the Americans too hard, but the ink had not yet dried on the Treaty of Paris [of 1763] when the



decision was taken in London to strangle —without mask and without pity— any hint of economic development in the Thirteen Colonies. The English soon realized that the disappearance of New France made the situation more complicated than expected and even dangerous in the subordination relationship between England and its

²² •Missed by Canadians, of course. Barter, or US dollars from 1792, pounds sterling, silver schillings, copper pennies, guineas which were the currency of slavery from the Gulf of Guinea, gold sovereigns, Spanish gold coins from South America, doubloons, pistoles, silver reals which served as small change for all Spanish gold or silver coins, gold ecus (escudo), "coins of eight" in pure silver, whose stylized 8 in S, crossed out with the two columns of Hercules, would become the symbol of the American dollar, as well as our Canadian dollars when they were minted in 1866, a year before the creation of the Dominion of Canada, whose name "Dominion" was chosen so as not to provoke the Americans who had suffered so much from the monarchy. In Canada, the currency of New France was valid until 1841, when the Currency Act came into force. The few French coins and notes remained in circulation until 1866, because of the lack of liquidity in the English colonies. England's aim was, of course, to hinder the trade of its colonies in order to favour the Metropolis.

recalcitrant Thirteen Colonies. It became urgent to limit the extension and the power of these "plantations" (colonies) whose future potential was unlimited. So, on October 7th, 1763 —less than nine months after the signing of the Treaty of Paris (February 10th)— the King of England, George III, issued the *Proclamation of 1763*, which limited the freedom of movement of American settlers by prohibiting them from coming and settling west of the Appalachians.

By the Proclamation of 1763, "the territories beyond the Appalachian Mountains were decreed to be outside the jurisdiction of any of the colonial governments, the lands were to be "reserved to the Native American tribes recognized by the British Crown," which reasserted its sovereignty and control over all such territories. Although the anger of the colonies was tempered by the fact that the ban was a temporary measure and not necessarily a permanent state, this Proclamation was another example of the noose that was thus placed by the mother country around the neck of the colonial liberties²³." Until then, all that basin of the Ohio —which the French called *La Belle-Rivière*—, was closely watched by the French and the Canadians. The Seven Years' War in North America had, moreover, prematurely broken out²⁴ in this region. This Proclamation of 1763, which limited colonial freedom, raised the anger level and consequently hastened the coming of the insurrection. Paradoxically, it was as if the British were desperate to push the Americans towards independence, to the great joy of those, Anglophobic Americans (contemptuous Germans, revanchist Irish, frustrated Scots), who rejoiced in the mistakes of the English lobbies.

²³ ● Washburn, Wilcomb E., *Indians and the American Revolution*.

²⁴ ● Prematurely compared to the opening of the Seven Years' War in Europe.

Today, in the 21st century, the English are driven by the reflexive need for historical justification (while the French are, on the contrary, tormented by a permanent repentance of the Past²⁵). British historians are trying to explain this 1763 ban by a real concern of the English monarchy to protect the Indian territories; although at the same time (in 1964) the English authorities were distributing blankets contaminated with smallpox to the Indians in order to spread deadly epidemics.

Here again, one feels the clash of Protestant and Catholic ideologies. The feeling of *purifying justification* of today inspires the English to forget their past misdeeds and turpitudes, and, consequently, to feel proud of their History. In contrast, the penitential masochism of Catholicism inspires the French, —even if they no longer believe in God—, the perpetual reminiscence of their past faults. Consequently, the shame of their History plunges them into perpetual repentance. This is how we can understand differences in the behavior of the two nations.

As soon as the Stamp Act (March 22, 1765), the *stamp tax on newspapers and all official documents* fell on the sullen colonists settlers, the lamentations turned to leonine roars, especially among those who were not English-speaking, for whom the tax was doubled since they were already paying a fee to use a language other than English. By this Stamp Act, the colonists had to put a tax stamp on their newspapers, legal documents, playing cards (Sic!), almanacs; anything that was printed.

All these colonial anti-competition laws (competition with the mother country) were thus perceived in the colonies as anti-development. England was shooting itself in the foot. An English member of Parliament, Pownall,

²⁵ •Repentance created by Soviet psychological sabotage techniques during the Cold War.

wrote to Franklin: "The woolen factories in Ireland have been forbidden and Ireland remains poor, but by doing so, we have abandoned to the French the trade and wealth which Ireland might have acquired within the British Empire²⁶." On the back of the letter from Thomas Pownall²⁷, Franklin commented: "This objection is based on the supposition that Great Britain necessarily loses all that the colonies gain... So, if the colonies can be prevented from making a profit Great Britain will benefit from that profit²⁸."

Benjamin Franklin, went before the House of Commons in 1766 to try to have this tax law repealed, which he considered unconstitutional because the fundamental law of his country *forbade taxation without representation*, and the Thirteen Colonies were **not** represented in Parliament. In vain! The London Merchant Lobbies cared little for unconstitutional contradiction. Their logic remained sound and unimpeachable.

As previously mentioned, a provision of the Stamp Act imposed a double stamp on all writings printed or written in any language other than English, and thus a double penalty that disadvantaged the minorities deemed more Anglophobic. In the ideas of the time, this was a way of forcing the Germans to assimilate, as they were so

²⁶ • Letter from Thomas Pownall to Dr. Franklin, On Equal Rights between Great Britain and America, (undated, probably January 1767) Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Édouard Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome 11 (1757-1775), p. 185.

²⁷ • Thomas Pownall, (1722-1805) was an English politician and colonial official. He was Governor of the Province of Massachusetts Bay from 1758 to 1760. He then became a Member of the Parliament of England. Unfortunately his economic ideas did not fit with those of the London lobbies that directed English politics and led to the Independence of the Thirteen Colonies.

²⁸ • Letter from Thomas Pownall to Dr. Franklin, On Equal Rights Between Great Britain and America, (undated, probably January 1767) Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Tome 11 (1757-1775), p. 185

numerous in these colonies because England was constantly recruiting troops in the Principalities of the Holy Roman Germanic Empire, to compensate for the little attraction that the English showed for the manly art of war.

On the other hand, as far as the French in Canada were concerned, the Parliament in London had shown great wisdom in granting them "a delay of five years"²⁹ in the additional taxations, for the agitation in the American Thirteen Colonies caused the cautious English to be prudent with the susceptibility of French Canadians who might want to make common cause with their southern neighbors. During Franklin's visit to Parliament, a member of the House asked him:

—What do you think the white population of Pennsylvania is?

—I suppose it is about 160,000, Franklin replied.

—In this number, how many Quakers are there?

—Maybe a third.

—How many Germans?

—Maybe another third. I cannot say for sure, however.

—Are there many of these Germans who have served as soldiers in Europe?

—Yes, many have served in Europe and America.

—Are they also unhappy with the stamp duty that the English are imposing on them?

—Yes, even more so, and with good reason, for in many cases they will pay double stamp duty³⁰!" replied Franklin.



While anger was rising, the English Government, far from trying to calm the spirits, chose the hard way to subdue these *rebels*, whom Henry Hulton, a British official of the new *English Customs*, described as "*wretched*

²⁹ ●Correspondence of B. Franklin, 1866. Volume 1 (1757-1775), Page 108, Note 2

³⁰ ●Ibidem, page 108. 2

*scoundrels composed of the bandits of the country, among whom there is none who can have the expectations to be called a gentleman*³¹". Now, it was absolutely necessary to pay the fabulous sums that precisely, the "gentlemen", all these war profiteers, had pocketed during the previous war: manufacturers of weapons, suppliers of uniforms, Commissionaires to the armies, German princes who had sold their subjects as mercenaries in the same way as the African kinglets sold their subjects to the diabolical slave traders.

The Insurrection³² of the Francophile Indian chief, Pontiac, who wanted the return of the French to New France, and especially the discontent in the Thirteen Colonies created by the imposition of new taxes, immediately led the English Government to keep in its Thirteen Colonies an army of 10,000 mercenaries, essentially German but under the command of 1,500 English officers (some of whom were of Swiss origin but naturalized English because the Franco-Swiss agreements forbade them to fight against France)³³. Almost all English officers were aristocrats or wealthy bourgeois³⁴ who had ties to the elected representatives of the House of Commons in London, and

³¹ • Letter from Henry Hulton, 20 June 1775; The letter was originally published by Henry's sister, Ann Hulton, who also lived in Boston, in her book *Letters of a Loyalist Lady*, The Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1927. Quoted by Jensen, Merrill, *The Founding of a Nation, A History of the American Revolution 1763-1776*, Oxford University Press, New York, 1968. P-648. The expression "The bandits of the country" refers to the fact that all criminals from England who were sentenced to exile were deported to the Thirteen Colonies.

³² • Insurrection of 1763-1765, just after the Treaty of Paris, when the Midwestern Indians realized that their fate was now in the hands of a nation that treated them with contempt. The English had settled Pontiac's War with a smallpox epidemic by giving friendly tribes contaminated blankets, knowing that these tribes were trading with Pontiac's insurgent tribes. For more information, visit the following site : http://www.nativeweb.org/pages/legal/amherst/lord_jeff.html 4 5

³³ • Perpetual peace that lasted since the Treaty of Fribourg, November 29, 1516.

³⁴ • In the English army, the officer's commission was *bought*. It was not necessary to be noble, as in the French army where ranks could not be bought. England was the only country in Europe of any importance where officer offices were bought.

especially with the unelected lords of the Upper House. These officers, in case of untimely demobilization, would find themselves unemployed or on half pay, which would have unnecessarily put a strain on the budget of the Nation³⁵. This also served as a *pretext* for such a deployment of forces.

English authorities thus avoided the real purpose of the army stationed in North America, and it was simply attributed to *the Pontiac Insurrection*, but in fact, the decision of the English Government (Ministry of Lord Bute³⁶ and then Grenville) *preceded* the insurrection of the Pontiac francophile Indians. The question remained unanswered and even more complicated: Who was going to pay the cost of these 10,000 mercenaries? That was in addition to the payments of the Seven Years' War still unpaid to the German princes, and disputed under a thousand pretexts by pure bad faith³⁷? There was no question of England to pay. In the English economic logic, the colonies were private property, and we have seen that there were many laws to forbid any production that could compete with England³⁸. And even if from then on these 10,000 soldiers were there to monitor, repress and punish the Americans, it was they (the colonists), who would have to pay the cost, just as during World War II, the French were required to

³⁵ • Anderson, Fred, *Crucible of War, The Seven Years' War and the Fate of Empire in British North America, 1754- 1766*, Alfred A. Knopf; London et New York: Faber and Faber, 2000. p.561.

³⁶ • John Stuart, third Earl of Bute, (Member of the Order of the Garter and the Privy Council) (1713–1792), was an Anglo-Scottish lord who served as Prime Minister of Great Britain from 1762 to 1763.

³⁷ • Still unpaid not only to English financiers but also to the princes of the Holy Roman Empire

³⁸ • In the English Indies, similarly, English lobbies passed laws designed to destroy the Indian textile industry and turn that country into a mere supplier of raw materials for England's textile industry. In addition, the English introduced a salt tax in the Indian subcontinent that forbade the inhabitants to extract sea salt or rock salt without paying a large tax to the English treasury. All the English colonies were thus forbidden from industrialization and taxed to the maximum to avoid taxation of the English metropolis.]

pay a billion dollars a day for the maintenance of German occupation troops in the part of France occupied by the Nazis.

In the Thirteen Colonies, it was through the Quartering Act that the American colonists were required to pay for the maintenance of their jailers. This law, or rather this amendment to the Anti-Mutiny Act, required the Colonies to house, clothe, feed, quench, heat, and, if necessary, transport the occupying garrisons, wherever they were stationed on the territory of their city or village, even in times of peace³⁹.

Thus, the Americans who had expatriated so that the English monarchy couldn't impose its arbitrary will on them in the field of religion, would themselves have to undergo a *double taxation*. They were going to pay taxes to the *three constituent kingdoms of Great Britain*, which would be added to the taxes paid to their local governments.

But then, *why not raise these taxes in England*, the Americans wondered? Because the lobbies in London were very careful not to cause the slightest stir in their capital, the metropolis of the Empire. Great care was already taken not to mobilize the English population. The laws only allowed the enlistment of criminals and vagrants, as we shall see later. Raising taxes in England was out of the question so as not to provoke discontent. The lobbies seemed to fear disruption to the highest degree. In 1763, some ministers, including the Prime Minister Lord Bute,

³⁹ ●The Third Amendment of the U.S. Constitution refers to this injustice and was subsequently voted to prohibit such imposition on the population in peacetime. In France, the municipalities built barracks from 1691, so as not to have to house the garrisons in private homes. Until Louis XIV, therefore, soldiers and officers received a ticket of accommodation with this or that bourgeois of the city. Those with an unpronounceable name had to sleep outside with a [despite their] housing ticket. [Crédé, J.E., *Les gens de guerre à Saint-Julien-du-Sault*, Librairie Pégurier, Laons, 1976.]

had had the audacity to raise the possibility of a small tax on cider throughout the island of Great Britain. For having dared to make such a suggestion, Lord Bute was hanged⁴⁰ in effigy. Prime Minister Grenville, who had succeeded Bute, had simply decided to tax Americans who were too far from London to make their displeasure felt there, he thought. Perhaps also, the Colonists did not realize that the English Constitution prohibited taxing the people without their consent by vote. During the Seven Years' War, the various colonies paid for the maintenance of local militias, but there had been no question of making them pay for the maintenance of the British army. With the return of peace, the militias had melted away. "The Militia officers, tired of the contempt shown to them by British officers and frustrated by the near impossibility of rank in the British regular army, refused to continue their Militia service after the war"⁴¹. On the subject of this, Israeli historian Schlomo Sand noted that the attitude of the British "towards the inhabitants of the colonies was always pretentious and contemptuous"⁴². Many British people clung to their Anglo-Saxon ancestry, and the Welsh and Irish [and Scots] of "*pure Celtic descent*" were considered inferior and not truly belonging to the *Chosen Christian people*⁴³.

⁴⁰ ●Middlekauff, Robert. *The Glorious Cause: The American Revolution, 1763-1789*, Oxford University Press, Oxford, 2005. p 62.

⁴¹ ●"Militia officers, tired of the disdain shown to them by regular British officers and frustrated by the near impossibility of obtaining regular British commissions, were unwilling to remain in service once the war was over." Thomas, Peter D. G. *British Politics and the Stamp Act Crisis: The First Phase of the American Revolution, 1763-1767*, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1975.

⁴² ●Palestine and the present-day territory of Israel was once a British Mandate Territory.

⁴³ ●Sand, Shlomo, *How the Jewish people were invented*, Librairie Arthème Fayard, Paris, 2008. p. 72. "Chosen Christian people" = allusion to certain Anglo-Saxon theories that would make the English, the 12th Lost Tribe of Israel, who would have come to settle in this island after having pursued the destiny traced by the prophets of the Bible by accepting the messiah Jesus; The other eleven tribes, by their refusal of the promised messiah, having become, misguided or in more watered down terms: off-track.

Another cause of discontent among the American people came from the English propensity to get rid of criminals who perpetrated their crimes in England, by simply deporting them to distant lands where they had the leisure, if not the permission, to continue their criminal activities. Benjamin Franklin, in his political youth as Agent of the Province of Pennsylvania⁴⁴ even organized a petition to the English government to protest against such misdeeds:

"We show respectfully **that** the deportation of criminals from England to the plantations of America, is and has been for a long time an important subject of discontent for the said plantations in general; **that** the said criminals, disembarked in America, not only continue their misdeeds, to the annoyance of the inconvenience of His Majesty's good subjects here, but greatly contribute to corrupt the morality of the servants and poor people with whom they are mixed; **that** many criminals escape from the servitude to which they are assigned, in order to go to other colonies where their condition is not known. Vagabonding from one populous city to another, they commit many burglaries, robberies, murders, to the great terror of the people, and cause great expense to apprehend them, keep them out of trouble and bring them to justice."

Franklin then brings up an older vote —that of 1718, when he was only 12 years old— which also granted Scotland the freedom to deport its criminals to America, "the petitioners therefore humbly therefore beg you, in the name of Pennsylvania and the other colonies of America, to cause the Houses to repeal all laws and clauses of laws

⁴⁴ •The use of the terms "plantations", "colonies" or "provinces", when each had an autonomous government and a democratic assembly, was intended to prevent these autonomous territories from seeing themselves as States and wanting to take "their independence." We shall see, at the time of the peace negotiations, that England was still reluctant to use the word "state".

which permit the deportation of criminals,... or if this cannot be done at present, that the colonies may, by *an equity clause* in the same act, deport their own criminals to Scotland⁴⁵." Franklin's sense of humor and effrontery did not go so far as to ask for permission to deport American criminals to England, but he allowed himself this insolence for Scotland, considered in the imagination of the British people, as a hostage state of England⁴⁶.



On March 5th, 1770, an ominous event took place in Boston. Boston was then the capital of the rebellious province of Massachusetts, where English reprisals had greatly strained the interaction between the population and the soldiers of the English garrison. The populace once crowded around a sentry to insult him and let him know that their complaints were many and varied. Finally, reinforcements intervened, but the English soldiers, frightened by the threatening populace, lost their nerve, and fired into the crowd, killing three civilians. Two wounded died of their wounds.

The Americans, anxious to dramatize the situation, called this incident the *Boston Massacre*. The British, who wanted to minimize it, the *King Street Incident*. The English Acting Governor of the Massachusetts colony, Thomas Hutchinson, promised an investigation to calm the popular anger. Eight soldiers, including one officer, were court-martialed. It was the lawyer John Adams, future president of the United States who defended them. Six

⁴⁵ ● Sparks, Jared, *The Works of Benjamin Franklin*, Hilliard, Gray & Co. Boston, 1836. Volume II, p. 496 et suiv

⁴⁶ ● Let us take a look at the British flag composed of the English flag that largely dominates the Scottish and Irish flags scattered below, to realize this state of mind of domination. In addition, the Stone of Destiny, symbol of the independence of Scotland, was stolen from this country in 1297 by the King of England Edward I and returned at the beginning of the twenty-first century after seven centuries of absence.

soldiers were acquitted and two were sentenced to have the back of their hands scourged⁴⁷.

With a few "*ifs*," the American Rebellion could have ended; had one of the London Merchant Lobbies not been so greedy and the English Parliament so submissive to this lobby.

From 1765 to 1773, the situation remained stable except for the King Street Incident. The lobby in question, the most parasitic and abusive, was *the British East India Co.* [B.E.I.C.]. In 1773, this lobby decided to manage to obtain *a monopoly on the sale of tea* on the North American market. In return, the English company agreed to *discreetly levy on the Americans the new tea tax* that had just been voted [*the Tea Act*] on May 10th, 1773, by the Parliament of Great Britain. The B.E.I.C. had foreseen this commercial action for a long time. This is demonstrated by the fact that this company had accumulated huge stocks of tea in its London warehouses, thousands of tons purchased from China. To support its monopoly, the Company spread the rumor that these huge stocks of tea had to be sold in the Thirteen Colonies or there was threat of bankruptcy if its London stocks could not be sold. This threat caused panic among the English aristocracy who were heavily involved in the Merchant Lobbies. This was only a marketing ploy because the British company had premeditated this so called "danger of bankruptcy". In spite of the tax that the Americans would pay it could *dump*⁴⁸ tea in the Thirteen Colonies in order to ruin the small local companies. After having eliminated rivals and competition, the British East India Co. only must raise its prices

⁴⁷ ● Wilting = marking with a hot iron as punishment, either by the drawing of a flower, by letters, or by another drawing .

⁴⁸ ● Dumping : Sale at cost, without profit, in order to ruin the competition. After which, free of all competition, the company can then sell well above the production price to the detriment of the population and recover many times its initial investment.

and make back a hundredfold all that it had lost. Only the American people would lose⁴⁹.

This was an *immoral* business strategy, contrary to the very laws of legal Capitalism (whose great benefit is *competition*), but the *British East India Co.* did not limit itself to this economic malpractice⁵⁰. Of course, tea would be subject to the new British tax, which would be collected by the new British Customs Administration just installed in the Thirteen Colonies by the Townshend Acts⁵¹.

The Townshend Acts, of June 29, 1767, included five specific laws, one of which (the *Revenue Act*) attempted to force the raising of new customs revenues in America for the benefit of England; the *Indemnity Act* proposed to compensate the already wealthy British East India Co. for its loss of profit due to competition from Dutch tea sold on the black market. Needless to say, these government subsidies pickpocketed from the Americans, would end up in the pockets of London aristocrats and lobbies. The *game of free competition* could only be free when it was favorable⁵².

⁴⁹ •This British Company run by the highest aristocratic and financial authorities in England used to dabble in extremely shady business. For example, to make up for its huge deficit with China, from which it bought hundreds of thousands of tons of tea, it began to produce drugs (opium) in its colony of Bengal and smuggled it to the Chinese. This trafficking –as widespread and fatal as that of the Colombian drug cartel (in the twenty-first century)– led to the Opium Wars in the following century (1840 and 1860), when the British Government sent the Royal Navy to protect traffickers and force China to accept drugs. Eventually China was entirely corrupt (including the Imperial Court) and the British East India Co. not only made up its deficit but made fat profits that made its country great.

⁵⁰ •See the Opium Wars.

⁵¹ •De 1767. Les Townshend Acts or Acts of Charles Townshend were two decisions of the English Parliament passed in 1767 and proposed by Charles Townshend, Chancellor of the Exchequer, shortly before his death. The purpose of the Townshend Acts was to increase the revenue of the English Treasury.

⁵² •This was also the case in Canada between the Montreal North West Company and the British Hudson's Bay Co. The latter involved the London government, which forced the Montreal North West Company to be "kamikazed".

More than that; anticipating the juicy revenues from the the Thirteen Colonies and concurrently wanting to improve its image in England, the British East India Co. lowered the tax on tea sold in Great Britain and at the same time made this powerful company refund the 25% tax on tea that was re-exported to the Thirteen Colonies⁵³. It is easy to understand why this company had accumulated huge stocks of tea in its London warehouses.

To support the levying of these new taxes, the Commissioners of Customs Act, as mentioned above, was to create a Customs Service on the model of the Home British Customs Service. The Vice Admiralty Court Act also created four judicial districts to try customs offences without a jury, as the population was generally opposed to the penalization of these offences, juries would have been too and the jurors would have shown too much leniency towards the fraudsters. Thus were activated the "*Courts of Oyer and Terminer*" — or *Court of Expedited Justice* — in the old French from Normandy tradition⁵⁴.

The *Townshend Acts* finally put into effect the *New York Restraining Act*, also known as the *New York Suspending Act*, legislation designed to suspend the powers of the Assembly of the Colony of New York until it agreed to abide by the laws passed by the Parliament of England⁵⁵.

The *Townshend Acts* modified the fiscal laws. Instead of allowing the Colonial Assemblies to pay the Governors and Judges, they allowed England to levy taxes in

⁵³ •Labaree, Benjamin Woods. *The Boston Tea Party*. Northeastern University Press, Boston, 1964 et 1979. p.13 5

⁵⁴ •Court of Oyer and Terminer. Oyer (Entendre) & Terminer (déterminer la culpabilité) in Old French from Normandy, imported to England by William the Bastard. This court of justice was active throughout the Empire. It made it possible to speed up court decisions.

⁵⁵ •Knollenberg, Bernhard. *Growth of the American Revolution, 1766–1775*. New York: Free Press, 1975. p.296.

America to pay the salaries and wages of the Governors and Judges. Thus, these magistrates, presumed intelligent people, would be more loyal to the hand that fed them. This was what Parliament called "the power of the purse⁵⁶." The American historian John C. Miller, who was not lacking in the spirit of synthesis wrote that "*Townshend ingeniously sought to take money from the Americans by means of parliamentary taxation, to use it against their liberties by making colonial governors and judges independent of their Colonial Assemblies*⁵⁷."



The Boston Tea Party

As long as the Americans were satisfied to brutalize the opponents –called *Tories* (by the Americans) and *Loyalists* (by the English)–, the patience of the English authorities remained within the limits of courteous shrugs. But when the *opponents to taxation* attacked a trading company as powerful as the British East India Co. capable of bribing half the people of London, everything became as dramatic as a crime of lese-majesty. It must be remembered that the B.E.I.C. were the *titleholders* of what we then called: the English Indies⁵⁸ as large as 35 times England.

On December 16th, 1773, a group of Americans, disguised as Iroquois, invaded a vessel of the British East

⁵⁶ •Thomas, Peter D. G. *The Townshend Duties Crisis: The Second Phase of the American Revolution, 1767–1773*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1987. p.260.

⁵⁷ •Miller, John C. *Origins of the American Revolution*. Stanford University Press, 1959. p. 255. The Townshend taxes brought in only £300 a year, while the British military presence cost £170,000. London had to back down in the face of the boycott of goods and the laws were repealed on 5 March 1770, although the tea tax was maintained.

⁵⁸ •Territory that included Pakistan and Bangladesh. The Indies remained the private property of the Company until 1757, when the revolt of the Indian troops of the Company's private army forced the Company to officially cede the territory to the English Crown. Thus, Queen Victoria was able to become Empress of India.

India Co. and threw to the sea a cargo of taxed tea, imposed on the Americans. This banal act—which took on the ironic name of the *Boston Tea Party*⁵⁹ in the History of the United States—directed against the lobby of the very powerful British East India Co, had the effect of a real sacrilege perpetrated against the British Crown (since most of the investors in this Company were Members of the British Parliament), while the Boston Massacre was woefully underestimated and even neglected.

Some of today's English "patriotic historians" try to ridicule it by claiming, as stated above, that the British East India Co. was on the verge of bankruptcy and that this privilege was intended to bail it out. In fact, the Company will always show fertility of mind in creating devious ways to make up for its deficit by producing drugs (opium) on a large scale in its Bengal colony and forcing China to buy and consume it⁶⁰. It was the archetype of the current Medellin Cartel except that the British East India Co. could count on the armed forces of England to achieve its goals by forcing China to buy the narcotics.

The British Parliament immediately took exception to this violation of a merchant vessel of the *British East India Co.* London was quick to use this rather banal incident, to make a fuss about it and to retaliate by passing *the Coercive Laws* that the Americans called *the Intolerable Laws* in the same breath.

Through these punitive laws, the Colony of Massachusetts came under the direct control of the King of England⁶¹ and lost its internal administrative autonomy. The port of Boston was immediately blocked and closed

⁵⁹ ●The name Tea Party was, of course, sarcastic. Tea receptions were very common and very popular all over the English-speaking regions.

⁶⁰ ●It was not until Mao Zedong's ruthless methods, a century later, that the Chinese eradicated opium from China by liquidating the last most diehard addicts.

⁶¹ ●Massachusetts Government Act. 5

to all commerce until further notice, for having been the scene of the Boston Tea Party⁶². In the judicial sphere, in the event of criminal prosecution, the "political" defendants would be deported to be tried in England. A brand-new *Quartering Act* was passed to strengthen the law, as well as the most despicable law (from the point of view of American colonists): *the Quebec Act*⁶³, initialed by the King of England on June 22, 1774, which will be developed more fully in Chapter 5 on Canada.

The two objectives of the Quebec Act were, first and foremost, to grant the Catholic clergy of Quebec, spokesman and guardian of the French people of Canada, all the privileges they wished, so that they would prohibit⁶⁴ the French Canadians from joining the American Insurgents. It was a "*matter of give and take!*" between the Canadian Catholic Clergy and the British Government.

The second ambition of the Quebec Act was to block the territorial expansion of the Thirteen Colonies towards the northwest⁶⁵. For this purpose, the Province of Québec was enlarged to block the way, threatening the Thirteen Colonies like a papist Cerberus, of which the old Americans had kept some terrified memories of battles lost despite having five times as many soldiers as the Canadians⁶⁶.

⁶² ● Boston Port Act.

⁶³ ● But effective from 1 May 1775.

⁶⁴ ● It was a prohibition on pain of excommunication...

⁶⁵ ● The West being blocked by the immense Louisiana that the inept King Louis XV had – totally inconsistently – given to Spain by the secret Treaty of Fontainebleau in 1762, provoking a revolt on the part of the furious Louisianans.

⁶⁶ ● *Battle of Carillon*, July 5, 1758. *Battle of Fort William-Henry* (August 2–9, 1757), *Battle of the Monongahela* (or *Fort Duquesne*), July 9, 1755. See the Dictionary of Franco-English Land Battles of the Seven Years' War, by Jean C. Castex, Les Presses de l'Université Laval, Québec, 2006. And this will also be the case in 1812, during the *Battle of Chateauguay*, when 1,800 French Canadians and Indians put to flight an army of 3,500 Americans.

With regard to this Quebec Act⁶⁷, the anger of the Petitioners went up a notch, for, despite the fact that most Englishmen had become American to escape the intolerance of their mother country, their rage became terrible when they realized that the English Government had had the audacity to allow the Catholic religion to continue to flourish in Canada. The dreadful Test Act reduced English Catholics to a state of subhuman, in all the territories controlled by the English Monarchy, including the Thirteen Colonies... except in Canada.

A fourth Act of Parliament took the liberty of extending "the limits of the Province of Quebec, abolishing the English laws and restoring the French ones, and re-establishing the Roman Catholic religion throughout those vast regions which border the western and northern borders of the *free* Anglo-Protestant colonies⁶⁸."



First Continental Congress - September 5th - October 26th, 1774.

The Thirteen English Colonies of America had been "almost exclusively populated, from the beginning, by followers of several reformed cults who were fleeing religious intolerance and monarchical despotism... All were therefore animated by the deepest antipathy for the Government that had forced them into exile. There, in this immense country, lived a population different by origin, but united in an equal hatred for the old continent, by

⁶⁷ ● Voted in 1774, and ratified by the King in 1775.

⁶⁸ ● "abolishing the English and restoring the French laws, whereby great numbers of British Freemen are subjected to the latter and establishing an absolute Government and the Roman Catholic Religion throughout those vast regions that border on the Westerly and Northerly boundaries of the free Protestant English settlements." Journal of the proceedings of the Congress, held at Philadelphia, September 5, 1774. Philadelphia, PA: William and Thomas Bradford, at the London Coffee House. 1774. p. 48-49.

common needs and common interests⁶⁹." As a result, all those coercive English laws inflicted indiscriminately, were to lead to violence and uncontrollable reactions. On September 5th, 1774, 12 of the 13 Colonies⁷⁰ met in Philadelphia in a First Continental Congress. One of the initial resolution that the Congress endorsed was the *Suffolk Document* which denounced the Intolerable or Coercive Acts; it called for:

1-boycotting imports from England and refusing to use English products. **2**-refuse to comply with English laws that suppressed the autonomy of the Province of Massachusetts and blockade of Boston Harbor. **3**-demand the resignation of English officials appointed to govern Massachusetts. **4**-refuse to pay taxes until this "puppet" government of Massachusetts is dissolved. **5**-support a Colonial Government of Massachusetts, independent of royal authority until the Intolerable Acts are rescinded. **6**-urge the colonies to raise American militias in order to create an armed force. In one of his famous rides, Paul Revere (Rivoire) delivered a copy of the Resolutions to the First Continental Congress in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, where they were endorsed on September 17th, 1774, as a sign of inter-colonial solidarity. Then a Petition was passed to the British Monarch asking him to repeal these unjustified punishing laws.

Here is the abbreviated text of these grievances: "An army on a war footing has been stationed in these colonies since the conclusion of the last war [of Seven Years] without the consent of our Assemblies; and this army, accompanied by a considerable naval armament, has been employed to enforce the collection of taxes. The authority of

⁶⁹ ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895.

⁷⁰ ●Georgia except.

the Commander-in-Chief, and, at the echelon below, that of the General of Brigade, have been elevated above all civilian governments in America... The Customs Officers have the power to break into homes, without the authorization of the civil magistracy... The Assemblies have been repeatedly dissolved in an infamous manner. Commerce has been hindered by many unnecessary and oppressive restrictions... New taxes are inflicted upon us for the purpose of raising money... Jury trials in many civil cases have been abolished... Settlers can be tried in England for crimes alleged to have been committed in America⁷¹..."

In Canada, curiously, the same American victims of intolerance were revolting against the momentary and calculated tolerance of an English Government, which was accommodating, by calculation, strategy, and out of fear that the French-Canadians would take the path of fraternization with the American insurgents. The highly negative comments that were extremely critical of England's accommodating behavior towards the French Canadians (momentary acceptance of the French language and of the Catholic religion in the Institutions) had some impact on the circumspect and defensive behaviour of the Canadian Catholic clergy who channeled the public opinion of the Laurentian populations, in this *Priest Ridden Province*. One can almost say that this congenital *antipapism* of many Americans broke the spell that the vast majority of Canadians would have felt the charm to "kick" the English out of Canada and join the United States and their beloved Liberty.

In the same "Address" to the King of England, the American Petitioners bordered on arrogance by reminding

⁷¹ • Journal of the proceedings of the Congress, held at Philadelphia, September 5, 1774. Philadelphia, PA: William and Thomas Bradford, at the London Coffee House. 1774. p. 48-49.

the Monarch that he was only a poor German raised by his royal crown to the enviable level of an Englishman: "Had our Creator been pleased to give us existence in a land of slavery, the sense of our condition might have been mitigated by ignorance and habit. But, thanks be to his adorable goodness, we were born the heirs of freedom, and ever enjoyed our right under the auspices of your Royal ancestors, whose family was seated on the British Throne to rescue and secure a pious and gallant Nation from the Popery and despotism of a superstitious and inexorable tyrant. Your Majesty, we are confident, justly rejoices that your title to the Crown is thus founded on the title of your people to liberty; and, therefore, we doubt not but your royal wisdom must approve the sensibility that teaches your subjects anxiously to guard the blessing they received from Divine Providence, and thereby to prove the performance of that compact which elevated the illustrious House of Brunswick to the imperial dignity it now possesses. The apprehension of being degraded into a state of servitude, from the pre-eminent rank of English free-men⁷²..." In other words, it is not a German whom we have raised to the imperial dignity who will allow himself to lower us to the state of slaves."

And finally, a threat to destroy the Empire: "We solemnly declare that our Council has not been influenced by any other motive *than the fear of imminent destruction... And may your descendants may inherit your prosperity and its territories* until the end of time." The threat was clear⁷³.

⁷² •Ibidem, pp.-49-50.

⁷³ •«We therefore most earnestly beseech your Majesty, that your Royal authority and interposition may be used for our relief, and that a gracious Answer may be given to this Petition. That your Majesty may enjoy every felicity through a long and glorious Reign, over loyal and happy subjects, and that your descendants may inherit your prosperity and Dominions till time shall be no more, is, and always will be, our sincere and

The domino effect continued unabated: in response to the *Intolerable Acts*, the Thirteen-Colonies decided to boycott all imports from England; an unforgivable outrage to the mother country, which decreed an exemplary and additional punishment for the Massachusetts colony: a ban on fishing on the Grand Bank of Newfoundland and in the Icelandic areas. It was the ruin for a good part of the economy of this recalcitrant colony whose *fishing industry* was the foundation, especially since the *fur industry* had passed entirely into the hands of the Montrealers. This ban was not meant to calm the spirits. As the official colonial agent in London for the colony of Massachusetts, Benjamin Franklin sent, in the spring of the following year (March 16, 1775), to the Earl of Dartmouth⁷⁴ —one of the main Secretary of State of His Majesty—, a Memorandum which read as follows:

"Whereas an insult can only give the insulted party the right to obtain full redress, or, in case of refusal, the right to return a similar insult; and whereas the blockade of Boston harbor, which has lasted for nine months, has caused weekly losses to that city equal to those suffered by the *British East India Co.* by the destruction of its tea: it follows result that the additional losses are an insult inflicted by the British Government, and for which reparation is due..., I, as Colonial Agent, in the name of my country and of the city of Boston, protest against the continuance of the said blockade, and, I hereby solemnly demand satisfaction for the repeated injustice done to them *beyond* the damage suffered by the British East India Co. for the

fervent prayer.» Journal of the proceedings of the Congress, held at Philadelphia, September 5, 1774. Philadelphia, PA: William and Thomas Bradford, at the London Coffee House. 1774. pp. 48-49

⁷⁴ . ●George Legge, Earl of Dartmouth, Peer of England and Viscount Lewisham, was a politician who served as Secretary of State for the Colonies and First Lord of Trade between 1772 and 1775..

destruction of its tea chests. And whereas the conquest [of New France], was made by the combined forces of Great Britain and the Thirteen Colonies..., the colonies have the undoubted right to share in the benefits of these fisheries... Accordingly, in the name of the colony of Massachusetts, I protest against the act submitted now to the consideration of Parliament, designed to deprive this Province and the other provinces (on the ground that they refuse to purchase English goods), and declare this act to be sovereignly unjust and offensive⁷⁵."

Thomas Walpole⁷⁶ sent this last Memorandum back to Franklin, the same day (March 16, 1775), with words that might have seemed threatening to his person: "Dear Sir, I send you back your *Mémoire*. One thinks that it could have dangerous consequences for your person, and that it would contribute to exasperate the nation... signed Thomas Walpole⁷⁷." Franklin wrote of this: "Mr. Walpole came to my house the next day, and ... added that as I had no instructions to deliver such a protest, my *Memoir*

⁷⁵ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume 1 (1757-1775), p. 452 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin, Colonial Agent of Massachusetts to the Honourable Earl of Dartmouth, Secretary of State to His Majesty the King of England, written in London March 16, 1775.

⁷⁶ •Thomas Walpole was the second child of the 1st Baron Walpole and his wife Mary Lombard. Thomas was the nephew of Sir Robert Walpole, Prime Minister of Great Britain from 1721 to 1742. He engaged in trading with the merchant Sir Joshua Vanneck, whose daughter Elizabeth Vanneck he married. He also entered politics. In the early 1770s, with a group of investors, including Benjamin Franklin, whom he befriended, he sought land in Ohio. In 1787 he married his second wife, the Frenchwoman Jeanne-Marguerite.

⁷⁷ •Thomas Walpole was associated with Benjamin Franklin and a group of investors to obtain newly acquired land in Ohio. Thomas was the son of Horatio, 1st Baron Walpole and Marie Lombard his wife. He was a member of parliament and married in first marriage the daughter of a wealthy merchant of French origin, Joshua Vanneck, and was knighted for his fortune. In second marriage he married Jeanne-Marguerite Bataillhe de Montval who brought him the aristocracy..

would appear unjustifiable, and that it would be regarded as an affront to the English nation⁷⁸."

If the protests were refused with contempt, what was left to do but to take up arms? The Americans were beginning to realize this state of affairs, which the diplomats of the European countries could already see coming. As early as 1768, the Count du Chatelet⁷⁹ wrote to Choiseul-Stainville: "All that is lacking is arms, a leader and courage to these people that England has gathered from all parts of Europe in its colonies, to make themselves independent⁸⁰."

Thus, *alea jacta est*, the die was cast. Some more far-sighted Englishmen realized that the affair was taking a bad turn. The lobbies and the English government, too proud or too greedy to give in to this fairly despised group of settlers⁸¹, stubbornly persisted, ruthlessly. Their mercantilist obstinacy, which for a century had made England great, was also the cause of the tragic misstep.

To give an idea of the contempt of the English ruling class for those religious expatriates who refused to be taxed without the right to vote, one will read with profit the letter that Henry Hulton, English Commissioner of

⁷⁸ ●Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume 1 (1757-1775), p. 452 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin, Colonial Agent of Massachusetts to the Honourable Earl of Dartmouth, Secretary of State to His Majesty the King of England, written in London March 16, 1775. p. 454

⁷⁹ ●Florent-Louis-Marie du Châtelet (1727-1793), comte du Châtelet-Lomont, duc Châtelet de Haraucourt, seigneur de Cirey, Saint-Rémy, Avison, Aigremont, Blanques et Fayet, governor of Sémur and Toul, marshal of the camps of the king's armies, grand cross of the military order of Saint-Louis, minister plenipotentiary at the court of Vienna, ambassador to the emperor of Germany and then to England. He was then ambassador to England.

⁸⁰ ●Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson, 1861. Letter from the Comte de Chatelet to Choiseul of 12 March 1768. p. 434

⁸¹ ●The word "colon", which once meant peasant of the colonies, was quite pejorative, even if, in the twentieth century, the colonists of Algeria were considered rich owners. In English the word colon gave the word clown, who was a poorly dressed and ridiculous man.

Customs in America, wrote when reporting the battle of Breed's Hill. Hulton announced that "*the rascally patriot and apothecary, James Warren, happily was killed... You may judge what the herd must be like when a man like him is their leader.*" And Hulton lamented that "*in the British army there were [among the officers] many noble families, many very respectable, virtuous and amiable characters, and it is grieved that some gentlemen, brave British soldiers, should fall by the hands of such wretched villains as the bandits of these countries, among whom there is none who can claim to be called a gentleman. They are of an excessively vulgar, depraved and degenerate race, and it is a mortification to us that they speak English, and can find their origin in our country*⁸²."

England was thus drawn into a dangerous spiral which was leading it straight to civil war. The more lucid saw that this stubbornness in imposing the tea of the British East India Company was causing English financiers to lose money: "I have taken this opportunity to point out the great imprudence of losing the American market by retaining the tea tax. We have thrown this trade into the hands of the Dutch, Danes, Swedes and French, and letters from our customs clerk's report that these countries are now supplying the whole continent with contraband, not only of tea, but of all Indian articles, to the amount of £500,000 sterling a year, at least. This causes some concern; the people are becoming more and more convinced that it was wrong to fall out with America. It is said that for the last five years the *non-import* [boycott] *associations* have been in existence, we would have sold two and a half million

⁸² • Letter from Henry Hulton to —, 20 June 1775; The letter was originally published in her book by Henry's sister, Ann Hulton, who also lived in Boston. *Letters of a Loyalist Lady*, The Harvard University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts, 1927. Quoted by Jensen, Merrill, *The Founding of a Nation, A History of the American Revolution 1763-1776*, Oxford University Press, New York, 1968. P-648.

worth of these goods, if they had not imposed on tea, or had the good sense to revoke it promptly⁸³." Certainly, should this tax fail, the English state—that is, the English people—would lose a lot of money, but in case of success, the beneficiary would not be the English people but the *British East India Co.*

In another letter to his friend, the English admiral Lord Howe, dispatched to America with a fleet to subdue the American insurgents, Benjamin Franklin showed how little he had thought about the problem of war and its economic advantages. He wrote: "The profit of any trade will never equal the expense when one wants to do it by force, and maintain it with fleets and armies⁸⁴." But, "*the war-mongers* [the economic pressure groups], were not the payers." It is usually the small taxpayer who pays with his blood—although, when it comes to England, it was mostly the German mercenaries, but also and especially the Scots and the Irish. The English populace were content to reimburse the costs of the war through their taxes. The London Lobbies always organized themselves so the taxes would not hit them as hard.

The American people were willing to do anything for a variety of reasons. To his son, Benjamin Franklin wrote around October 1775, showing him how eager the Americans were to submit themselves to sacrifices for

⁸³ ●Conversation with Lord Dartmouth on American affairs. – Fall of the shares of the [English] East India Company. As set forth in a letter from Benjamin Franklin to Thomas Cushing, Speaker of the Massachusetts Assembly in Boston, January 5, 1773. Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume 11 (1757-1775), p.294 et seq. Thomas Cushing (1725-1788), was the Speaker of the Massachusetts Assembly in Boston. The son of an enriched merchant, Cushing became a lawyer and politician. He remained against independence to the end, but thanks to his friends and money, he managed not to be caught up in the anti-British wave of the American population and to have to emigrate to Canada.

⁸⁴ ●Ibidem. Volume II (1775-1790); letter from Benjamin Franklin to his friend the English admiral Lord Howe, sent to America with a fleet to subdue the American insurgents, written in Philadelphia on July 20, 1776. p. 19.

achieving independence, even the homeless whose homes had been burned in Charleston or Boston by English troops. The latter had been ordered to carry out extremely cruel reprisals on the American people, as soon as the famous Tories, acting as whistleblowers—or *Fifth Column*—reported them to the military authorities: "I am not terrified by the expense of this war, even if it were a long one. A little more frugality or a little more industry among individuals will do the trick. Let us assume its cost at £100,000 a month, or £1,200,000 per year. If 500,000 families each spent one shilling less per week, or earned one shilling more per week, or if they spent 6 pence less per week, and earned 6 pence more per week, they could pay that amount without realizing it. Giving up tea would produce three-quarters of that sum; and 500,000 women, each spinning 3 pence of yarn or knitting a week, would pay the rest. Yet I most sincerely wish peace, this war being unnatural and evil; but we have nothing to expect from submission but slavery and contempt⁸⁵." In the mouth of this already famous man, "not drinking tea or spinning textiles became political acts⁸⁶." Similar acts that seemed trivial would also constitute Gandhi's strategy in the British Indies. In order to violate English law that forbade Indians to manufacture their own textiles or to draw salt from the Indian Ocean, Gandhi revived the fashion of the spinning wheel and the extraction of salt by evaporation. And he won the game!

In Franklin's case, his "accounts" appear a bit like those of a rich man who knows that he will have no real sacrifice to make. As for his refusal to submit in a country

⁸⁵ ●Parton, James, *Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin*, Mason Brothers, New York, 1864. Volume II, p.93.

⁸⁶ ●Vincent, Bernard et Marienstras, Élise, *Les Oubliés de la Révolution américaine : femmes, Indiens, Noirs, quakers, francs-maçons dans la guerre d'Indépendance*, Presses universitaires, Nancy, 1990. 207 pages. p. 127.

where the scourge of slavery reigned, the comment seems surprising in the mouth of such an enlightened philosopher.



Little by little, what was still only a general discontent festered into a revolution. The year 1770 would demonstrate that the English government's strategy of leaving 10,000 men in the Thirteen Colonies to prevent any riot would —incident after incident— result in actual insurrection. Placing face-to-face young armed men could engender serious consequences. For 10,000 men were, at once, *too few* to hold such a territory, and *too much* to avoid clashes between the soldiery and the population. At the same time, England was being much more diplomatic with the French-Canadians, who were getting every advantage, lest they, too, be fearing that they too would take the high road⁸⁷.

What was this strategy of striking only at Massachusetts and New York? The English government knew that most of its colonies had border disputes between them. It was therefore a good reason to rely on these interstate differences to keep the revolt according to the famous policy of "divide and conquer". As a result, London struck mainly at Massachusetts, where the bulk of the revolt came from, hoping that this exemplary punishment would serve as a lesson to others.

But it "was wrong in its predictions. All the Americans united to avoid the fate of Boston. They all united against the Metropolis, some to defend their privileges as British citizens, the others (of foreign origin) because their homeland was now America⁸⁸" and was in danger.

⁸⁷ ●Removal of the Test Act and other benefits.

⁸⁸ ●Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Les Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p.77

These 10,000 soldiers, who represented England, were going to (by their contemptuous and presumptuous arrogance as armed men always are facing unarmed men) ignite the hatred among the colonials. This contempt was compounded by the fact that, peddled by travelers as far away as England, rumors claimed that the Americans were cowards, and that the sight of a redcoat would be enough to put them to flight. Benjamin Franklin, who was aware of this hearsay, in a letter, tried to erase this absurd belief which risked to promote the courage of the British war-mongers: "I believe... that the Americans will fight, and that the nut will be harder to crack than they imagine⁸⁹."



Let us return to some of the violence already mentioned elsewhere. At the very beginning of the year 1770, about forty English soldiers, busy posting large newspaper pages in the streets, were attacked by a band of hot-blooded *Sons of Freedom*. Several men were wounded. After the episode in which English soldiers fired into the crowd, Thomas Hutchinson, the English Governor of Massachusetts finally ordered, in view of the seriousness of the situation, the withdrawal of the English garrison which left Boston at the request of Samuel Adams⁹⁰, future father of Independence. Several English soldiers—including the captain himself—were tried and charged with murder. The English government even suspended the tax laws⁹¹ imposed on the Americans, except for the one on tea,

⁸⁹ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790), p.5; Benjamin Franklin's letter to Joseph Priestley, English politician, written in Philadelphia on July 7, 1775. The footnote on this page explains precisely the preamble of this quotation, according to which "In England, the sword-bearers had not failed to say that the Americans were cowards, and that it would suffice the sight of a red coat to put them to flight.."

⁹⁰ •Mark Puls, Samuel Adams: Father of the American Revolution, New York, Palgrave Macmillan, 2006,

⁹¹ •Including the one on the maintenance of occupation troops.

sponsored by the powerful British East India Co. which owned the entire Indian subcontinent (the Indies which then included present-day Pakistan and Bangladesh). However, despite this desire for appeasement, a British customs ship (the *Gaspée*) grounded in June 1772 on the coast of Rhode Island was attacked and burned. A wanted poster promised a bounty of £500 to the person who could find the culprits.

On October 20th, 1774, the American Congress decided to *boycott all two-way trade* with England and, to top it all to stop even the slave trade which essentially enriched the English slave traders of the *South Sea Co.* This was the ultimate provocation against the slave trade lobbies of His Majesty.

At the end of the winter, on March 30th, 1775, the English Parliament voted *the New England Restraining Act*, which reiterated the formal obligation for the Thirteen Colonies—including the 6 recalcitrant colonies of New England—to trade *exclusively* with England and forbade American fishermen to come and fish on the banks of Newfoundland and in the North Atlantic. It was easy to legislate in the London Parliament for the benefit of England's lobbies; but who would be able to enforce such punitive laws *on the ground*?

In April, the English colonial Governor of Massachusetts, General Thomas Gage, received *a secret but imperative order to bring the Americans into line*. Gage had been at the *Battle of Fontenoy* in 1745, and then with George Washington against the French-Canadians at the *Battle of the Monongahela* in 1755 and, in both cases, the two generals had escaped shoulder to shoulder from the French. But now they found themselves implacable enemies, especially since the English troops were carrying out

cruel reprisals on the American civil population, which only made the determination of the colonials *irreversible*.

On July 5, 1775, Benjamin Franklin wrote from Philadelphia to William Strahan in London: "You are a member of Parliament, one of the members of that majority which has doomed my country to destruction. You have begun to burn our cities and murder our people. Look at your hands, they are stained with the blood of your brothers! You and I, have been friends for a long time; today you are my enemy and I am yours. Signed Benjamin Franklin⁹²."

Needless to say, the royalist Americans known as tories, the very ones who opposed independence were of a higher social level (civil servants, merchants local politicians...). They became a *Fifth Column* within the American population: not only did they inform the authorities so that reprisals could be inflicted on the agitators and their flock, but they officially kept a low profile so as not to suffer public's vengeance. Peter Force quotes a letter written by one of these secretly anti-independence informers. According to him, the colonial population was loudly contemplating an alliance with "the French, the Spaniards or any other nation, to send everything to hell. We received a schooner a few days ago that brought us a considerable quantity of gunpowder concealed under molasses, and when it arrived, it displayed a French flag ensign and pendant⁹³ as a sign of victory. If the Government wishes to do something, it must do it quickly, or else the protest will grow stronger. I am surprised that you do not board or arrest all vessels entering and leaving these ports." And the anonymous informant ended his message with these words

⁹² ●Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790), pp.2 et suiv.

⁹³ ●Pendant : although spelled pendant in the Royal Navy, this word is always pronounced pennant. [the dental falls out after a nasal].

of fear: "Do not disclose my name, or I shall run a great risk to my life and property if they were to discover that I have hereby sent you information about these events. I am really in danger by writing at all"⁹⁴."

One of the cruel reprisals against "Tory or Royalist collaborators" was called the "*feather-and-tar game*." This cruel torture⁹⁵ consisted in stripping⁹⁶ the royalists, coating their bodies with tar, and then sticking chicken feathers on them as a sign of mockery, presumably to stigmatize their habit to have German mercenaries fight in their place⁹⁷. Under the effect of humiliation (which sometimes ended in bloodshed), thousands of Englishmen emigrated to Canada or returned to their original homeland, England. Their property was then sold at public auction and the fruit of the sales pocketed by the various colonies.

If the resentment of the Americans against the Tories who denounced the Independents, often turned violent, there were some solid reasons, for the English troops

⁹⁴ ●Extract of a letter to a gentleman in London, dated Philadelphia, August 1, 1775. Force, Peter, American Archives, 9 vol., 1837—1853, Series V, Volume 3 : p.4.

⁹⁵ ●Abbott, John S. C., American Pioneers and Patriots : Benjamin Franklin : A picture of the struggles of our infant nation, one hundred Years ago, Dodd, Mead & Company, New York, 1876. p.339

⁹⁶ ●Harris, William J. "Etiquette, Lynching, and Racial Boundaries in Southern History." The American Historical Review. Vol. 100, No. 2 (Apr., 1995). This quintessentially American game was also used during World War I against German-Americans who were too openly opposed to military aid against Germany..

⁹⁷ ●Chicken means coward. Opinion was quite widespread in Germany, a consequence of the lack of English volunteering to wage war: In Germany, according to Adolf Hitler, [Adolf Hitler, Mein Kampf, Eher Verlag, Munich, 1925.] "The English were considered cunning businessmen, but, as far as I was concerned, as cowards, and even to an incredible degree. Unfortunately, our noble scholars of university history have not restored in the minds of their students the truth that it is not possible to build a powerful edifice such as the British Empire on mere fraud and fraud. The few who wanted to draw attention to this truth were either ignored or silenced. I can clearly recall to my mind the astonished eyes of my comrades when they first found themselves opposite Tommies in Flanders. After a day of fighting, our soldiers slowly realized that these Scots looked nothing like those they had been portrayed and caricatured in the 'pictured' and mentioned in the communiqués." Hitler boldly confused the English and the Scots, like many Europeans who think that all Britons are Englishmen.

committed not only during the Revolutionary War (says the American historian Balch) but on all the points of the globe where they had to fight, "the most revolting acts of barbarism and the most contrary not only to the Laws of Humanity, but more importantly to war laws between "civilized" peoples. The generals, even more than their soldiers, are, before posterity, responsible for the violence of all kinds that they ordered in cold blood, and over whose execution they presided with impassivity. As early as March, while peace was being discussed in the British Parliament, orders were given to set fire to everything in the American Thirteen Colonies. These barbaric orders found ardent executors to carry out the wishes of the Ministry. General Gage, locked up in Boston, was taking revenge of his forced inaction by mistreating the American prisoners. It drew from George Washington just reproaches and threats of reprisals which were never carried out⁹⁸.

In Virginia, Lord Dunmore wreaked horrific havoc which earned him the nickname of the *Tyrant of Virginia*. After the [American] victory at Saratoga, the town of Esopus on the Hudson River and the surrounding villages in the vicinity "were burned to the ground on the orders of the English generals Vaughan and Wallace. The inhabitants had taken refuge in the forests and preferred to expose themselves to the torments of hunger rather than suffer the outrages that a ferocious conqueror exercised against the sick, women, old men and children⁹⁹.

In early May 1778, during an expedition in the vicinity of Philadelphia, Colonel Mawhood was not ashamed to publish the following notice: "The colonel will

⁹⁸ •Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, American and French Accounts of the American Revolution, Porter & Coates, Philadelphia, 1891. Volume I, note of pages 207 et seq. Thomas Balch was a Virginia born in Leesburg in 1821.

⁹⁹ •Ibidem, Footnote 207 et seq.

reduce the rebels, their wives and their children to beggary and distress, and here he quotes the names of those who would be the first objects of his vengeance." In June 1779, the inhabitants of "Fairfield, near New-York, still suffered the last excesses of that ferocity so often reproached to the British troops. Their incursions into the Chesapeake Bay were marked by the same atrocities which the pen refuses to describe¹⁰⁰."

Other witnesses reported that they also "cut down the apple trees and other fruit trees and burned them. And either by accident or voluntarily, burned down a large house in Princeton recently owned by Jonathan Sargent, Esquire... At Newmarket, not two miles distant, they burned the best mill in that region, with all the wheat and flour in it. And with that a foot treadmill with a great quantity of clothing.... They also burned the mill and a six-room half-timbered dwelling house that belonged to Major William Scudder¹⁰¹."

Bacteriological warfare, which the British army had already used in 1764 against the francophile Indians of Pontiac (smallpox), was reactivated against the American colonists, when, to stop the march of the allied troops in front of York, Lord Cornwallis¹⁰² had ox heads thrown into all the wells, dead horses, and even the corpses of slaves, in order to contaminate the drinking water¹⁰³. This English general —whose name (Brome) was given to a

¹⁰⁰ ●Ramsay, David, *The History of the American Revolution*, Printed and sold by James J. Wilson, Trenton, 1811. 2 volumes, Vol.I, p. 335.

¹⁰¹ ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, American and French Accounts of the American Revolution, Porter & Coates, Philadelphia, 1891. Volume I, note pages 207 ff.

¹⁰² ●The Princeton Historical Association, *A Brief Narrative of the Ravages of the British and Hessians at Princeton in 1776-77*, Edited by Varnum Lansing Collins, Princeton, N.J., 1906. pp.4-6

¹⁰³ ●Charles Cornwallis, 1st Marquess Cornwallis (Order of the Garter) (1738–1805), was also known as Viscount Brome or Earl Cornwallis. A riding and hill in Monteregia bear his name in Quebec.

county and a mountain in Quebec, no doubt to celebrate his high deeds— even had "inoculated all the negroes who deserted their plantations or whom he could kidnap, and then forced them to demote and carry the contagion to the American camp¹⁰⁴."

In parallel with their desire to destroy people and property, the English troops also raped American women. "The damage inflicted by this desolation and looting, which must amount to very large sums and caused much hardships to those who suffered them, are still far from another scandal that I have not yet mentioned; I am referring to the rape of women¹⁰⁵."

Seeing resentment and even hatred develop in the face of this violence, Benjamin Franklin wrote to an English politician and aristocrat in an attempt to stimulate appeasement: "It is with sorrow that we voted a petition to the Monarchy, to give Great Britain¹⁰⁶ one last chance, one last opportunity to recover the friendship of her colonies. I do not suppose her to have sufficient sense to seize this chance, and I conclude that she has lost these colonies forever. She began by burning our ports, I suppose, of course, we will never be able to return the same outrage. She can probably destroy all our ports, but if she wants to reclaim our trade, is this the way? In truth, it is crazy. Which merchant, except Bedlam, ever thought of increasing the

¹⁰⁴ •The French army later suffered from the lack of drinking water because of this horrible strategy.

¹⁰⁵ •Quoted by the American historian Balch and also by the *Mercure de France*, *Journal littéraire et politique*, Arthus Bertrand, Paris, december 1781, p. 109.

¹⁰⁶ •The Princeton Historical Association, *A Brief Narrative of the Ravages of the British and Hessians at Princeton in 1776-77*, Edited by Varum Lansing Collins, Princeton, N.J., 1906. p.14. As mentioned elsewhere, the term obsolete Ravishing of Women means: rape of women or rapture of women. Which may seem very curious.

number of his customers by breaking their heads, or to facilitate the payment of their debts by burning their houses¹⁰⁷?"



As early as July 1775, Franklin threatened the English to ask France for help, without naming her. He also evoked the most terrifying threat for the English Merchant Lobbies, the threat of giving away their trade to this foreign power, that is to say to France, the most envied and the most coveted and hated country for the English: "We have not yet asked any foreign power to help us. We have not yet offered our trade as a price for this alliance. Perhaps we shall never do so; but if we are too persecuted, it will be natural to consider it¹⁰⁸." And as this letter goes on, one feels that exasperation invade the mind and the hand of the American scholar. So much so, that he lets himself go to judgments showing that he is not fooled by the shopkeepers' motivations of his country of origin: "In England, they will hardly believe that we can be as zealous for the sake of the public good than they are for the sake of a few thousands sterling pounds a year. Such is the difference between new states that are not corrupt and old states that are putrid¹⁰⁹."

Franklin's contempt for commerce is exacerbated: "A war whose great cause is, as you say in your letter, the *necessity of preventing American commerce from passing through foreign channels...* It seems to me that neither the acquiring nor the keeping of trade, however advantageous, can authorize men to slit each other's throats¹¹⁰."

¹⁰⁷ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, , Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790), p. 4; letter from Benjamin Franklin to Joseph Priestley, English politician, written in Philadelphia on July 7, 1775.

¹⁰⁸ •Ibidem. p.5

¹⁰⁹ • Ibidem, p. 6.

¹¹⁰ •Ibid. p.19

The cup of patience was full for the Americans. Locked up in their comfortable London offices, the English legislators, bribed by the Merchant Lobbies, had completely lost touch with reality. In the streets of the big cities of the Thirteen Colonies, the slogan "No taxation without direct control of the people," began to be waved. Sons of Freedom, likely activists, were popping up everywhere. They were activists, presumably of Irish, Scottish, German and even French origin, opposed by violence and terror to all these oppressive laws. They attacked English tax agents and forced them to flee. On August 26, they attacked the home of Thomas Hutchinson, Chief Justice of Massachusetts. The judge and his family found *salvation in flight*.

Unrest and fear soon began to spread throughout the Thirteen Colonies and the idea of "begging France to intervene"¹¹¹ flourished more and more. All those minorities who had built an environment of freedom in America were not going to let themselves be overwhelmed by the same country whose intolerance had forced them to expatriate.

In a letter to the Commissioners, written in Philadelphia on December 21st, 1776, Robert Morris described the fear that pervaded the people threatened by the soldiery, and the *need for French intervention* to avert disaster: "Our people had no idea of the difficulties and calamities of war when they so proudly provoked England to fight. Every man who was then a good patriot, felt himself equal to the challenge, and seemed to wish to find the opportunity to make a great achievement. But now that we are engaged enough (in the war), when death and ruin look

¹¹¹ •Trudel, Marcel, *La Révolution américaine*. (1775-1783), Les Éditions du Boréal Express, Trois-Rivières, p.45. Trudel speaks of the Journal of a French Traveler in the Colonies, 1765, in *American Historical Review*, XXVI (1920- 1921) pp.726-747; XXVII (1921-1922) pp.70-89

us right in the eyes, and that nothing, except the most intrepid courage, can save us from contempt and disgrace, I am sorry to say that many of those who stood in front in the hubbub, are withdrawing from danger like cowards and ask forgiveness without giving a blow. This, however, is not general, but the collapse of spirits is a contagious disease, and unless some happy event occurs to divert this disorder in a different direction, in time it will take over our entire community. No event would bring about this beneficial turn as effectively as a declaration of war from France to Great Britain¹¹²."



In the face of threats that their American private hunting ground pass to the hands of the jealous and hated French, the Merchant Lobbies of England tried to ruin the economy of the Thirteen Colonies as quickly as possible by counterfeiting the currencies that these territories allowed themselves to issue without England's permission. In 1776, they counterfeited so much that they discredited these fictitious securities, and Congress had to order them to be forced into circulation.

It was necessary to "undermine the independence of America by attacking the American economy... In the "Tory" newspapers of New York could be read that "the people who were to visit the other colonies could obtain any amount of counterfeit Congressional bills for the price of ream paper¹¹³." Josiah Bartlett claimed that this was "the most diabolical plot to ruin our paper money," noting that the forgeries were "so perfectly executed that it was extremely difficult to discover any difference." *The Tory*

¹¹² • Sparks, Jared, *The Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution*, Nathan Hale & Gray & Bowen, Boston, 1830. Lettre de Robert Morris aux Commissaires, écrite à Philadelphie le 21 décembre 1776

¹¹³ • Ream = it's the French word *rame* of 500 leaves. Ream paper was of lesser value.

Plan, he said, was "one of the most infernal that was ever imagined." It was also the first recorded attempt of financial sabotage in wartime, until now." During the Second World War the Nazis put concentration camp prisoners to work counterfeiting Allied currencies, hoping to weaken enemy economies. The British Empire, moreover, was badly shaken and collapsed at the end of the war.

Thus, despite the fact that the British citizens themselves were reluctant to fight for their Empire as *rank and file*, the power of nuisance of England and its lobbies remained extraordinarily high, thanks to their Guinea gold which was used to buy German regiments from the princes of the Holy Roman Germanic Empire. The English Merchant Lobbies also tried, without the slightest risk of provoking popular riots in London, to force the distant and belligerent Scots and the irascible Irish to fight for them. Usually in vain!

As for the black slaves¹¹⁴ of the Thirteen Colonies, the English authorities motivated them by trickery, promising them outright emancipation and freedom, in order to incite them to desert the American army and plantations. In addition, the English pledged to grant the Iroquois with vast, inviolable territories so that they would remain on their side. If His Majesty's influencers (or agitators) were to be believed, the post-war tomorrow would be peace and love of the "*the singing tomorrows*." They did the same with the French-Canadians, who alone had the power to keep Canada on England side in the event that the Thirteen Colonies wished to take it over. The result of these very *diplomatic promises* took shape, as we have said, by the *Quebec Act*.

¹¹⁴ ●Black as opposed to *Amerindians* who were also enslaved.

But the religious tolerance of the Quebec Act in favor of Canadian Catholicism, scandalized the fundamentalist Protestants in the Thirteen Colonies. Within these thirteen territories, Catholics were scrupulously persecuted not only by the populace but also by the various legislations¹¹⁵. This tolerance displayed by the Quebec Act was a real stab in the back for the Protestants, for whom it was nothing more than a pact with the devil on the part of a King of England who bore the title of Defender of the Faith. Few knew that this title had been conferred on Henry VIII by none other than the hated Pope Leo X, shortly before this king created the new religion "*Anglican Catholic*" as opposed to "*Roman Catholic*."

●

As a form of humour, Franklin would later mock the impotence of the English, who seemed to be fighting the Americans with the same efficiency as Saint Augustine, Bishop of Hippo¹¹⁶, who wished to explain the *Mystery of the Trinity*: "With an expenditure of three million sterling, Great Britain killed 150 Yankees in this campaign [of 1775, before Boston]; that is £20,000 per head. During this time, 60,000 children were born in America¹¹⁷. Indeed, the growth of the American population had enough to frightening. "Nothing makes the importance of its colonies better felt than the increase of their population, which doubles every 25 years, while the demands [imports of manufactured goods] which they make to England are still more rapidly increasing¹¹⁸."

¹¹⁵ ●The Test Acts curtailed the rights of Catholics.

¹¹⁶ ●Hippone = Hippo Regius = Annaba = Bône, Algeria.

¹¹⁷ ●Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Joseph Priestley, English politician, written in Philadelphia, October 3rd, 1775. p. 7.

¹¹⁸ ●Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson : Historical Study of American Democracy, page 423

Premonitory in the demographic realm, Benjamin Franklin added that "our greatest security consists in the increase of our population, our wealth, and our strength... These qualities will make us more respected; our friendship will be more sought after, and our enmity will be more feared... We will not only be treated with justice, but with benevolence¹¹⁹." In fact, it was so true that in the twentieth century, England has morally become the 51st American state, always ready to engage in any war inspired by American lobbies, and even to justify them in the spirit of vassalage¹²⁰.



Throughout this American Revolution, which was the first colonial *war of independence* (in modern times¹²¹), England retaliated in every conceivable way. There were direct reprisals, arrests, deportations, destruction of property, kidnapping of slaves, burning of Indian villages, unfulfilled promises of enlargement of territory, forced incorporation of slaves in the army by promises quickly forgotten, promises of emancipation or land grants in Canada, fabrication of counterfeit American currency to ruin the economy of the Thirteen Colonies, and finally systematic destruction of the few industries that had developed in spite of restrictive English laws prohibiting colonial competition with the mother country. Thus, the colonies produced hemp to supply the Virginia rope factories, which were considered a very important war industry. In April 1781, Benedict Arnold went up the Jones River with a British Infantry unit, and advanced to Richmond. One of

¹¹⁹ ●Conversation with Lord Dartmouth on American affairs. — Fall in the shares of the [English] East India Company. As set forth in a letter from Benjamin Franklin to Thomas Cushing, Loyalist, Speaker of the Massachusetts Assembly in Boston, January 5th, 1773. Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin. Tome 11, p. 296.

¹²⁰ ●Allusion to the *Oil Wars* (Iraq) of the two Presidents Bush.

¹²¹ ●Haiti was the second, 20 years later, on January 1, 1804.

the objectives of his campaign was to destroy Warwick's public rope factory. This rope manufacture was the most important rope factory in Virginia and its destruction was a considerable blow to the American war effort, which found forced to buy French rope on the sly¹²².

Another of the English retaliation was to launch rumors of *disinformation*, as the USSR did in the 20th century. The lies suggested that France was only seeking to enslave the Thirteen Colonies. The English were propagating and amplifying all these false rumors through their newspapers "in order to dissuade the foreigners [the French in particular] from entering into competition with them for our trade"¹²³. Other misinformative English rumors attempted to portray the Thirteen Colonies as areas of anarchy and the Americans as cowards. They wanted to encourage international bankers to refuse direct loans to the new country.

Franklin responded to these ruses with swarms of letters and articles sent to his English friends: "Your newspapers are full of strange tales of the anarchy and confusion that is troubling America, anarchy of which we have no knowledge, while your own affairs are really in a deplorable state. In my humble opinion, the root of the evil is less in the too long duration of your Parliament or in the too unequal selection of its members, than in the enormous salaries, excessive emoluments, and patronage of your great offices... Our tranquility is general and our people...

¹²² ●Hopkins, James F., *History of the Hemp Industry in Kentucky*, University Press of Kentucky, Lexington, 1951.

¹²³ ●Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 369 ; lettre de Benjamin Franklin à John Ingenhousz, Passy, le 29 avril 1785.

very happy with their new government... These tales are, I presume, invented to console England¹²⁴."

On the other hand, he defended the French with all his might: "I think I can say —as far as I can see— that the French Court still has the same goodwill towards us. I wish I could say the same of the other Courts of Europe. I believe that their desire to bind themselves with us by treaties has greatly diminished for some time; I attribute this cooling to the trouble that England takes in presenting us everywhere as torn by divisions, and dissatisfied with those who govern us. The English newspapers are filled with those lies that the Ministers have inserted in foreign newspapers¹²⁵." This was the reverse principle of disinformation, as practiced by the Soviets during the Cold War. One would arrange to start a *rumor* in a Western newspaper that was presented as a simple rumor. Then Pravda communist newspaper would report this rumor "from the Western press" as an established fact.



¹²⁴ •Ibidem, p. 351 ; letter from Benjamin Franklin to Richard Price, Passy, August 16, 1784.

¹²⁵ •Ibid. p. 362 et suiv. letter from Benjamin Franklin to John Jay, Passy, February 8, 1785.

CHAPTER 3

Various origins of the soldiers in the English Army; in the French and American armies. The pay. Recruitment of German mercenaries. Irish and Amerindian contingents.

It was a European curiosity, the absence of a national army in England. The English Empire was characterized by the massive use of German mercenaries, Scottish, Irish, Indian Cipoy, Canadians, Sikhs, Swiss, Gurkhas (today), Indians, New Zealanders and Australians (during the world wars¹). The proportion of soldiers of English birth was extremely low despite the proportional numerical superiority of England compared to the populations of these countries. On the other hand, the English were buying up the officers' commissions that the English army sold to the highest bidders. Business is business!

The recruiting service of the English-born troops had to content itself with criminals just released from prison for the sole purpose of buying back their freedom, homeless people, debtors unable to clear their debts. It is true that the French army has always had foreign troops, but they were volunteers and never exceeding² 8% of the

¹ • New Zealand and Australian soldiers suffered losses 4 to 5 times greater than those raised in England. In 1914-1918, during the First World War, Newfoundland troops were "entirely" exterminated. They were therefore more exposed by the British General Staff dominated by English generals.

² • At the height of its deployment in the 1950s, the Foreign Legion fielded a strength of 60,000 men (15% of whom were French nationals engaged under a foreign civil

army, while in the British Army, native-born Englishmen represented only 6 to 8% of the total manpower (and the German mercenaries 70 to 75%; the rest were supplied by the Scots, shock troops always placed in the front line, the Irish and the others). *It can be stated that ten times as many Germans as English died for the British Empire.*

If we compare two great colonial empires, the Roman Empire and the English Empire, we see that the Roman army was primarily an army of middle-class citizens. It was mainly in the middle class that the legionaries were recruited³, and hundreds of thousands of them fell on the battlefields. As an example, in Spain, in the 20-year struggle against King Viriathe and the inhabitants of Numance⁴, 50,000 Romans disappeared. From the year 180, the Senate had difficulty in gathering the strength of nine legions, whereas they sent twenty-three legions to combat Hannibal, and it had to enroll soldiers before the legal age of seventeen⁵." Eventually, the Roman middle class was decimated, and the Senators—who did not want their own children to be forced to fight, but who still wished to continue to enrich themselves through wars—had to grant Roman citizenship and pay to masses of plebeians and non-citizens (and even to slaves, freed for such a noble cause), in order to ensure satisfactory numbers to the Roman Army.

status. These 60,000 men then represented 12% of the French Army). In 2014, it had a strength of 7,700 men of 146 different nationalities, 15% of whom were French. In total, the Foreign Legion now represents 2.5% of the overall strength of the French Army.

³ • There were three social classes in Rome: the rich class (Patricians), the middle class, and finally the poor class (the Plebeians). As the legionnaires had to equip themselves at their own expense, only the first two classes had the means. The Patricians, very rich, certainly wanted to enrich themselves but managed not to make war. The middle class was thus exterminated, in the long run.

⁴ • Numantia was a city in Celtiberia, and Viriathus a regional king of Lusitania (Portugal), against whom Rome made war.

⁵ Malet, Albert, & Isaac, Jules, Roman history, Librairie Hachette, Paris, 1925. p.170 3

It was when the Middle Class was bloodless, almost totally decimated, that Rome hired Gauls, Germans, and a thousand other nations of the Empire.



Throughout the Seven Years' War in America, England provided the crews of the Fleet and the senior officers of the army, but it was the Thirteen Colonies that completed the numbers (20,000 soldiers of the Army and 12,000 sailors), numbers that were not filled by the more expensive German mercenary regiments.

The American Revolution highlighted a glaring lack of basic manpower in the British army⁶. "Throughout this war, the English Government had great difficulty in obtaining sufficient numbers of troops, so much so that it was impossible to recruit the numbers voted by the British Parliament⁷. Why were the English so stubbornly anti-militaristic when it became necessary to put their own lives at risk to safeguard or increase the fortunes of their Merchant Lobbies and thus of their country? The answer is in the question. For a thousand reasons, the most essential of which was the fact that generalized military service was never made compulsory insofar as others could do the war for them: Germans, Scots, Irish Scots, Irish, Indians...

Other "peculiarities tended to slow down the recruitment of troops throughout the British Isles. The military service [of those who agreed to wear the uniform for various reasons,] usually lasted for a lifetime. The pay of the ranks and files was inadequate to support a reasonable standard of living. In addition —or perhaps *primarily*

⁶ •As in the old historical documents, we have used the adjective "English" extensively instead of that of British.

⁷ •National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office. 4:275, Letter from Jenkinson to Clinton, of 5 December 1780.

because of this reason— little consideration was attached to the armed service. The prestige of the uniform provided no advantage in England, whereas in France it was the activity of the Nobility. Enrichment through economic development was the English Aristocracy's main concern. In 1775, no medal, no decoration crowned the valor of the English troops. There was nothing to match the *Victoria Cross*. Since the hated days of Cromwell, the soldier was considered the natural enemy of the people's liberties. Everyone in England made a fool of the man in uniform as contemptible. The newspapers caricatured his ignoble and unhappy life with relish. Popular esteem could be summed up in a saying that also ran in the Navy some thirty years later: "A drinking companion comes before a shipmate; a shipmate before a stranger; a stranger before a dog; a dog before a soldier⁸."

All these reasons combined made very problematic the work of the recruiting sergeants, the English being little turned to this virile art of war, nor towards the army and even less towards the battlefields. Lowell tells us, «Recruitment was very difficult [in England], and could only bring, at best, recruits of poor quality⁹." The acuteness of the recruitment problem was accentuated by the fact that England never, ever, on its own metropolitan territory, ordered or decreed a compulsory and universal mass draft, even at the height of the two World Wars that darkened the 20th century, marked the century and the beginning of the end of European civilization, preferring to put pressure

⁸ ●Belcher, First American Civil War, I, 250, 258.

⁹ ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chap. III, *The Treaties before Parliament*, p.35. «Enlistments were made with difficulty [in England], and could at best bring in but raw recruits. Conscription seems always to be out of the question in England.»

on the colonies [New Zealand, Australia, Canada, Scotland, Ireland, Newfoundland, India...] to provide between 3 and 5 times more soldiers —proportionately— than it mobilized itself.

Some consider this refusal (to force its population to fight) as a kind of respect for Human Rights before its time; and this intention would be adequate and fully justifiable if others had not been forced to shed their blood for this country which has, through the centuries, indulged wars of aggression throughout the centuries for the sole benefit of its financiers. Many of the English who did not want to fight joined the Passive Defense¹⁰. All the partial conscriptions were instituted by the English Government, under the incessant pressure from the French¹¹.

As an example —let's switch times and centuries—; the French made the *Crimean War* (between 1853 and 1856), wanted by the London Lobbies, only because the Emperor Napoleon III wanted to please Queen Victoria and the English, for whom he was immensely grateful¹². The English wanted to prevent Russia from annexing the Ottoman territories (oil fields) that they had reserved for themselves and which they would seize at the end of the Great War. Napoleon III only found as a pretext of participation in this useless war, that an insignificant dispute between the multi-faith guardians of the Holy Places in

¹⁰ •Thanks to this passive defense (which included all volunteers of good will, including war godmothers) England can now claim a strength of more than 8.8 million soldiers at the end of the 1st World War – 200,000 more than France – and a strength of 4 million soldiers at the end of the 2nd World War.) Numbers can be misleading.

¹¹ •Broad, Roger, *Conscription in Britain 1939– 1964: The Militarization of a Generation*, Routledge Publishings, c/o Taylor & Francis Group LLC, Florence, Kentucky, 2006. "The introduction of conscription in May 1939, before the war began, was largely due to pressure from the French, who emphasized the need for a large British army to oppose the Germans."

¹² •They granted him political asylum while he attempted his coups in France.

Jerusalem. Who would keep the Key to the Holy Places, the (Russian) Orthodox or the Catholics (French)? The French sent 400,000 men and the English 250,000. The French lost 100,000 killed and the English 21,000 of which 2,755 were killed in battle and the rest from disease. In total, the famous Key to the Holy Places took the lives of half a million young soldiers, two million disabled and three million orphaned to France. England could only gather its 250,000 soldiers by forcing Ireland and especially Scotland through indirect conscription. Upper Scotland, which had just undergone the ethnic cleansing called *The Highlands Clearances*¹³, provided the lion's share of the troops, but England also had to hire 5,000 Polish mercenaries, 2,200 Swiss mercenaries, and of course, the eternal German, 4,250 mercenaries.

In fact, the Catholic Highlanders were not treated any better by their Anglo-Protestant lords than the German peasants by their princes who shamelessly sold them to England. And as the account was not yet there, the English were casting covetous glances towards the Italian Piedmont¹⁴ and Swiss cantons that had not yet contributed with their blood. In a letter of the empress Eugénie de Montijo wife of Napoléon III, to the Duke of Alba, about the Crimean War, Eugénie wrote: "Returning from Saint-Cloud, the day of the Review of the Guard, the Emperor Napoléon III announced: "Lord Palmerston¹⁵ told me that the English government, obliged to send reinforcements to the East (in Crimea), was going to ask Piedmont and perhaps Switzerland for a collection of men that it would send to

¹³ ●In Scottish Gaelic *Fuadaich nan Gàidheal*, " the expulsion of the Gaels »

¹⁴ ●Bayle C.C. *Mercenaries for the Crimea: The German Swiss and Italian Legions in British Service 1854-1856*, Presses des Universités Mc Gill-Queen, Montréal, 1977.

¹⁵ ●Henry John Temple, 3rd Viscount Palmerston (1784–1865) served twice as Prime Minister.

its pay in the East." It is then that the beautiful French empress remembered that in her veins ran the intrepid Spanish blood. And she who, later, trembled so much for her dear son gone to fight and subdue the Zulus into the British Empire, she didn't remember much of her Spanish mothers of all those teenagers she was sending to their deaths. She simply suggested: "*Why not [raise troops] in Spain? Our soldiers are sober and courageous, and I have no doubt that they have their role alongside your people*"¹⁶." This idea pleased very much the emperor. He spoke about it to Lord Palmerston and the latter, of course approved this contribution of new blood in favor of England.

During the so-called *French and Indian Wars*¹⁷ in America, the Thirteen Colonies had been the almost sole source (along with the Holy Roman) of the Army that had fought and conquered New France. "It is estimated that there was 300,000 men in those thirteen colonies between the ages of 16 and 69. What expectations for the future, if England can contain them in subjection"¹⁸." With such masses of soldiers, England could dream of taking possession of the entire immense Hispano-Lusitanian Empire as she had seized the French Empire (Canada and Acadia). What dreams of wealth and power for the London Lobbies! Peru in the literal sense!

¹⁶ • "Our people = the French". Family letters of the Empress Eugenie, published by the Duke of Alba, Le Divan, Paris, 1935..

¹⁷ • French and Indian Wars, which correspond to the Wars of the eighteenth century (the Seven Years' War, the War of the Austrian Succession, the War of Spain) and even the Wars of the League of Augsburg. According to the British Office for National Statistics, the population of England in isolation was approaching 8 million in 1777. The Thirteen Colonies already had 2.8 million inhabitants, doubling every 20 or 25 years..

¹⁸ • National Archives of the United Kingdom, British War Office Collection. I:1005, Letters from Oughton to Jenkinson, May 27, 1779, Colonel Peirson à Jenkinson, 11, 15 Mar. 1779; *ibid.*, I:1002, Major J. Clayton to Jenkinson (undated).

Anyway, to come back to this War of American Revolution, the wish of the English financiers to undertake wars for their only profit did not correspond *at all* to the absolute absence of desire of the English population to rush to the battlefields to conquer laurels of Glory... or chrysanthemum wreaths. On the contrary, the refusal of English citizens to go and fight for their country "was intense. In order to make themselves unfit for combat, many came to the point to mutilate themselves. They cut off the thumb and forefinger of their right hand¹⁹" [so as to be unable to handle a weapon]. Others chose to desert at the first opportunity. To use one officer's phrase, "they were a powerful, unstable, bunch of guys²⁰ "who were difficult to control.

Before the strategic turning point of the most humiliating defeat at Saratoga²¹ in May 1778, the English Government used two methods to acquire soldiers. The first was *volunteering*. "On December 16th, 1775, the War Office placed a Notice in the *London Gazette*, official organ of the Army, promising that "during this period of Rebellion which was going on in North America, every volunteer who would enlist as a soldier in one of His Majesty's Infantry Regiments "would be entitled to a discharge at the

¹⁹ •National Archives of the United Kingdom, British War Office Collection. I:991, Letter from Colonel Gisborne to Barrington, January 29, 1776. Andrews, Charles M., Guide to Materials for American History in P.R.O., Carnegie Institute, Washington, 1914.

²⁰ •Despite the violent opposition of the Catholic clergy of Canada, there were two regiments of French Canadian volunteers in Saratoga. This battle was the Stalingrad, the turning point of the war, because at the announcement of this American victory, the King of France judged that the American Revolution was not a simple revolt of beggars that would end in reconciliation, but a real War of Independence. France then decided to officially help the Americans (Franco-American Alliance) and to send them a French army to assist them.

²¹ •London Gazette of 16 December. 1775. "should be entitled to his Discharge at the end of Three Years, or at the end of said Rebellion, at the option of His Majesty."

end of three years, or at the end of the said Rebellion, at the choice of His Majesty²²."

However, no mention was made, in the said *London Gazette* notice, that a bonus of *one and a half guineas* was offered to each volunteer²³. This allowed it to be awarded only to the hesitant and those who knew about its existence. Ultimate scam!

| Comparison of British army strength in the War of the Austrian Succession | | | |
|---|------------|----------|--------|
| Allies | Total Pop. | Soldiers | % Pop. |
| English | 7,500,000 | 3,000 | 0.04% |
| Hanovrian | 2,000,000 | 16,480 | 0.82% |
| Dutch | 4,000,000 | 30,540 | 0.76% |
| Scot | 2,500,000 | 6,000 | 0.24% |
| Irish | 3,000,000 | 6,000 | 0.20% |
| Total Allies | 19,000,000 | 62,020 | 0.32% |

But decidedly, selling one's life for these few guineas did not convince Her Majesty's subjects. So, the London Government took the high road. Under pressure from the Merchant Lobbies, it granted common criminals amnesty for their crimes as a condition of their enlistment in the English army. "Vagabonds"²⁴, traffickers and criminals of all kinds could in this way escape the judicial sentences that had been imposed on them. Even deserters, on the run

²² •National Archives of the United Kingdom, British War Office Collection. 3:5, Letter from Harvey to Elliot, March 10, 1775

²³ •Ibid.

²⁴ •"Vagrants, smugglers, and criminals of various kinds might thus escape such legal penalties as had been adjudged them. Even deserters, whether at large or imprisoned, were to be pardoned upon agreeing to re-enter the ranks of either their former regiment or some other."

or in custody, could be amnestied by agreeing to rejoin the ranks of their own or another regiment²⁵.

Contrary to a widespread idea, hooligans, mobsters of all kinds, thugs from the slums, low-life ruffians, purse snatchers of old ladies, all these "gallows-birds" make very bad soldiers. *Discipline being the essential strength of an army*, it is easy to understand that this virtue is rarely part of a villain's holy writ. The historian Jean-Claude Damamme gives an idea of the value of brawlers; the same comment could be made about the scum who spends his life in prison: "Unfortunately for their personal glory, these fierce brawlers, paradoxically, do not like to fight on the battlefield where one cannot choose the opponent. This lack of true courage makes them judged by others fighters with a justified severity: "All these brawlers were very bad soldiers. The man who, counting on his strength, seeks quarrel with the weak is necessarily a coward." Unquestionable judgement of a junior officer²⁶.

The Duke of Wellington gives us a significant example of the value of his own soldiers, at Badajoz, 1812, as at Ciudad Rodrigo. These cities, held by the French, were besieged by the Duke of Wellington's troops. Now, after having taken these Spanish cities, his British soldiers looted, burned and raped the Spanish civilian population for three whole days. To put an end to these days of anarchy, the duke of Wellington had gallows erected for his soldiers as a threat. When he finally succeeded in restoring order, it was an aspect of desolation and shame. In front of this, for the first time in public Wellington's eyes watered.

²⁵ ●London Gazette, Frb. 20th to 24th, 1776, and the same paper from March 28th to 31st, 1778.

²⁶ ●Damamme, Jean-Claude, *Les soldats de la Grande Armée*, Perrin, Paris, 1998. p.201.

He gave a glimpse of the value of the British army when he compared the British recruitment to the French Conscription during the Napoleonic wars: "A French army is composed very differently from ours. The Conscription calls out a share of every class — no matter whether your son or my son — all must march; but our friends [our soldiers]— I may say it in this room [in private]— are the very scum of the earth. People talk of their enlisting from their fine military feeling — all stuff — no such thing. Some of our men enlist from having got bastard children — some for minor offences — many more for drinking. You can hardly conceive such a set brought together²⁷." Later, when the looting and rape of Ciudad Rodrigo were forgotten, this cruel comment became shocking to the British military, and one of them²⁸ added a fictitious phrase which saved the honor, "And it really is wonderful that we should have made them the fine fellows they have become." But such a comment, from a weeping Wellington, is totally implausible after three days of anarchy, as he was watching the gallows intended to punish these same soldiers who had just raped, pillaged, and burned this Spanish city, supposedly the ally of the English.

Before the battle of Saratoga [1778], volunteers raised in Britain had to declare that they were indeed

²⁷ ●Free translation of "A French army is composed very differently from ours. The conscription calls out a share of every class — no matter whether your son or my son — all must march; but our friends — I may say it in this room — are the very scum of the earth. People talk of their enlisting from their fine military feeling — all stuff — no such thing. Some of our men enlist from having got bastard children — some for minor offences — many more for drink. You can hardly conceive such a set brought together...." cité dans Paul Johnson, *The Birth of the Modern World Society 1815-1830*, Harper Collins Publ., New York, 1991; p. 65

²⁸ ●Some claim that it was the Duke of Wellington himself who, under pressure from critics, added the final commentary to save the honour of the English Army..

Protestant²⁹. Regiments made up of such "jailbirds"³⁰ were constantly under scrutiny as the men sought only to desert: "They could not be trusted when their regiment was in and they had to be kept *under lock and key* until they were shipped to America or for America or elsewhere. "It is clear," wrote Jenkinson, that no confidence could be placed in the greater part of the enlisted men in any of the regiments which performed their service in Great Britain. It is doubtful whether they could be trusted in any of the regiments serving on the American continent; but they could be sent to the regiments of the West Indies or to the garrisons of Gibraltar and Minorca. From these places, they can hardly desert, and there is nothing to lead us to conclude that they would not do properly there³¹."

In a letter to Jenkinson concerning these very recruits, Sir David Lindsay, frowning, stated: "116 of them are compulsory enlistees whom I am under the absolute necessity to keep in isolation³², for there is not one of them who would stay with us for 24 hours at a time³³". Despite this, these types of soldiers had the freedom to choose which regiment they wanted to serve in.



The bitter defeat at Saratoga and the French intervention had the effect of a violent blow on the London Merchant Lobbies, who for once realized that they had led

²⁹ ● The recruits could be criminals, but there was no question that English Catholics would be recruited to learn the art of war [like the slaves in the US]. These papists were far too revanchist. National Archives of the United Kingdom, British War Office Collection, 1:1002, letter from Aird to Jenkinson, December 28th, 1779.

³⁰ ● Taulards or rather gallows game.

³¹ ● National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office, 1:1002, lettre de Aird à Jenkinson, du 28 décembre 1779.

³² ● National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office, 4:966, Jenkinson to Amherst, 26 octobre 1779

³³ ● "To keep in confinement."

England into disaster. In May 1778, Parliament quickly passed a new act³⁴ designed to "facilitate and improve the recruitment of His Majesty's land forces"³⁵. This law decreed that each volunteer would receive a bonus of £3, and that he had the right to be discharged at the end of his three years' service "*unless the Nation is at war*;" a little phrase that could prove to be perilous for the enlisted man. This new regulation also gave to the Justices of the Peace and to the *Property Tax Commissioners* (appointed to apply this law by force in the country), the right and power to apprehend and deliver to the recruiting officers "any fit man, or any person convicted of public misconduct: public drunkenness, pickpocketing, burglary, violence, or who could not, after investigation, prove that he was engaged in any trade or industry business or industriously engaged in lawful employment, and who did not possess *sufficient cash assets* to support and maintain his own support and maintenance"³⁶. "*Vae pauperibus*! Woe to the needy!

These notorious Property Tax Commissioners — high-sounding titles— are often intended to camouflage realities that are too scabrous. They had, as their main task, to incarcerate and turn over to the Army anyone who was convicted of dealing in goods for a turnover of less than £40. It was the military service in lieu of any judicial punishment³⁷. It seems quite obvious that only poor people were to be seized. Unlike fish farming, large fish could slip

³⁴ •National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office, 1:1004, Plymouth, 2 juillet, 1779.

³⁵ •Recruiting Act 18 Geo.III, C.53) qui peut se consulter sur internet..

³⁶ •Owen Ruffhead, Esq., Statutes at Large from Magna Carta to the End of the Last Parliament, XIII, 273-280.

³⁷ •"all able-bodied idle, and disorderly Persons, who could not, upon Examination, prove themselves to exercise and industriously follow some lawful Trade or Employment, or to have some Substance sufficient for their Support and Maintenance."

through the net of the English military Administration. Fighting for one's country had become a punishment for scoundrels, generally very bad fighters. Fortunately, the English General Staff could count on the Scottish Highlanders, the Irish and German mercenaries to win its battles, or at least... not to lose them all.

To avoid complaints from the municipal authorities, the Recruiting Officers had to pay the Municipality [the Parishes³⁸, as was said in England then, as in France] —for each recruit captured in the manner described—, 20 shillings, and to the *Controller of the Poor* —in case the man had a wife and family who draws from the social budget of the parish— a sum between 10 and 40 shillings, depending on the number of children.

A 10-shilling bounty was also offered as a reward to anyone who reported a man who was likely to be forcibly recruited into the Armed Forces under this specific law. No voter³⁹ and, between May 25th and October 25th, no harvesting employee was to be forcibly enlisted so as not to harm the landowners who employed them. Forcibly conscripted workers could theoretically demand a discharge after 5 years of service, *unless the nation was still at war* (!). No man could be conscripted under the law unless he was robust enough to serve His Majesty, free from broken limbs, from any disturbance of character, weakness or bodily infirmity, disabilities that might render him unfit to perform the occupation of soldier. No recruit was to

³⁸ ●The Anglican parish was the equivalent of today's municipality.

³⁹ ●That is: people rich enough to have the right to vote (landowners.) Only the poor could be incorporated ex officio.

appear under 17 years of age and over 45, or below the height of 5 feet 4 inches without shoes⁴⁰.

One can imagine the terrible atmosphere with all those denunciations, hounding of tramps in all English cities and towns, and in the English countryside, and with the hunt for pretenders (false characterists...) within the battalions themselves.

This *Press Act* received royal assent on May 28th, 1778. But the little people of England knew the voracity and cunning of its greedy and unscrupulous Merchant Lobbies. As a result, the few advantages offered failed to convince the poor citizens to sacrifice their lives for the benefit of this Monarchy phagocytized by the businessmen. No research has been produced concerning the effectiveness of the *Forced Recruitment Act of 1778*. But one can imagine that if the following year [1779] a new law was enacted, it was because the previous one had not produced the desired results. The Law of 1778 was therefore also a failure⁴¹. About 15,000 men were forcefully raised on the island, 10,000 of whom came from Scotland [and only 5,000 from England and Wales].

These 15,000 men were enlisted under the union-jack, thanks to the efforts (forced and coerced) of the lords of Scotland in favor of His Majesty's Service⁴². In fact, the Protestant lords of Scotland offered their Catholic subjects to the voracity of the Merchant Lobbies like the kinglets

⁴⁰ •From The Organization of the British Army in the American Revolution Chapter III The Recruiting of the Army, site Americanrevolution.org

⁴¹ •Corbett, William, *Parliamentary History of England; from the Earliest Period to the Year 1803*, Vol. XX (December 1778-février 1780), Longman, Hurst, Rees, Orme & Brown, London, 1814

⁴² •National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office, 1:682. "Resolution of Nobility of Norfolk"; Fortescue, John, *A History of the British Army*, III, p.290.

of Africa to the sordid cruelty of European, Arab, or American slave traders. Between Scotland and England, the proportion of requirements was 2/3 in favor of England. Although Scotland has only 1/4 or 1/5 of the population of England, this strong Nation [Scotland] provided 2/3 of the Anglo-Scottish military workforce. The massive levies in Scotland were made by the municipalities but also by the Anglo-Protestant lords of Scotland placed there following the insurrections of the middle of the century, and who sought to please the King with their overzeal⁴³.

The operation of the next Forced Recruitment Act, that of 1779, on the other hand, has been carefully scrutinized by historians. It is known that the recruitment resulting from this law (from March to October 1779) was also a failure, since, in spite of the rejuvenation of the recruits to 16 years old, only 1,463 criminals and vagrants were forced to wear the Redcoat Uniform in Southern England⁴⁴. The activity of vagabond became really perilous in England, in those times, when the needs of the London Merchant Lobbies to carry out their economic wars which were so devourers of men. On the other hand, Scotland was combed to make up for the shortage of "human material" in England.

Imperturbably, the Parliament, stimulated by the frenetic energy of the indefatigable Merchant Lobbies,

⁴³ ●The former Scottish Catholic lords of Upper Scotland (Highlands) who had joined the Catholic insurrection (at Culloden) had been removed from their function and replaced by Anglo-Protestant lords. Most of their descendants converted to Protestantism and strove through their zeal towards the King of England to regain their titles of Nobility and their Estates.

⁴⁴ ●National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office, 4:966, Lettre de Jenkinson à Amherst, 26 octobre 1779. The red uniform dates from William of Orange.

passed the *Military Restraint Act* of January 9th, 1779⁴⁵, which admitted sturdy boys from the age of 16 to 50 years old. It is common knowledge that a 16-year-old boy does not know the precious value of his life and health. He might as well use this carelessness and make it profitable for the greatest benefit of the national economy. Moreover, this law "made available for the Conscription another class of criminals (already mentioned) by declaring that: "could be recruited for office, not only the robust idle ones but also the persons who misbehaved on the public roads and disturbed public roads and order", as well as those who abandoned their families to the charge of public assistance—assistance which was then *parochial*, that is, *municipal*.

What some call "the British gentleman" was not born by spontaneous generation. Recruits now received £3 and 3 shillings instead of £3 and especially exemptions from a thousand parochial duties *if they returned alive*. In addition, they were given the unique freedom to create and exercise *any business anywhere in Great Britain*. This concession was precious and even priceless, and its value can only be appreciated in the light of the eighteenth century, taking into consideration that almost every town and corporation had a monopolizing system of customs and municipal regulations. This complex system regulated in each administrative district legal proceedings to settle economic disagreements. It was so obscure and amphigoric that candidates were discouraged from claiming their rights. Only those who had the financial means could.

⁴⁵ ●Corbett, William, *Parliamentary History of England; from the Earliest Period to the Year 1803* Vol.XX (décembre 1778-février 1780), Longman, Hurst, Rees, Orme & Brown, *Debate in the Commons on the Bill for better Recruiting the Army*, Jan.21 1779, Mr. Jenkinson, Secretary at War..., Londres, 1814. pp. 1123 et suiv.

Moreover, according to this *Military Restraint Act* of 1779, soldiers discharged from the military before the expiration of their contract, would be entitled to the same privileges as those who had served the full term, like the *workers of the last hour* in the Bible (who were paid the same as the others without having worked). Perhaps, so many advantages were enough to entice the underprivileged of the only constitutional monarchy of the European Continent. With so many advantages, one wonders why the English Army was still having such difficulty recruiting volunteers of English blood?

We also note that on “several occasions, people who had been arrested by the magistrates for the purpose of forced conscription into the regular Army, volunteered for the local Militia⁴⁶.” This pattern of behavior still seems to be prevalent in some Anglo-Saxon societies, two centuries later. President George W. Bush Jr. followed this exact process when he joined the National Guard to avoid going to war in Vietnam. This cowardice did not prevent him from later declaring war on Iraq as well as Afghanistan, where 10,000 Americans⁴⁷ and hundreds of thousands of Iraqis and Afghans died.

As some British judges protested the role of recruiters they were being asked to play that they were being used as recruiters, Jenkinson, the Secretary of War, replied that that everything was for the best since “these men, by the fact that they were troublesome and obnoxious,” thus became immediately useful to their country by contributing

⁴⁶ •British War Office, 4:965, Barrington to the Commissioners, 17 Aug. 1778. Ibid. 1:1005, Lord Sir Percy Brett to Jenkinson, 8 Mar. 1779

⁴⁷ •Not to mention the 22 veterans who committed suicide every day, finding, after their repatriation to the United States, that the war had destroyed their psyche and their chances of having a normal life..

to its defense through their voluntary service in the Militia⁴⁸."



Faced with the lack of enthusiasm of English citizens to fight, the Merchant Lobbies resigned themselves to passing huge budgets to buy German regiments, always available on the international market. So much did certain princes⁴⁹ of the Holy Roman Empire needed English gold to increase their wealth or simply to maintain their rank within the European aristocracy by displaying themselves as generous philanthropists, consummate humanists or refined art lovers! When a government is unable to recruit soldiers in its nation, it is left with the obligation to raise a lot of money, to find soldiers elsewhere. And this does not go without opposition. The speech of the Right Honourable Charles James Fox⁵⁰ in the British Parliament on the subject (in 1781), sought to condemn the budget for putting many generations of Englishmen into debt.

The Historian Earl Russell stated on that occasion that one of the most important topics of the parliamentary debate in the 1781 Parliament was the loan to pay for the war and to buy German regiments. James Fox then stood up and proclaimed at the top of his voice: "When a country engaged in a war encounters difficulties in raising, by

⁴⁸ •British War Office, 4:966, Letter from Jenkinson to John Livesey and E. Brewer, 13 avril 1779. Adjectives troublesome and obnoxious are themselves synonyms and they can translate into distressing and unpleasant. The addition of two synonyms is a figure of speech of insistence.

⁴⁹ •Swiss mercenary regiments were organized and leased to the English by the Cantonal Governments who could thus dispense with raising the taxes on the rich Swiss (the poor did not pay any). But the English made less use of Swiss mercenaries, who, according to the Franco-Swiss treaties, could not fight against France when England fought almost exclusively against France, its main economical rival.

⁵⁰ •The Rt. Hon. Charles James Fox was a prominent Whig politician, spending most of his life in Opposition. He became leader of the House of Commons in 1782.

taxation, the sums necessary to defray the annual expenses, and has recourse to borrowing, it is evident that this expedient defers to a later generation the burden of the present expenses. For this reason the borrowing option should be used with great caution. *For if a nation can be stimulated by the excitement of a war, by the hope of conquests and by the hazardous lottery of victory, when it risks no equivalent increase of taxes, the game will be played with ardent eagerness; the motives of war will be superficially examined and the carnage of distant battles will cause only fleeting sorrow*⁵¹". So spoke the member of the British Parliament who confessed with a remarkable spontaneity to what extent the death of soldiers leaves him indifferent. And his abysmal cynicism helps us to understand why the English citizen was so little interested to die for these scoundrels.

Next to the Shoah and slavery, the infamous mercenary trade of the eighteenth century will always remain an abomination, not only for the countries that exported regiments, but for those that imported them for the same purpose of enrichment. Certainly, all countries hired mercenaries to complete their workforce, the Netherlands, Austria... But while France was satisfied with an average of 7 to 8% of mercenaries⁵² with 92 to 93% of French-born personnel, England's percentages were completely reversed. 8 % English on average, 70 to 75% of the total workforce in German mercenaries and the rest in Scots, Irish and others.

⁵¹ ●Corbett, William, *Parliamentary History of England; from the Earliest Period to the Year 1803*, Vol.XX (December 1778-February 1780), Longman, Hurst, Rees, Orme & Brown, ..., London, 1814.

⁵² ●The Duke of Braunschweig better known in Canada as Brunswick, since one of his provinces bears this name.

In 1775, the English made unsuccessful attempts to buy a Corps of 20,000 Russian mercenaries⁵³ that Empress Catherine II agreed to sell at a *reasonable price*⁵⁴. They also tried to buy back a Scottish Brigade that they themselves had rented to Holland at a higher price than the Germans mercenaries. This transaction allowed the British to buy Germans for less, at... *liquidation price*. Business is business!

The American historian Edward Lowell states that the trade in mercenary soldiers had become extremely lucrative in the *Europe of the Enlightenment*, as lucrative as the slavery that was raging at the same time and which enriched not only the slave traders but also, as mentioned above, the local kingpins of the Gulf of Guinea. "The King of England, wrote this historian, agreed to pay to His Most Serene Grandeur⁵⁵, under the title of Recruitment Tax for each soldier, the sum of 30 *crowns banco*, equal to 7£ 4s. 4½d. He was to grant, in addition, an annual subsidy of 11,517£, 17s. and 1½d. from the day of the signing of the treaty-contract for as long as the troops would receive his pay, and double the amount (namely, 23,035£ 14s. 3d.) for

⁵³ •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chapter II The Treaties, p.17. The crown was a large 5 shilling English coin minted in the year of the coronation of a king or queen.. «The King of England agreed to pay to his Most Serene Highness, under the title of levy-money, for every soldier the amount of 30 crowns banco, equal to £7 4s. 4½d. He was to grant, moreover, an annual subsidy amounting to £11,517 7s. 1½d. from the day of the signature of the treaty so long as the troops should enjoy his pay, and double theta amount (viz., £23,035 14s. 3d.) for two years after the return of the troops into his Most Serene Highness's dominions.»

⁵⁴ •Ibidem, p.18. «Three wounded men shall be reckoned as one killed; a man killed shall be paid for at the rate of levymoney... It may be taken to mean that the King of England undertook to bear the expense of a recruit to fill the place of a Brunswick soldier actually killed in battle, but that the Duke must replace at his own cost one who deserted from the ranks or died of sickness, unless in case of an "uncommon contagious malady.»

⁵⁵ •The Duke of Braunschweig better known in Canada as Brunswick, since one of its provinces bears that name.

a period of two years⁵⁶", after the return of the survivors. This was in favor of the State of Brunswick. But the benefits were roughly similar and equally fruitful for the other princes of the German principalities.

The same historian (Lowell) tells us that, according to the tradition of these contracts, "three wounded men were counted as one killed. One killed was paid (to the duke and not to the deceased's beneficiaries or successors) at the rate of the Recruitment Tax... This may mean that *the King of England undertakes to pay the equivalent of a recruit to replace a Brunswick soldier killed in action*, but that the German duke must replace a man who deserts or dies of disease at his own expense, unless unusual contagious disease⁵⁷. "But before hiring new troops to wage the American War of Independence, England had to stop dithering with the German princes, of wavering in order not to pay the totality of the sums due, and resigned itself to pay the last drafts of the Seven Years' War. For, freed since 1763 from the necessity to buy mercenary troops, the English had knowingly neglected or disputed the bills. They had thus accumulated an enormous delay and mountains of interest to pay their debts to the princes of the Holy

⁵⁶ •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chapter II The Treaties, p.17. The crown was a large 5 shilling English coin minted in the year of the coronation of a king or queen.. «The King of England agreed to pay to his Most Serene Highness, under the title of levy-money, for every soldier the amount of 30 crowns banco, equal to £7 4s. 4½d. He was to grant, moreover, an annual subsidy amounting to £11,517 7s. 1½d. from the day of the signature of the treaty so long as the troops should enjoy his pay, and double theta amount (viz., £23,035 14s. 3d.) for two years after the return of the troops into his Most Serene Highness's dominions.»

⁵⁷ •Ibidem, p.18. «Three wounded men shall be reckoned as one killed; a man killed shall be paid for at the rate of levy money... It may be taken to mean that the King of England undertook to bear the expense of a recruit to fill the place of a Brunswick soldier actually killed in battle, but that the Duke must replace at his own cost one who deserted from the ranks or died of sickness, unless in case of an "uncommon contagious malady.»

Roman Germanic Empire. They also had to pay the sums owed to the German officers. The simple mercenary soldiers, on the other hand, could always wait a few more years, hoping that death would (not) seize them first, and would (not) decide the dispute in favor of England by extinguishing the debt.

Seeing that the war was returning with great speed, England paid off its debts from the Seven Years' War without further delay. Thus, the Elector of Hesse collected between 1776 and 1783 "in addition to indirect expenses, 21,276,778 thalers in subsidies, of which 2,203,003 thalers represented unpaid debts from the Seven Years' War.

The first contract for the supply of mercenaries for this American War of Independence, was that of the Duke of Brunswick. It was dated January 9th, 1776. "The duke cedes to His British Majesty a Corps of 3,964 infantrymen, and 336 dragoons without mount. This Corps must be completely equipped at the expense of the duke, except for the horses of the light Cavalry [the Dragoons]. They should march from Brunswick in two divisions, in February and March [1776], and the King [of England] must take measures when they cross his Hanover electoral territory⁵⁸ on their way to the seashore. The King must pay and feed them as his own soldiers and the duke [of Brunswick] undertakes to "let his soldiers enjoy all the remunerations that His British Majesty will allocate to them", i.e. not to pay them at a discount by pocketing the difference⁵⁹. However, the British government did not trust him. So, from the moment these troops arrived in America, their

⁵⁸ •The King of England was Prince-Elector of Hanover.

⁵⁹ •Literally: "that is to say, not to pay them on a lower scale and pocket the difference." As did many generals and especially the Duke of Marlborough during the War of the Spanish Succession.

salary was paid directly to them, without passing through the hands of His Most Serene Highness the Duke. This precaution was henceforth adopted with all the German mercenaries except those of Hesse-Cassel, whose landgrave succeeded in having the handling of the money entrusted to him⁶⁰.

"It is wise to be careful not to believe that by paying salaries directly to the mercenaries, the English were doing a moral work. Paying the wages directly to the troops allowed the British to cheat on the dead and disabled, and to delay the pay for several months or even years; which they could not do when the money was managed by the princes, even more devious than the English Administration. In all cases, the mercenaries were robbed of the price of their lives.

The King of England "agreed to pay to His Most Serene Highness, under the denomination of "tax"⁶¹, for each soldier, the sum of 30 "*bank crowns*", corresponding to £7 4s. 4 1/2d. Moreover, the King of England was to grant [directly to the prince] an annual subsidy of £11,517, 17s. 1 1/2d. from the day of the signing of the treaty [the Contract] for as long as the troops would receive their pay, and to double this sum (£23,035 14s. 3d.) for two years after the return of the troops to the territory of His Most Serene Grandeur⁶²."

One of the clauses of this contract deserves additional light, for it inflamed the indignation of all those who abhorred these haggling over the sale of human blood. It

⁶⁰ ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

⁶¹ ●«levy-money.» Further "crowns banco" translated as "bank crowns"

⁶² ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

stated that "according to custom, three wounded men shall have the [monetary] value of one killed; one man killed will be paid at the rate of the tax known as "*levy money*"⁶³. This clause, which does not appear in the subsequent contract with the prince of Hesse-Cassel, is mentioned in the contract with the prince of Brunswick in the same form, with the condition to exclude any extraordinary loss due to battle, epidemic or shipwreck. This could mean that the King of England agreed to assume the expense of a German recruit to replace a Brunswick soldier killed in battle, but that the duke of Hesse-Cassel was to replace at his own expense a man who deserted from his army or died of disease, unless it was in the case of an "unusual contagious epidemic". But if that were the proper interpretation, what would "three wounded men" mean then? injured"? Kapp rejects this explanation and establishes that the new recruits were paid by English "*levy-money*"⁶⁴ taxes which were added to the 30 crowns received for the killed and wounded men, and that this blood money was pocketed by the Prince and not by the soldier's family, nor by himself, if he was wounded or disabled.

In any case, the fact is established that the Duke of Brunswick received, by contract, a sum of approximately \$35.00 (Canadian dollars of the year 2015) for each of his soldiers who was killed in action, and \$11.66 for each of his men who was mutilated.

⁶³ •That is to say, for each soldier, the sum of 30 "bank crowns", corresponding to 7 £ 4s. 4 1/2d., payable to the prince directly; The pay being of course abolished for the dead.

⁶⁴ •Heinrich von Sybel, *Historische Zeitschrift* [is a bimonthly history journal founded in 1859 by the German historian Heinrich von Sybel at the Ludwig Maximilians University of Munich. Vol. II, 6 - 42, 1879, p. 327. The creation of this journal inspired the Frenchman Gabriel Monod to found *la Revue historique* en 1876. En 1886, the English Historical Review was created and in 1895 *l'American Historical Review*

It is now impossible to know how much the English have paid in this particular area. The payments were not recorded under their true headings in the statements sent to the Parliament by the Minister of War. The German historian Friedrich Kapp⁶⁵ suggests that the Cabinet did not wish to raise the criticism and controversy that this heading would have raised. The eternal concern of the English to hide their flaws, so that posterity would be proud of its History and not have to ask for forgiveness; above all, no French-style penitential masochism.



The contract-treaty with the landgrave of Hesse-Cassel (dated January 15th, 1776) differs from that of Brunswick "essentially by the fact that it is more favorable to the interest of the German prince. First of all, the King of Great Britain engaged in a Defensive Alliance with the landgrave of Hesse-Cassel. The Hessian troops were to be kept grouped under their own general, unless imperative tactical or strategic reasons engaged them to separate⁶⁶. Their injured soldiers were to remain in the care of their own surgeons and other suitable personnel under the responsibility of the Hessian Generals, and whatever the King of England granted to his own troops was to be granted to these Hessians soldiers of Hesse-Cassel. According to this contract, the Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel was to provide 12,000 men fully equipped, with artillery if necessary. The Prince would be paid in "levy-money" at the same rate as the Duke of Brunswick (30 crowns banco, or 7£ 4s. 4 1/2 d. per man). His personal subsidies, however, were proportionately larger, amounting to 450,000

⁶⁵ ●Kapp, Friedrich, *The trade in soldiers for America by German princes*; Berlin, 1864.

⁶⁶ ●This made this clause totally null and void, since, in time of war, any movement is considered required by military tactics or strategy.

banco crowns, or £108,281 5s. a year. This would be continued —without being doubled, however— for a year after the actual return of the troop to the territory of Hesse. This was a real improvement for the benefit of the Prince over the other German Electorates; but, despite what was written, the reality was to be rarely the same.

Thereafter, the landgrave provided several less important contingents, taking advantage of favorable agreements. The advantage of the landgrave of Hesse-Cassel, (compared to that of the Duke of Brunswick), was that he received more than twice as much per soldier sent to America. Apart from the contract, the landgrave also insisted on the payment by England of an *old debt* that we mentioned earlier. This debt dated back to the Seven Years' War, and England had so far refused to pay it. It amounted to 41,820£ 14s and 5d⁶⁷."

As can be seen, the very shrewd and cunning English Merchant Lobbies were forced, by the even more cunning German Electors, to pay up to the last 14 shillings and 5 pence to get their *cannon fodder*. The Germanic Princes needed their £\$D to supply England with the drug of military Power and Prestige⁶⁸. The treaties with the German States of lesser demographic and military importance (Hesse-Hanau, Waldeck, Anspach-Bayreuth, and Anhalt-Zerbst) did not differ, in their broad outlines from those described above. None of them was quite as favorable towards the Germanic princes as the Treaty with Cassel, not

⁶⁷ •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884

⁶⁸ •Allusion to the fact that the abbreviations of Book-Shilling-Pence, use the Latin letters LSD (librae, solidi, denarii)

quite as favorable to England as that with Brunswick⁶⁹. The clause was incorporated in those of Hanau and Waldeck, but not in that of Anspach⁷⁰." On the other hand, the people of Hanover lost out in every respect, since the King of England was Elector of Hanover and provided his mercenaries for free. All he had to do was to declare Conscription.



From time to time, negotiations were entered into with several of the above-mentioned princes for smaller units of troops. Chasseurs and sharpshooters were especially in demand. From year to year, these recruits were sent to America to the various divisions.

One of the many undeniable advantages for England of employing Germans as opposed to native Englishmen (apart from the fighting quality of the German troops compared to English troops) was that the mutilated men and half-paid officers (*demi-soldes* for Reserve Officers) returned to Germany: "*Foreigners are the only soldiers we can raise, and at a reasonable price, for they do not cost us an extra half-pay when the job is done*"⁷¹." The overall strength, according to Kapp, was subdivided as described in this table:

⁶⁹ ●The texts of the treaties with Brunswick, Hesse-Kassel, Hesse-Hanau, and Waldeck, may be found in the "Parliamentary Register," 1st series, vol. III.; for the treaty with Anspach, vol. VII.

⁷⁰ ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

⁷¹ ●Correspondence of George III with Lord North from 1768 to 1783, By W. Bodham Donne, in two volumes, John Murray, Albemarle Street, Londres, 1867. Vol. II, p.120. Lettre 378 du 13 décembre 1778 du roi à North. p.45. Reserve Officers were on half-pay.

Diplomacy in the American Revolution

| STATE OF MERCENARY TROOPS SENT TO AMERICA BY EACH PRINCIPALITY OF THE HOLY ROMAN EMPIRE OF GER- MANY | | |
|--|---------------------|-------------------------|
| Principality of Brunswick | | |
| | Sent in 1776 | 4.300 mercenaries |
| | in March 1777 | 224 |
| | in April 1778 | 475 |
| | in April 1779 | 286 |
| | in May 1780 | 266 |
| | in April 1782 | 172 |
| Total 5,723 of which 2,708 returned (including war crippled). | | |
| | | |
| Principality of Hesse-Cassel | | |
| | Sent in 1776 | 12,805 mercenar- ies |
| | in December 1777 | 403 |
| | in March 1779 | 993 |
| | in May 1780 | 915 |
| | in April 1781 | 915 |
| | in April 1782 | 961 |
| Total 16,992 of which 10,492 returned (including war crippled). | | |
| | | |
| Principality of Hesse-Hanau | | |
| | 1777 | 2038 mercenaries |
| | April 1781 | 50 |
| | April 1782 | 334 |
| Total 2,422 of which 1441 returned (including war crippled). | | |

| Principality of Anspach-Bayreuth | | |
|--|---------------------|-----------------------|
| | Sent in 1777 | 1285 mercenar- ies |
| | Autumn same year | 318 |
| | 1779 | 157 |
| | 1780 | 152 |
| | 1781 | 205 |
| | 1782 | 236 |
| Total 2,353 of which 1183 returned (including war crippled). | | |

Diplomacy in the American Revolution

| Principality of Waldeck | | |
|--|------------------|-----------------|
| | Sent in 1776 | 670 mercenaries |
| | In April 1777 | 89 |
| | In February 1778 | 140 |
| | In May 1779 | 23 |
| | In April 1781 | 144 |
| | In April 1782 | 159 |
| Total 1,225 of which 505 returned (including war crippled). | | |

| Principality of Anhalt-Zerbst | | |
|---|---------------|-----|
| | Sent in 1778 | 600 |
| | In April 1779 | 82 |
| | In May 1780 | 50 |
| | In April 1781 | 420 |
| Total 1,152 of which 984 returned (including war crippled). | | |
| Grand Total 29,867 mercenaries of which 17,313 returned (inc. war crippled). | | |
| <p>Source : Kapp, Friedrich, Von Eelking, Max, Von Riedesel, Generalin, Leiste, Christian, Melsheimer, FB, Von Ewald, J, Biedermann, Karl, Pfister, Ferdinand, Seume, IG, Schlozer, August Ludwig, etc...The Hessians. Numbers originally from the "Stats-Anzeigen" from Schlozer (vi. pp. 521, 522), have been rectified by Kapp to include the Anspach contingent. They are probably the least imperfect approximation.</p> | | |

| GERMAN CASUALTIES IN MAIN BATTLES | | |
|--|---------------|----------------|
| <i>Name of the Battle</i> | <i>Killed</i> | <i>Wounded</i> |
| Long Island | 2 | 25 |
| Long Island 15 Sept. 1776 | 2 | 16 |
| Long Island 16 Sep 1776 | 1 | 1 |
| Long Island 9-23 Oct (incl. Chatterton Hill) | 13 | 63 |
| Fort Washington | 56 | 276 |
| Trenton | 17 | 78 |

| | | |
|------------------------------|-----|-----|
| Assapink 2 Jan 1777 | | 4 |
| Burgoyne's Campaign to 6 Oct | 164 | 284 |
| Burgoyne's Campaign 7-16 Oct | 25 | 75 |
| Hanging 3 Sep 1777 | 1 | 19 |

Diplomacy in the American Revolution

| | | |
|--|-------|-------|
| Brandywine Hunters | 7 | 39 |
| other Hessians | 2(?) | 16 |
| Newport | 19 | 96 |
| Stono Ferry | 9(?) | 34(?) |
| Charleston | 11 | 62 |
| Springfield | 25(?) | 75(?) |
| Baton Rouge | | |
| Pensacola | 15(?) | 45(?) |
| Guildford Court-House | 15 | 69 |
| Yorktown | 53 | 131 |
| Source : Lowell, Edward J., The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884 | | |

| Total number of mercenaries sold for this war to England. | |
|---|--------------------|
| The Brunswick Principalty sent | 5,723 mercenaries. |
| The Hesse-Cassel | 16,992 |
| The Hesse-Hanau | 2,422 |
| The Anspach-Bayreuth | 2,353 |
| The Waldeck | 1,225 |
| The Anhalt-Zerbst | 1,160 |

One might think that these "*cannon fodder contracts*" did not shock anyone in 18th century Europe. On the contrary. And, as mentioned above, the English clerks who drew up the purchase contracts made sure that the Members of Parliament could not be shocked by the phraseology, the wording. Of course, the English aristocracy and the English bourgeoisie knew exactly what to expect in this area, but they did not want *any trace* of these in the English governmental archives so that their descendants could be proud of their National History and not be ashamed to be an Englishman. As a result, today, books ignore these contracts as they ignore the fact that England was once the world's leading slave nation on the planet after Arabia.

For the sake of national honor, then, "the sums were not entered under their true purpose in the bills sent to Parliament by the War Office⁷²." In spite of these artificial precautions, everyone knew what were the conditions of purchase of these mercenaries. Thus, a Member of Parliament, Lord John Cavendish —a proud descendant of William Cavendish who had once enriched himself by seizing monasteries whose monks had been dispersed or liquidated by King Henry VIII—, strongly criticized the measure of purchase in all points. According to him, "*England would be dishonored in the eyes of the whole of Europe...* [He also] pointed out that a body of 12,000 *aliens* was to be imported into the British Crown, without any control by either the King or Parliament, for the express terms of the purchase contract were "that this body of troops would remain under the command of the [German] general to whom His Most Serene Grandeur [the Landgrave] will have entrusted the command⁷³." At the time Baron Irnham⁷⁴ doubted for his part that the princes of Germany had the right to sign such treaties. Irnham "considered that it was inconsistent with their duties towards the Holy Roman Empire, which must by this be made vile and dishonorable in the eyes of all Europe, as a breeding of men reserved for the support of arbitrary power, whenever those who had the means to do so wanted to use them, even though they

⁷² •«The payments were not entered under their proper heading in the bills sent to Parliament from the War Office.» Kapp, Friedrich, *Der Soldatenhandel Deutscher Fürsten nach Amerika*, Bibliolife, 2009. ISBN-13: 9781103700011, 978- 1103700011.

⁷³ •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chap. III, *The Treaties before Parliament*. p.29.

⁷⁴ •Baron Irnham was one of the titles of Henry Luttrell's son, 2nd Earl of Carhampton, an Anglo-Protestant peer of Catholic Ireland. The Luttrells of Irnham (Lincolnshire) were a family of French origin (Lutrel or Otter in Old French of Normandy) who had followed William the Bastard in 1066 during his conquest of England.

no more sense of Justice or Virtue than those whom they could oppress by means of their money⁷⁵."

And so, from morning till night the Members of the Parliament poured into the hemicycle⁷⁶ beautiful and virtuous words, rather intended to divert attention from their own moral misery, they who always inexorably ended up voting the credits intended to buy "*German slaves*". It was, in the middle of the *Age of the Enlightenment*, a shame worse than slavery itself, since these German peasants were bought to *give* their lives, not their *labor*.

In the negotiations between the British court and the German prince-electors for the acquisition of mercenary regiments to serve against the rebels in America, "it is clear that both sides were in a hurry to come to an agreement. England wanted men, the princes wanted money, and while the latter were anxious to receive as large a subsidy as possible, the first concern of Lord North's Cabinet⁷⁷ was to obtain the greatest number of soldiers in the shortest possible time and for the lowest price.

Friedrich Kapp, the German historian of these transactions, believes that Colonel (later General) William Faucett—English Commissioner and Plenipotentiary for the whole of this competence in the Holy Roman Germanic Empire—, was extravagant in the terms he granted. This does not appear to be the opinion of the Earl of Suffolk, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs under Lord North,

⁷⁵ • Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chap. III, *The Treaties before Parliament*. Lord Irnham was Henry Luttrell, Peer of England in Ireland, illegitimate son of Henry Lawes Luttrell, 2nd Earl of Carhampton.

⁷⁶ • Which was not a hemicycle.

⁷⁷ • Frederick North, 2nd Earl of Guilford was Prime Minister of Great Britain from 1770 to 1782. It was rumoured that he was the uterine brother of King George III.

who seemed to be constantly highly satisfied with his agent⁷⁸.

The English Lords of the Upper House *found these Germans very expensive*. At the sitting of the House of Lords on February 29th, 1776, Lord North made a motion that the purchase Contracts between His Majesty and the Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel, the Duke of Brunswick, and the Hereditary Prince of Hesse-Cassel, be referred to the *Committee for Supply*, for verification. "Lord North was seconded by Mr. Cornwall, who assured the House that he had a better faculty of knowing the best means of negotiating with the German Aristocratic Princes and of procuring more troops than any other man [for the same amount, of course, like a commercial outlet company. He also added] that his situation for many years, gave him this opportunity, and that he was surprised to hear a gentleman, discussing the German connections, call the present terms disadvantageous...

Lord George Germaine cited a large precedent to show that *in every war or rebellion, England had used foreigners to fight her own battles*, and to support her government... The recruits could be obtained on no other terms [of cost]. [Lord Barrington] admitted that the negotiation was not advantageous, but it was the best that could be got out of it⁷⁹".

Finally, Lord Camden, in his frustration, put an end to the palaver of the House of Lords with these words: "Is there a single Lord among you who does not understand very clearly that "all this is *a mere garage-sale* [or sell-off] *of mercenaries, on the one hand to buy soldiers, and to sell*

⁷⁸ ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

⁷⁹ ●Ibidem. Chap. III, *The Treaties before Parliament*, pp. 27 à 29

*human blood on the other; and that the devoted buggers, thus bought to be massacred, are mere mercenaries in the worst sense of the word*⁸⁰?" The contempt of Lord Camden⁸¹ for this cannon fodder was palpable.

On March 5th, 1776, the Duke of Richmond asked the House of Lords that "*a humble petition be presented to His Majesty, to beg him graciously to counter-mandate the march of foreign troops, and to order an immediate suspension of hostilities in America.*" This protest of the Duke of Richmond expressed the concern of the House of Lords that these contracts demonstrated to all of Europe "that Great Britain was incapable, either from want of men or from lack of inclination for military service, to provide a satisfactory number of "*natural born*"⁸² subjects to make this first campaign. It was a melancholy consideration that this refusal of national troops left Britain naked and exposed to the assaults and invasion of powerful neighbors and foreign nations⁸³."

In introducing this protest in the House of Lords, "the Duke of Richmond gave a brief summary of the various contracts [for the supply of German mercenaries] since 1702, with the Landgrave of Hesse, and showed that from time to time successive landgraves had hardened their demands; and still, while they continued to "extort" better

⁸⁰ •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chap. III, *The Treaties before Parliament*. p.35.

⁸¹ •Charles Pratt, from an enriched bourgeois (Huguenot) family, originally from the Pyrenees, became a lawyer, was elected to the House of Commons, bought Camden Castle and its large adjoining estate in Kent. On 17 July 1765 Charles Pratt was knighted as Baron Camden, and thus became a member of the House of Lords. Is it true that contempt for others is a common attitude among upstarts and the nouveau riche?

⁸² •Parliamentary Registers, 1st series, Volume 5, pp. 174-216.

⁸³ •The English text is "natural-born subjects", paraphrase that avoids associating the name of Englishman with "this lack of militaristic virility."

conditions, they never failed to establish their previous extortions as a basis for further negotiations, always taking care to add some new demands to the detriment of Great Britain." Thus, lamented Charles, of such great nobility, Duke of Lennox, proud Duke of Richmond, Earl of March, Baron of Settrington, lord of Torboulton, glorious Peer of England, on the overwhelming fate of the English people who were being extorted of fabulous sums by *these* devilish Electors of the Holy Roman Germanic Empire. He never had the slightest thought for these young German paysans who came *against their will* to shed their blood for him so that young Englishmen would not die! He never asked himself why the young Englishmen accepted the shame of looking like cowards by making others die in their place. Not willing decently wither England, the valiant duke of Richmond contented himself with casting opprobrium on the victims themselves, all these young Germans led to the slaughterhouse:

*"It is a downright, mercenary bargain, for the taking into pay of a certain number of hirelings, who were bought and sold like so many beasts for slaughter"*⁸⁴.

Alderman Bull closed the parliamentary debates on the adoption of these slavery contracts by advising discretion and even silence in disclosing these transactions, which were shameful to the English people. "Let us not make historians be forced to say," he exclaimed, "that these transactions are shameful to the English people, that Russian and German slaves were hired to subdue the sons of Englishmen and Freedom [the revolting Americans],

⁸⁴ • «hireling» is a very derogatory term, as is "beasts". Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

and that, during the reign of a prince of the House of Brunswick, all the most infamous attempts were made⁸⁵."

Alderman Bull distressed himself uselessly on the English honor. English historians knew very well how to forget this stage of English History and this military slavery on a large scale. In any case, in spite of all these patriotic figures of speech, the motion was passed by a large majority of 242 votes to 88.

●

England's Lobbies were so addicted to "enriching wars" and to German mercenaries who enabled them to achieve their lucrative goals, that they indebted their nation heavily and left the enormous deficit to their little people to pay it back. At least they did not ask the people for their blood. The Princes of the Holy Roman Germanic Empire were themselves addicted to the gold of England, which that nation borrowed profusely on the international market, and in particular from the Dutch.

All those Germanic Princes who had, in this time, nothing else to export —no *Deutscher Hochtechnologie* or *Advanced German Technology*, as we say today—, were jostling each other at the gilded counters of Buckingham-on-Thames with the flattery on their lips. Lowell gives us an example in this letter: "The Hereditary Prince of Hesse-Cassel, now Reigning Count of Hesse-Hanau, had written to express to His Majesty of England, his zeal and his attachment to the Best of Kings, and to offer the service of his regiment of 500 men *"all sons of the land which the protection of your Majesty alone insures to me, and all ready to sacrifice with me their life and their blood for*

⁸⁵ ●The King of England was a member of a German dynasty originating in Brunswick.. Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

*your service*⁸⁶." Needless to say, despite his proposal ("*with me*"), the hereditary Prince did not follow his troops to die on the battlefield.

The Prince of Waldeck "wrote with the same insistence in November 1775, offering 600 men; his officers and soldiers, like their prince, asked for nothing more than to sacrifice themselves for His Majesty⁸⁷." One can hardly believe such sycophancy!

●

As for the salaries granted to German mercenaries compared to that of English-born soldiers, the American historian Joseph G. Rosengarten, tells us that "the English garrison of Gibraltar began, salary-wise, at £1.9s. for sergeants, the Hessian troops at £1.14s. The general officers received 59£, while the pay of the Hessian company commander was increased from £13 to £19 by special bonuses. The English second lieutenant received 5£ 2s., the Hessian second lieutenant one shilling more, and in addition each month additional bonuses —for lieutenants, 8 thalers⁸⁸, for captains 32 thalers, for generals 180 thalers. The senior officers kept their Hessian rank with the related pay. The Hessian commander-in-chief received his monthly English pay of 121£ and his Hessian pay of 182£. We can read

⁸⁶ ●Lowell, Edward-Jackson, *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chapter II The Treaties, p.15. «The hereditary prince of Hesse-Cassel, actual reigning count of Hesse-Hanau, had written to express to His Majesty of England his zeal and attachment to the best of kings, and to offer the services of his regiment of five hundred men "all sons of the land which the protection of your Majesty alone insures to me, and all ready to sacrifice with me their life and their blood for your service.»»

⁸⁷ ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chapter II The Treaties, p.15. «The Prince of Waldeck wrote in the same strain in November 1775, offering six hundred men. His officers and soldiers, like their prince, asked nothing better than to find an occasion to sacrifice themselves for His Majesty.»

⁸⁸ ●Thaler = noun that ends up giving the American word dollar.

that Captain Ewald, of the famous yägers, notified his company commanders that their pay would be *one guinea per day in addition to their share of the booty*. For provisions taken in the country where the English troops were serving, there was nothing to pay. The yägers each received the value of 20 English shillings per month as well as his flanking arms, the soldier of the line 12½ shilling⁸⁹." Such was the theory.

The practice was less engaging because the Pay Service and the General Officers were keeping their bad habits as in the time of the Duke of Marlborough. Only the bounties to the princes always arrived safely. Such masses of money could not fail to interest the most empty-handed intermediaries.

For the Princes themselves, England succeeded in letting the payments drag on until peace, and then the German Princes remained on their hunger... at least until the next war, when the London Merchant Lobbies found themselves in need of *cannon fodder* again. The princes and princesses demanded the payment of arrears including annuities. All became the simple merchants they really were.



After having catalogued the various ways of recruitment of the native English soldiers in the cities and villages of Great Britain, we can wonder how were all these poor Germans paysans who had to (involuntarily) fight in their place enrolled in the various states of the Holy Roman Empire, an empire which, as is often repeated, was *holy* in name only, *Roman* in name only and even *empire*

⁸⁹ ●Rosengarten, Joseph G., A defense of the Hessians, The Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography, Philadelphie, 1899. p.16.

in name only since each state had the choice to fight in the enemy army.

In the principality of Hesse-Cassel, "the territory had been divided into districts, each of which had to provide a given number of recruits to a certain regiment. The officers were however ordered to hire for armed service *as many foreigners as possible*, with the aim of sparing their own district, whose inhabitants were always at hand to be recruited in case of necessity... At first, as in England, wasteful, idle, lazy, indolent, dawdlers drunkards, quibblers, unstable, and political troublemakers, all this, unless they were 60 years old and had unacceptable health and stature, were forcibly conscripted. Together with this mixed rabble served the honest peasant lads of Germany, forced from their ploughs ⁹⁰." The recruitment of officers was active throughout the Holy Roman Empire.

Relentless and involuntary witness of this scabrous time, the Saxon poet Johann Gottfried Seume⁹¹ was forcibly incorporated into a Hessian regiment and, despite several desertions, sold to England. He later recounted his captivating adventure. He was born in 1763 into a family of farmers in Saxony-Anhalt. His parents had sacrificed themselves to have him educated. He studied theology at the University of Leipzig, and then, in 1781, he decided to walk to the Sorbonne, *the University of Paris*, to continue

⁹⁰ •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chap.IV, The soldiers, p.37. «.»

⁹¹ •The Saxon poet and writer Johann Gottfried Seume (1763-1810) recounted how he was "recruited" by the Landgrave of Hesse-Kassel to serve in a regiment that this Landgrave sold to England. After months of crossing, he reached Halifax, N.S., in August 1782, where he learned that England had surrendered to France. During his life and according to circumstances, this man was therefore an "English" soldier, theology student, teacher, translator, officer of Russian grenadiers, proofreader, tireless traveler, lyric poet (*Gedichte*; 1801), humanist, playwright (*Miltiades*, 1808). But he is best known for his travelogues.

his studies at a higher level. But on the way he had to go through the territory of Hesse-Cassel, whose landgrave was gathering mercenary regiments to sell them to England, which was always very greedy for German blood because of the wars triggered by its plutocratic pseudo financial democracy of the City, the London Merchant Lobbies⁹².

The young student was then captured by recruiters of the landgrave who were constantly scouring the territory to kidnap peasants of war age, as well as travelers passing through. The poet Johann Gottfried Seume detailed the brutality he had to endure and the cynicism of the mercenary system: "They took me in semi-captivity to the fortress of Ziegenhain, where there were already many comrades of misery from all over the world, who were also destined to leave for America the following spring, after having been examined by the English Fawcett⁹³. I abandoned myself to my fate, trying to make the best of the worst. We were held for a long time in Ziegenhain before we had enough recruits from the countryside, the highways and from the cities."

⁹² • It should be noted that the City of London – already the seat of the Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations, in other words lobbies – is still today, in 2015, a tax haven that violates the clauses of the European treaties officially signed by the British Government, treaties intended to fight against international tax evasion and the cleaning of dirty money. Great Britain allows the existence on its territory of 14 other tax havens including Jersey, the Isle of Man, Gibraltar and many islands of the former Empire

⁹³ • Colonel William Fawcett (1728-1804) was the great Inspector of English Recruitment in these German Electorates, as there were throughout the Holy Roman Empire. On 20 Nov. 1782 he was promoted major-general, and made a knight of the Order of the Bath in 1786 for services rendered to England. Then the tide turned. This was a horror throughout England, not because Fawcett had trafficked cannon fodder, but because he commanded troops during the Flanders Campaigns of 1794-1795, during which he had shown himself to be a poor commander against the French who had humiliated him. He had to resign, but as a consolation was appointed a member of the Privy Council in 1799.. Sir Sidney Lee, Dictionary of National Biography, Macmillan & Co., Leslie Stephen, New York et Londres, 1889. Volume 18, p.261.

The history of this period is well known. At that time no one was safe from kidnappers: everything was good, persuasion, cunning fraud, violence. No one asked if the means justified the horrible end. Foreigners of all stripes were arrested, seized and shipped off, to fight in place of the English people who refused to fight for their Merchant Lobbies. "They tore up my identity paper, the only document that could legitimize me. In desperation, I swallowed my anger; one must continue to live whatever the situation; if so many men survive, You must too."

Crossing the ocean was inviting enough for a young fellow, and "there, things to discover on the other side too. That was what convinced me. During our stay at Ziegenhain, old General Gore needed me to keep the records and treated me with great sympathy. It was a real mish-mash of human souls piled up there: the good and the bad, and those who were alternately one and the other. Among my comrades, there was a rebel from Jena, a ruined merchant from Vienna, a lacemaker from Hanover, a laid-off postal worker, a monk from Würzburg, a bailiff from Meinungen, a sergeant of the Prussian hussars, a dismissed Hessian major," and other individuals of the same ilk.

One can well imagine that "we were not lacking in distractions, and that a simple sketch of the life of these gentlemen would have been a captivating and instructive story. Since they all had the same experience as me, or worse, a great conspiracy to free us was quickly hatched. They all had such confidence in my spirit and in my courage that they entrusted me with the leadership and command with full powers. I thought about it and was not a little willing to take on the worthy role of leading fifteen hundred men to freedom before releasing them honorably," each one to his Destiny.

In addition to this splendid mission, "it was wonderfully exciting to play a trick on Monsieur le Landgrave for his kidnappings, one of which he would remember because it would cost him dearly. When I was determined to act, an old Prussian sergeant came to me in confidence: "*Young man,*" he said. *You will inevitably run to your ruin if you carry out your plan. Such an enterprise rarely ends well. Too many coincidences will cause its failure. Take it from my experience as an old man. I have unfortunately been present at several similar incidents. You seem good and honest and I love you like a father. Take my opinion into consideration. If this case ends well, we won't be the last to benefit from it.*" I weighed the old soldier's words, stifled my petty ambitions, withdrew on the basis of my youth and inexperience, and let events take their own course."

The first gunnery sergeant was right, "the plot was stale and betrayed: a tailor of Göttingen, with the soft voice of a nightingale, offered himself by his perfidy a rank of non-commissioned officer, and, as he had been really appreciated by his superiors, and that his life was now in danger, he obtained freedom and a handful of ducats" by way of *denarii of Judah*. "The memory of these events is still very vivid in my mind. All the preparations for escape were in order. We were in different quarters, in barracks, in the castle and in an old knights' manor. The plan was to go out at midnight, at a signal, to attack the guard-house and seize the weapons, to stab anyone who resisted, to break down the door of the armory. We were then armed with guns, blockade the commander's house and leave the cantonment. In three hours we would have been free." The most of them knew what to do afterwards to get out and support their own freedom.

The day before, "when we lined up by company in the Courtyard of Honor, we found, instead of the usual 20 guards more than 100, flanked by cannons, smoking fuses, and ammunition next to it. Everyone knew what was in store for us. The general came to us a real gallows speech: "There are even more cannons in front of the gate. Do you want to go through it? The adjutants came to read the names of those who were under arrest: Hans, Peter, Michel, Gorge, Kunz. My name was one of the first, because it seemed very unlikely to these gentlemen that the unruly student was not among them. But since no one could pin anything on me, I was quickly released, no doubt because of the number. The trial began. Two were condemned to the gallows, among whom I would infallibly have found myself if the old Prussian sergeant had not enlightened my judgment. A large number of the others were beaten, between 12 and 36 times." This was a brutal butchery and a most creative torture chamber.

Although the condemned to the gallows "were amnestied after having suffered an atrocious fright under the gallows, they did not escape the thirty-six lashes beatings. Then, to obtain the forgiveness of the Prince Landgrave, they had to go to Cassel in chains. At that time, being put in irons for an indefinite time meant *forever and without redemption*. The pardon of the Prince was unknown. More than 30 of us were cruelly tortured in this way, and many, including myself, got away with it, only because too many of the underlings had to be punished. A few were freed from their irons and chains when we set out, for reasons that are easy to guess: indeed the English refused to pay

[the Prince] for a guy who arrived at Cassel with irons⁹⁴; not by humanism of heart, sentiment that bothered them less than a bundle of banknotes, but because this forced recruit necessarily represented a future deserter.

In case of refusal to follow his regiment, the recalcitrant soldiers were shot. Armed recruiting officers escorted the unarmed recruits. When a recruiting officer had captured a man, the instruction was to stay under arms, to walk behind him and not let him get away, to warn him that at the slightest misstep he would be mercilessly shot. The night at the inn, recruits and guards had to undress and give their clothes to the innkeeper [to prevent the recruit from stealing the guard's uniform]. Each recruit was examined by an English Commissionaire in the harbor before the final "embarkation".

German officers were required to be able to speak fluently, read and write French as this was the international language in use, even in coalitions that were enemies of France. That was the case during this war time.

In spite of all these precautions, *desertions* and *insubordinations*⁹⁵ were common because everyone feared service in the army: "In Württemberg, when the alarm was given, the people of the parish had to mobilize immediately to block the roads, paths and bridges for a period of 24 hours, or until the fugitive was captured⁹⁶. If, by chance, he was not recaptured, the village was condemned to provide a replacement boy of the same size than the

⁹⁴ • Seume, Johann Gottfried Seume, "Im Hessischen" ["En Hesse"], tire de Mein Leben [Ma Vie] (1813), in Prosaschriften [Prose Writings], published by W. Kraft, J. Metzler, Cologne, 1974, pp. 112-16.

⁹⁵ • The rebel is a civilian who refuses incorporation; He is not yet a soldier. The deserter is a soldier who runs away from his combat group.

⁹⁶ • Like during the Second World War when prisoners of war escaped from a German concentration camp.

deserter, and [to add to the perversity of Monsieur le Landgrave] the sons of the most important man of the village were in first line for this role of substitute... The citizen who eventually helped a deserter, lost his civil rights and was sentenced to hard labor with flogging⁹⁷. In Hesse-Cassel, a peasant who arrested a deserter received a substantial premium, one ducat, "but if the fugitive passed through a village without being arrested, the villagers were penalized⁹⁸."

In 1738, a Prussian recruiting officer and a Prussian soldier's wife induced a state soldier from Anspach to desert and to join the Prussian army. They were intercepted by the Anspach authorities⁹⁹ in Hesse. The woman, less useful, was hanged, the officer condemned to attend the execution and then imprisoned. The deserter got away with a beating¹⁰⁰. His life brought to Prince Frederick II, landgrave of Hesse-Cassel¹⁰¹, more English gold than his death would have brought. This traffic in human beings raised — and still raises— a deep and understandable disgust. *The American Catholic Encyclopedia* castigates this Crime against Humanity with almost as much vigor as it condemns slavery, even though at the time all religions were diligently closing their eyes to the slavery of Africans

⁹⁷ ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chap. III, *The Treaties before Parliament*. p.41.

⁹⁸ ●*Ibidem*. p.41. «but if the fugitive passed through a village without being arrested, the village was liable to pay for him»

⁹⁹ ●Former name of the city of Ansbach in Germany.

¹⁰⁰ ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessians and the Other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper & Brothers, New York, 1884. Chap. IV, *The soldiers*, p. 42.

¹⁰¹ ●Whose wife was Princess Mary, sister of King George III of England, and daughter of King George II and his wife Caroline, another Princess of Ansbach. Inbreeding was wreaking havoc in these European aristocratic circles whose blood was cleansed only by "misalliances" and bastards..

and American Indians. A.C.E. states: "During the [American] Revolutionary War, 30,000 German soldiers fought under the British boot. They had been sold to England by petty German princes, "man-traffickers and soul-sellers," as they were aptly called by one of these soldiers¹⁰²."

Mirabeau, then a fugitive in Holland, published for his part a pamphlet addressed to the "Hessians and other nations of Germany sold by their princes to England." It is an eloquent indictment against the rapacity of the Princes, and a splendid tribute to the patriotism of the Americans. The genius of Mirabeau could see far into the future to recognize in the North American continent an asylum for the oppressed of all nations. His charges against the landgrave of Hesse-Cassel achieved their goal. Not only did the landgrave tried to buy back the complete edition of the pamphlet, but he launched a retort which had the effect of provoking a riposte, and which established that an aggression against the freedom of nations is the greatest of crimes¹⁰³."

Frederick of Prussia himself, nicknamed *the Great* for his military qualities and probably also for his cynicism, expressed his opinion in a letter to Voltaire (June 18, 1776). He voiced all "his contempt for these *men's sellers Princes*. "If the landgrave had come to my school," he wrote, "he would not have sold his subjects to the English as cattle for the slaughter."

One senses a wonderful moral evolution in this friend of Voltaire, this Prussian of the Enlightenment who did not hesitate to shout to his soldiers whose assault

¹⁰² •The Catholic Encyclopaedia : An International Work of Reference on the Constitution, Doctrine, Discipline, and History of the Catholic Church. vol.6, p.476.

¹⁰³ 1 •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

hesitated under the dense gunfire: "*Hunde! Wollt ihr ewig leben?* Dogs! Do you want to live forever?"

Voltaire himself expressed the greatest contempt for these German princes, who, like the Anglo-Protestant lords of Scotland, gave their teenage Scottish subjects to the London Merchant Lobbies always in search of human blood to enrich themselves even more.

In one of his many letters, Benjamin Franklin wrote to his friend John Winthrop, professor of mathematics and philosophy at Harvard: "The Anspach's recruits have mutinied. They have refused to march. This Prince was forced to have them disarmed and chained, and to lead them himself to the seashore, at the head of his guards. On his return, the populace of all the cities of Holland, through which he passed, booed him publicly, throwing at him the most outrageous epithets. The King of Prussia [Frederick II] found it pleasant to oblige these princes to pay him, for each head of man that they drive through his States, the same toll that they are accustomed to demand for cattle, since they had indeed sold their subjects like sheep. The measure was generally approved; it is a just scourging of these tyrants. I wish you all kinds of prosperity, as well as to my dear country, where I hope to spend my last years and leave my bones¹⁰⁴."

But the most obvious anathema fell thirty years after these events when Napoleon *expelled* and *banished* the Landgrave of Hesse-Cassel. He expressed his feelings of contempt with these words: "The House of Hesse-Cassel has for many years sold its subjects to England. This is

¹⁰⁴ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, translated from the English and annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p.39 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to his friend John Winthrop, professor of American mathematics at Harvard, written in Paris on May 1, 1777

how the Electors have accumulated such great treasures. Today, the basest greed overthrows their House¹⁰⁵."

Humor *à la Charlie Hebdo* —on the most hideous themes— sometimes makes it possible to ridicule ignominy and thus force the criminal to repent of a crime that his *devoid of empathy* soul could not otherwise regret. In his letter from the Count of Schaumbergh to Baron Hohenlohe commander of the German mercenary troops in America, Benjamin Franklin attempts to criticize this shameful slavery:

Rome, February 18th, 1777. "Mister Baron; On my return from Naples, I received in Rome your letter of December 27th of last year. I learned with an inexpressible pleasure the courage which our troops showed at Trenton, and you cannot imagine my joy at hearing that of the 1,950 Hessians engaged in that battle, only 345 survived. There were precisely 1,605 killed, and I cannot commend your prudence enough in sending an exact list of the dead to my Minister in London. This precaution was most necessary, because the report sent to the English Minister gives only 1,455 killed. That would make 483,450 florins instead of 643,500 to which I am likely to be entitled according to our agreement. You will understand the damage that such an error would inflict on my finances, and I have no doubt that you will take the necessary pains to prove that Lord North's list is erroneous and yours correct¹⁰⁶."

And the Count of Schaumbergh continues: "The Court of London object that *a hundred wounded* should not be included in the list, nor paid as killed; but I trust you

¹⁰⁵ •Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great-Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884.

¹⁰⁶ •Smyth, Albert Henry, *The Writings of Benjamin Franklin, collected and edited with a Life and Introduction*, Volume 7, 1777-1779, The MacMillan & Co., Londres, 1906.

not to forget the instructions I gave you when leaving Casel,... not to attempt by human means to recall to life the unfortunate ones whose existence can only be prolonged by the loss of a leg or an arm. It would be a pernicious gift to them and I am sure that they would rather die than live in conditions that would not allow them to be in a position to serve me. By these words, I do not mean that you should murder them; we should be humane, my dear Baron, but you might insinuate to the surgeons that a disabled man is a blot on their profession, and that there is no better solution than to let them all die when they cease to be fit to fight¹⁰⁷."

And he went on imperturbably, "I am about to send you some new recruits. Don't spare them! Remember: Glory before all else! Glory is the real wealth. Nothing degrades the soldier more than the love of money! He must be only concerned by honor and reputation. But his reputation can be acquired only in dangers. A won battle that does not cost the winner any human life is a success without glory, while the defeated one covers himself with glory by perishing with his arms in his hands. Remember the 300 Lacedemonians who defended the pass of Thermopylae? None of them came back! How happy I would be to be able to say the same of my brave Hessians¹⁰⁸! It is true that their king Leonidas, perished with them. But things have changed. And it is henceforth not in the tradition of the

¹⁰⁷ •The Hessian Sale [a text of black humour directed against the German princes and against England, written by Benjamin Franklin], Letter from the Count of Schaumbergh to Baron Hohendorf, commander of the Hessian troops in America. Rome, February 18, 1777. Smyth, Albert Henry, *The Writings of Benjamin Franklin*, collected and edited with a Life and Introduction, Volume 7, 1777-1779, The MacMillan & Co., London, 1906.

¹⁰⁸ •Ibidem, Letter from the Count of Schaumbergh to Baron Hohendorf, commander of the Hessian troops in America. Rome, February 18, 1777. [black humor text directed against German princes and England, written by Benjamin Franklin],

Princes of the Germanic Empire to go to war for the cause which they hold dear. And besides, who would be paid the 30 guineas per head if I did not stay in Europe to receive them? And then, it is also necessary that I be prepared to send recruits to replace the men that you lose. For this good reason I must return to Hesse. It is true that adult men are becoming scarce there, but I will send you boys. Besides, the rarer they are, the more expensive. I am sure that the women and girls have started to plow our land and that they are not doing too badly."

"Well done for sending back to Europe that Dr. Crumerus who was so good at curing dysentery. Do not trouble yourself about a man who is subject to loosening of the gut. This disease makes bad soldiers. A coward will do more damage during an engagement than ten brave men will do any good. It is better for them to pour themselves out in their billets than to fly into battle to tarnish the glory of our arms. Besides, you know that I am paid more for those killed than for those who die of disease and I don't get a penny for deserters!

And the final bouquet in this subtle art of derision: "My trip in Italy, which cost me a fortune, makes it desirable that there be a high mortality among them. You will therefore promise a promotion to all those who expose themselves; you will exhort them to seek glory in the midst of dangers; you will tell Major Maundorff that I do not appreciate at all his economy of the 345 who escaped the Trenton massacre... Meanwhile, I pray God, my dear Baron de Hohendorf, to keep you in his holy and gracious serenity¹⁰⁹".

¹⁰⁹ •The Hessian Sale, Letter from the Count of Schaumbergh to Baron Hohendorf, commander of the Hessian troops in America. Rome, 18 February 1777.

As a diplomat, Franklin thus produced satirical propaganda to ridicule the German princes. "The Landgrave justified his trade as his only source of income. In fact, after the war, with his accumulated profits of \$18,000,000 (dollars), he employed 2,000 men for 14 years to build a Versailles-style palace as a vacation home¹¹⁰.

So deep was the resentment within these German regiments, that many of them turned against England as soon as they had the opportunity. Thus, Anspach's troops, who were part of a captured English garrison; two days after the capitulation, officers and soldiers offered the Duc de Lauzun to serve in his French Legion. M. de Lauzun replied that they [as prisoners of war] belonged to the Americans and that he could not take them into the service of France without the consent of the King of France himself and of the American Continental Congress¹¹¹."

●

If the "street Englishman" has always shown a great aversion to volunteering to fight on battlefields, it must be recognized that the London Merchant Lobbies that rule the national and international politics for their exclusive benefit, have always been careful never to force the English population to come and die *en masse* in enclosed fields, as the French have done since the French Revolution by decreeing the *mobilization en masse*. Never did the English Government find the audacity to vote the General and universal conscription of all citizens in England, whatever their social class.

¹¹⁰ ●Zall, Paul M., Benjamin Franklin's Humor, The University Press of Kentucky, Lexington, 2005. p. 128.

¹¹¹ ●Balch, Thomas, The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-83. NOTE p. 187 de la version française.

Immediately after the German mercenaries, let us place the Scottish Highlanders, so valiant and reckless that even the famous Roman legions gave up trying to defeat them, and, instead, built between occupied England and free Scotland a defensive wall¹¹² which allowed the Romans to be at peace. But consequently, the Highlands were not penetrated by Western civilization until much later. These qualities of the Scots did not fail to strike the spirit of the English, and it is enough to see today Scotland so depopulated to realize that England used and abused the Scottish blood to spare her own.

In Scotland, the military power of the Catholic clan chiefs had been broken in 1745. The Catholic chiefs had been dispossessed and their estates awarded to Anglo-Protestant lords who had expelled all Catholic populations on the coasts where the English army had come to recruit 40 regiments of Scottish Highlanders. Most of the civilian population had been deported to America or elsewhere¹¹³. As a result, when the call to arms went out for the American Revolution, "the best fighting men of Argyll and Inverness enlisted, eagerly welcoming the chance to win a more solid status in America with the sword than their predecessors had won at the point of the sword in the valleys of their native Scotland¹¹⁴," and above all... to feed their families left destitute by deportation.

¹¹² •The Hadrian Wall.

¹¹³ •Battle of Culloden followed by terrible massacres.

¹¹⁴ •Les Highland Clearances (in Scottish Gaelic *Fuadaich nan Gàidheal*, « expulsion of the Gaels ») were forced displacements of the population of the Scottish Highlands in the eighteenth century, which gained momentum from the Catholic Jacobite Rebellion of 1708 and the Disarmament Act of 1716, culminating after the Battle of Culloden (1746). During the French Revolution and the Empire, the French, habitual defenders of the Scots, having their hands tied by the Wars of the Revolution and the Empire, the English took advantage of this to subject the Scots to a real ethnic cleansing.

They massively abandoned the Catholic faith which had brought them so much misfortune at the hands of the Protestant authorities. Among the sons of the former clan leaders who tried to regain the trust of the King and their estates confiscated from their fathers; they even added an extra layer of submission and servility to the delight of the English monarchy. Thanks to the efforts of these "chiefs", "after 1745, the recruitment (for the English Army) was increasingly drawn from Scotland; by the mid-1760s, between 1/5 and 1/3 of the officers came from Scotland¹¹⁵" and almost all the rest from Germany, despite the fact that the population of Scotland was only a tiny fraction" of that of England¹¹⁶.

Throughout the American War, Scotland continued to be the most fertile recruiting ground after Germany. "The present ardor of the Gentlemen of the Highlands," wrote Lord John Murray, "is formidable to employ in His Majesty's service¹¹⁷." And George III wrote to Lord North *that all that could, humanly speaking, be drawn from Scotland, had been taken*: "In truth, with the six Corps to be raised on Scotland, as well as the Manchester regiment and the Liverpool regiment, we shall have 8,000 men, which is the maximum we can possibly raise in addition to the completion of the existing Corps¹¹⁸.

¹¹⁵ ●Chandler, David G., Beckett, Ian Frederick William, *The Oxford Illustrated History of the British Army*, Oxford University Press, Oxford, 1994. p. 103. "After 1745, recruits were increasingly drawn from Scotland; by the mid-1760's between one fifth and one third of officers were from Scotland."

¹¹⁶ The Scottish peasants were no more willing than the German peasants to go to war, but the clan chiefs (who had become Protestants) forced their patriotism to show their royalist zeal and thus regain their estates and titles.

¹¹⁷ ●National Archives of the Kingdom Onei, Collection British War Office. 1:993, Lettre de lord John Murray à lord Barrington du 20 janvier 1776.

¹¹⁸ ●Correspondence of George III with Lord North from 1768 to 1783, By W. Bodham Donne, in two volumes, John Murray, Albemarle Streetm Londres, 1867. Vol. II, p.108. Letter 432 — of 29 Dec 1777 from the King to North.

In comparing with England the multitude of soldiers drawn from Scotland, the King was displeased with the immense "promotion" that had been reserved for that part of the country. His regrets did not concern the injustice of sacrificing the Scots for the benefit of the English people, but rather, they were about the frustration of not having been able to draw more men from England: "The immense number of new Corps [drawn from Edinburgh and Scotland], has given superiority to one part of my kingdom over the rest¹¹⁹." A "superiority" which the Scots would have done without, no doubt!

But if the Scottish Highlanders were good soldiers, they were not willing to abandon what constituted their cultural fibers. Thus, when a regiment in America, decimated by the war, was "drafted" (that is to say, its survivors were transferred to other regiments whose ranks also needed replenishment), the drafting often led to frustrations because usually soldiers like to fight and die in the company of friends." In April 1779, the 83rd Foot Regiment was about to set sail from the Scottish port of Leith¹²⁰ for America, when "orders arrived to supplement its strength with men from the 31st, 42nd and 71st Foot Regiments. The soldiers of the 31st and part of the 42nd obeyed without flinching. The rest, however, stubbornly refused to embark. The soldiers of the 71st were recalcitrant to join the 83rd, as they were going to have to abandon their famous kilt. A detachment of 200 men commanded by (English) Major Sir James Johnstone was dispatched to capture

¹¹⁹ •Ibidem. Letter 440 of January 5th, 1778 from the King to North. «The immense number of new Corps [from Edinburgh] has given predominance to one part of my kingdom in preference to the rest.»

¹²⁰ •Leith, Edinburgh's port at the mouth of the River Water of Leith, was at that time separated from the capital of Scotland. Today it is one of the northern districts of the city.

the mutineers. They found 40 or 50 of them standing near the Leith wharf with their backs to a wall and bayonets fixed. In vain Johnstone lectured them. One of the mutineers who tried to flee was grabbed by the collar by one of Johnstone's men and pulled away from the wall. This set off a stampede. "*Both sides opened fire*"¹²¹, Buccleugh lied in his letter. Thirty-two mutineers were killed or wounded. The rest were overpowered and taken prisoner to Edinburgh Castle¹²²." Reading between the lines, (Both sides opened fire but 32 mutineers were killed out of the 40 or 50 and... *no Englishmen were killed or wounded*), one can imagine the one-sided massacre, and one can guess in Scott Buccleugh, who reported these facts with a bias, a fierce thurifer of the English authorities¹²³.



And in Ireland, how did this happen? Obviously, the figures show us that England was less fertile than Scotland in warlike and manly courage, "while Ireland was about barren, producing recruits not only few in number but of low quality." So spoke Colonel Pattison, commander of the artillery¹²⁴. But when one knows the painful and

¹²¹ ●In fact only the English opened fire on the Scots who suffered heavy losses. Not a single Englishman was killed.

¹²² ●National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office 1:616, Lettre de Buccleugh à Oughton, avril 1779; Lettre d'Oughton à Amherst, 22 avril 1779.

¹²³ ●Henry Scott (1746-1812), 3rd Duke of Buccleugh and 5th Duke of Queensberry, was an Anglo-Scottish aristocrat whose family abandoned the Catholic religion for the sole purpose of retaining their titles and property. For his services, Henry became the first President of the Royal Society of Edinburgh in 1783. He was already a Knight of the Scottish Order of the Thistle in 1767 and he became a Knight of the Order of the Garter in 1794 on condition that he relinquish his title of Knight of the Order of the Thistle, because we do not mix what should not be. He became 5th Duke of Queensberry in 1810. This was the crowning achievement of his career for his total submission to the English crown. He was a cousin and friend of the well-known Scottish writer Sir Walter Scott.

¹²⁴ ●Duncan, Francis (major), History of the Royal Regiment of Artillery., Publishings John Murray, London, 1879. Cf. the opinions expressed by Colonel Pattison, " The

sorrowful history of the Irish people under the English yoke—from the dehumanization of the Irish people by the Test Act, to the ethnic cleansing that was the potato crisis, in the middle of the 19th Century—it is easy to understand that the Irish, who are as combative as the Spanish when they defend a noble cause, could become totally recalcitrant when England appeals to the gift of their lives for its own cause.

Moreover the English authorities who knew very well the character of the Irish, having had to face several dozens of insurrections throughout the centuries—since the only English pope (Adrian IV) had the strange idea of "offering" Ireland to England—so the English preferred not to teach them to fight by iron and fire, unwilling as they were to compete with them on the battlefield. So much so that they also preferred not to repress them themselves. They always sent Scottish regiments to crush Irish revolts¹²⁵; the Celtic brothers slaughtered each other with brotherly hatred while the English royal authorities approved¹²⁶.

Official Letters Of Major General James Pattison commandant of artillery" New York Historical Society, Collection of 1875.

¹²⁵ ●Or, conversely, Irish regiments to suppress Scottish revolts.

¹²⁶ ●For example, the Scottish-born English military historian Major James Grant, Laird de Ballindalloch (1720-1806), *British Battles on Land and Sea*, Cassell Petter & Galpin, London, wrote of the siege of Londonderry a comment which shows how much: "It should be borne in mind that the defenders of Londonderry [English and Scottish], being colonials, were of mixed breeds; they possessed in their veins more stubborn and stubborn blood of the Saxons and Scots. They were therefore very different from the character of the Celts who faced them." Grant's culture has some shortcomings and his desire not to look like the Irish leads him to say enormities. He seems strangely unaware that the Scots were also Celts, like the Irish, Welsh and Bretons. [Laird was a hereditary title of landowner in Scotland. Usually translated into English as lord, the title of laird is not a title of nobility, unlike lord.]

As far as possible, before 1775 "the rule was that Roman Catholics¹²⁷ were excluded from the military workforce, but now [the need for "human materials" was such that Papists] from Connaught and Munster were welcome¹²⁸. General Howe¹²⁹ for his part was strongly opposed to recruiting more Irish Catholics as soldiers to fight in America. His army, "though completed in the spring, was to number between 6 and 7,000 recruits of the *worst kind*, because essentially composed of Irish Catholics, assured of deserting if they were put to hard work, and whose ignorance of arms did not allow them to be trusted in any way as soldiers¹³⁰."

In return, the Irish, and the Celts in general, were in the ranks of the Continental Army, which was fighting for independence. William Henry wrote, "the Virginia troops were made up of militia of mainly Scottish and Irish descent... [and though untrained in military affairs,] they showed the greatest firmness of purpose in battle¹³¹." Yet,

¹²⁷ •The adjective Roman is still used in English-speaking countries to differentiate them from Anglicans, because the latter also call themselves "Catholic", i.e. "universal".

¹²⁸ •Lecky, William Edward Hartpole, and James Albert Woodburn, *The American Revolution*, D. Appleton and Co., New York, 1919. p. 242.

¹²⁹ •The Howe family was one of the Anglo-Protestant families to whom Catholic Ireland had been assigned for services rendered to the King of England. These Anglo-Protestants who dominated Celtic Catholic populations with an extremely colonialist spirit felt nothing but contempt for those who made them live on a very large footing (such as the Nobility vis-à-vis the Third Estate in France, with in addition religious fanaticism). Of the three Howe brothers, two distinguished themselves during the American Revolutionary War. William Howe, 5th Viscount Howe (1729-1814) was an officer in the Army. He became Commander-in-Chief of British forces in North America. His brother Richard was Admiral of the Fleet, 1st Earl Howe (1726-1799). They are the ancestors of Princess Diana, who died in Paris in a traffic accident, as well as, of course, William, called to rule. On Richard's death in 1799, William Howe inherited the title of Earl.

¹³⁰ •British Colonial Office Papers. 5:92, Letter from Howe to Dartmouth, Nov. 26, 1775.

¹³¹ •Henry, William Wirth, Patrick Henry, *Life, Correspondence and Speeches*, Charles Scribner's Sons, New York, 1891. vol.I, p.204

one should not believe that the Irish papists who were reluctant to fight for England, which was tyrannizing them in their Green Erin, would find in the insurgent English Thirteen Colonies a paradise of tolerance and civil rights. For in the American colonies, as throughout the whole of British Empire, the famous English Test Act was in full force, turning Catholics into sub-humans with no civil rights.

American historian John Tracy Ellis wrote that a "general anti-Catholic prejudice prevalent in Jamestown in 1607 was very virulent throughout the English Thirteen Colonies, from Massachusetts to Georgia." All colonial Legislations contained specific prohibitions against Catholics. Ellis noted that a common hatred against Catholics could even unite Anglicans and Puritans despite their mutual interpersonal hatred. Before Independence, most of New England was predominantly Congregationalist¹³² or Anglican; all fundamentally anti-Catholic¹³³." As a result, it can be considered that when the French-speaking Acadians were deported in the mid-eighteenth century to the fiercely discriminatory Thirteen American Colonies, they were only deported there to add further suffering to their misfortunes.

In spite of all the English reluctance to train in the art of war Catholics who might one day turn against them, the

¹³² • Protestant churches in which, each congregation (we would say each parish) is materially and legally independent of neighboring congregations. The Catholic Church in Canada and the United States are now (in 2013) legally splitting into independent dioceses, to prevent the sexual abuse prosecutions so popular today from ruining dioceses that did not participate in these crimes. To pay compensation to victims of abused orphans in Newfoundland, the dioceses of Vancouver were forced to sell a high school..

¹³³ • Ellis, John Tracy. *Documents of American Catholic History*: Bruce Publishing Co., Milwaukee, 1956, 2^e édition. On consultera aussi avec intérêt Richard Middleton, *Colonial American*, Oxford: Blackwell Publishing, Oxford, 2003, p. 260- 1. Et enfin : l'Ive partie de l'article "Penal Laws" dans *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, écrit par Edwin Burton, E. A. D'Alton & Jarvis Kelley, 1911

English authorities solicited the archbishop Primate of Ireland to promote the participation of the Irish people in the defense of Great Britain against the fantasies of independence of the Thirteen Colonies. This request was similar to the demand received by the Catholic authorities in Canada to restrain the French-Canadians facing the threat of American invasion. Under the blackmail of the Canadian Church—as we shall see in Chapter V—the English repealed in Canada the terrible Test Act. In Ireland, the English authorities loosened for a moment the noose tightened without mercy of the Irish nation by allowing, for example, Irish Catholics to buy a piece of their Irish land to live on. But as soon as the United States signed its independence, the noose tightened without mercy. The Canadians were more fortunate because of the presence of the United States that forbade the English authorities from reinstating the degrading Test Act. But the strong-headed French-Canadians who contravened the Church's directives were inexorably excommunicated, that is, —according to the Canon Law of the time— condemned to eternal Hell in case of death. Powerful impact on the credulous minds of the time!

In a letter from an English officer stationed in Ireland to an English officer in Boston, dated in Cork (Ireland) on September 14th, 1775, we read: "Lord Kenmare gives a bounty of 10 shillings and 6 pence to any Irish volunteer who commits himself to fight in the ranks of Major Roche¹³⁴. The Papists of Limerick and the Papists of Cork have pledged to give twice as much to the first 500

¹³⁴ • Sir Boyle Roche, 1st Baronet (1736) was an Anglo-Huguenot soldier and politician from Ireland. A career soldier, he fought in North America in the British Army and then became a member of the colonial House of Commons of Ireland. Born into an old Huguenot family, he was one of the ancestors of the famous Princess Diana, Princess of Wales, first wife of Charles II of England at the very end of the twentieth century.

volunteers. The Papist bishops¹³⁵ were also asked to use their influence over their flock¹³⁶, which they agreed to do on condition that their officers were Papists. *These are blessed times!*¹³⁷ mocked the English officer.

For a thousand reasons, the Irish Catholic clergy —like the Canadian clergy for that matter— could not ward off all defections among their faithful. Such was the resentment against the brutal English occupier that all pretexts were good. Even the good weather paradoxically slowed down recruitment: "The abundant harvests seemed to made the task of the recruiting officers especially difficult from the very beginning of this war. The Dublin [Colonial] Government noted in October 1775, that the farmers had seldom enjoyed so prosperous a year." *Wheat of all kinds*," wrote Lord Harcourt, "and potatoes... potatoes —the staple food of the poor [Catholic] people — are a real drug." With their cabins¹³⁸ teeming with abundance, Irish farmers are in no mood to be tempted by the uniform¹³⁹." The famine alone, and the need to prevent their families from starving, would have likely convinced the Irish to wear that hated *red coat* which had persecuted them since William III of Orange, the very one who had made this color fashionable almost a century earlier.

On the other hand, despite the persecutions and the furious bashing against the papists of the Thirteen

¹³⁵ ● *Popish*, very pejorative adjective.

¹³⁶ ● "Flock", leurs ouailles.

¹³⁷ ● Letter from Major John Brown [a spy sent to Canada] to Governor Trumbull, Crown Point, August 14, 1775, from Peter Force, American Archives, published 1837-1853, Vol. III: Excerpt from a letter from an English officer stationed in Ireland to an English officer in Boston, dated Cork, Ireland, September 14, 1775. pp. 169-170

¹³⁸ One-room cubic huts for 12 to 15 people.

¹³⁹ ● Trevelyan, George Macauley, *English Social History - A Survey of Six Centuries - Chaucer to Queen Victoria*, New York, 1942. II, 32-34. Aussi dans : *Correspondence of Geo. III with Lord North*, I, 265.

Colonies, many poor Catholics of the Green Erin were tempted to emigrate to New England. It could not be worse than Ireland.

Upset by the fate of the Catholics in Ireland, Benjamin Franklin wrote these scathing words to Sir Edward Newenham, one of the great Anglo-Protestant Lords of Ireland, one of those directly responsible for the molestation of this Celtic people: "I received, some time ago, a letter from Belfast in which I am told that there are a large number of Irishmen who would emigrate to America if they could obtain passports... I admire the generous spirit of the Irish who are at last making up their minds to claim some of that Freedom which is the right of Mankind, a right of which they have been deprived for so long by the abominable selfishness of their fellow citizens... It seems that the English have long thought that no one could enjoy this right but themselves. Their lack of Justice has already cost them dearly¹⁴⁰." A hard-line Protestant, this politician (Newenham) was always opposed to the slightest softening in favor of the Irish. This policy effectively cost Ireland to England.



As soon as the American agitation grew, in size and consistency, the English were quick to shower the Iroquois with promises, one more enticing than the other, so that the Iroquois would remain peacefully, arrows in their quivers. However, the Iroquois Confederacy had been

¹⁴⁰ ●Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp.86-87; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Sir Edward Newenham, one of the great Anglo-Protestant lords of Ireland, where his father had been a tax collector in the preceding century; Edward had become a large landowner (including population) in counties Limerick, Cork, Tipperary, Kilkenny and Carlow. This letter was written in Passy (France) on May 27, 1779.

subjected to the same promises during the Seven Years' War and during the so-called *Pontiac War*, and they had seen that Albion's promises were never kept.

One must understand their despair when they saw these innumerable European tribes rapidly invading their hunting grounds. They were as desperately distressed as the Europeans of the XXIst century who see millions of Muslims flooding on their shores. Some good souls, or supposedly good, suffering from *the Seattle Syndrome*¹⁴¹, believe that by welcoming difference with benevolence they will be able to keep their "*way of life*" despite everything. On which side should the Iroquois be on to do the right thing? Well! On the side of those (the English) who made promises because the Americans, who were guessing at the future, did not even bother to make any commitment. They knew that time was working for them, that their people were doubling every 25 years, that they would end up occupying the entire continent, and that the English would eventually become a vassal nation and perhaps even one of the Union's States. And they were not wrong.

In a large assembly at Onondaga (Iroquois Country), in October 1774, the Iroquois Confederacy of Six Nations, blinded by empty promises, took an oath to remain at peace with the English. But this was only a ruse on the part of the English. The dice were loaded.

The promises of the *Quebec Act*, which granted the Indians a huge hunting territory, was only a diplomatic game by which the English momentarily punished the American insurgent. Everyone, except the Indians, knew

¹⁴¹ ● The Seattle Indian chief welcomed the whites with kindness and benevolence. Five years later, his hunting grounds were populated by a million whites and he and his tribe found themselves locked in a reservation. I named this naïve goodwill: *Seattle Syndrome*.

that as soon as the Americans submitted, they would have carte-blanche to colonize the so-called Indian Territories. And if it were the English who lost the war, then God help the poor Indians who only could bet on the wrong horse, not having a good one.

If some tribes remained on good terms with the Americans, the iron force of conviction (through lies) of the English diplomats made that most of the desperate Native Americans believed their hollow promises and opposed the Thirteen Colonies. It is estimated that 13,000 warriors fought on the side of the English. The largest nation, *the Iroquois Confederacy*, indomitable fighters, represented 1,500 of them! The Canadians had experienced their terrible valor before 1700, when New England fur traders sent Iroquois detachments to raid New France and ruin the French furriers.

The two hundred thousand or so "Amerindians who resided east of the great Mississippi River were thus immediately shaken by the American War of Independence¹⁴²." In fact, most of the American Indians east of the Mississippi were affected by the war, and many communities found themselves divided over their role in the conflict¹⁴³. The English tried hard to coax, bamboozle and lure the Indians. They had some difficulty, however, for after the disillusionment of the Seven Years' War, the Indians suspected that the Perfidious Albion would once again deceive them. But what else could they do in their despair at feeling that they had become strangers in the land of their

¹⁴² ●Vincent, Bernard, et Marienstras, Élise, *The Forgotten of the American Revolution: Women, Indians, Blacks, Quakers, Freemasons in the War of Independence*, Presses universitaires de Nancy, Nancy, 1990. p.17

¹⁴³ ●Smoyer, Stanley C. "Indians as Allies in the Intercolonial Wars." *New York History*, 17, 1936. pp. 411.

own ancestors, at home, like the Irish in Ireland in this time?



In this American War of Independence, the French Canadians were essentially fighting on the side of the English. This was troubling after centuries of ruthless warfare against them. Some Indians in Ohio still remembered the surrender of the territory of New France to the English at the end of the Seven Years' War; when a detachment of five English soldiers came to take possession of a French fort that the garrison of twenty men had been ordered to surrender without a fight. The French commander would hand over the keys to the fort and then shake hands with the English officer. *So, what was going on?* These Europeans were behaving sometimes in such a strange way! These 60,000 intrepid French-Canadian, practically abandoned by France, who fought like lions a million and a half Englishmen, now seemed to have eaten lamb! How could they have understood that France was ruled by a half-cas-tor courtesan and a ganache king¹⁴⁴?



Everywhere, to return to this American Revolution, were burning houses and crops, Indian attacks on American villages, massacres, killings that brought them bloody retaliation, but without the English agitators coming to their rescue. Thus, among the first to take the path of war, "the Cherokees... led during all the year 1776 the war against the Americans... The colonists... sustained a siege of several weeks¹⁴⁵." All these attacks against the Thirteen

¹⁴⁴ ● It was of course, at the time, La Pompadour and Louis XV.

¹⁴⁵ ● Vincent, Bernard, et Marienstras, Élise, *The Forgotten of the American Revolution: Women, Indians, Blacks, Quakers, Freemasons in the War of Independence*, Presses universitaires de Nancy, Nancy, 1990. p.31

Colonies had convinced the latter that a violent reaction was necessary and indispensable. So an entire army went to destroy the villages of the insurgent Indians. In 1779, General George Washington sent an army to destroy the Iroquoisie in retaliation. Not supported by the indifferent English forces, the Anglophile chief Joseph Brant and his warriors were forced to emigrate to Canada at the end of the war, to avoid the massacre¹⁴⁶.

The Native American fighters were unique in that they did not rape American women as the British soldiers did during the American War of Independence: "I have never read or heard that any of them raped women, despite their cruelty to captives¹⁴⁷", one witness wrote.

●

Seen from the perspective of *slavery*, the American Revolution showed a completely irrational character by putting on the agenda "the ideas of Liberty, of Equality, but by taking the defense of other pseudo-rights, like that of slave *property*, which was in direct contradiction with the two initial ideals. It provided the southern planter class with the necessary arguments to maintain slavery and also allowed the expansion of this institution, which some had believed to be doomed to a more or less immediate disappearance¹⁴⁸."

●

¹⁴⁶ ● Graymont, Barbara, *The Iroquois in the American Revolution*, Syracuse University Press, Syracuse, New York, 1972.

¹⁴⁷ ● The Princeton Historical Association, *A Brief Narrative of the Ravages of the British and Hessians at Princeton in 1776-77*, Edited by Varnum Lansing Collins, Princeton, N.J., 1906. p.15. Note in passing that, in the eighteenth century, to ravish meant both to rape and to delight (in the sense of enchanting).

¹⁴⁸ ● Vincent, Bernard, et Marienstras, Élise, *The Forgotten of the American Revolution: Women, Indians, Blacks, Quakers, Freemasons in the Revolutionary War*, Presses universitaires de Nancy, Nancy, 1990. p.70 et note 46, p.55.

During the First World War, the white American soldiers who landed in France were incorporated into a single Army¹⁴⁹, while the Black American Volunteer Regiment was given to the French Army to fight under French helmets in the 93rd French Infantry Division¹⁵⁰; this was the famous 369th Régiment d'Infanterie in the French Army. The American General Pershing did not want any black fighting troops in the U.S. Army; only auxiliaries for the General Service¹⁵¹. Of course, the French, bled by the war, enthusiastically took them on as fighting units on the battlefields where the 369th earned the *Croix de Guerre* despite the frown of American authorities, opposed to all honor.

In light of these modern-day excesses, it is easy to imagine that 140 years earlier, during the American

¹⁴⁹ •Certainly under French command as was also the British army. Marshal Foch became Generalissimo of all the Allied armies.

¹⁵⁰ •The American Expeditionary Force in France distributed to the French command of the Army, a secret document called "Secret Information concerning Black American Troops." He stated that "the 15 million Negroes of the United States present a threat of miscegenation [mongrelization means impure or bastardizing miscegenation] unless blacks and whites are kept strictly separate. As this danger does not exist in France, the French people are accustomed to being friendly and tolerant towards blacks. But such behavior deeply offends Americans as an affront to their national beliefs, and raises in them the fear that it might give black Americans intolerable claims to equality — and, moreover, could trigger an adverse reaction on American public opinion [presumably in the field of military aid to France; the threat was patent]... Any intimacy, apart from normal politeness, between French and black American officers must be avoided. The French must not eat with them, shake their hands, visit them, or hold conversations outside of what is required by the military situation. The French people must persuade themselves not to spoil the Negroes [‘spoil = rot, give bad habits]. Americans are outraged to see intimacy between white women and blacks..." The document was read in the National Assembly in France and aroused anger." [Barbeau, Arthur & Florette, Henri, *The Unknown Soldiers; African American Troops in World War I*, Temple University Press, Philadelphia, 1974. pp. 114-115.] Florette was a professor of history and anthropology at West Liberty State University in West Virginia. From that time until the end of the XX^e siècle, the French were called colorblind, that is to say, blind to races [i.e. egalitarian].

¹⁵¹ Digging the trenches, excavating the shelters, cleaning the toilets, setting up the facilities.

Revolution, the situation of black troops was no more en-viable. The use of "manpower of African origin" became an important issue in the early years of the American Revolutionary War. The British...established their strategy to win over the blacks and induce them to take up arms against their owners, promising them freedom¹⁵²" with no intention of keeping their promise, of course. General Sir Henry Clinton, commander-in-chief of all His Majesty's forces in the colonies along the Atlantic Ocean, from Nova Scotia to West Florida inclusive, issued the following Proclamation, in the name of His Majesty:

[English] PROCLAMATION

"Whereas the Enemy has adopted the practice of en-listing negroes among his troops; I hereby notify that any negro taken in arms, or in the performance of any military duty, will be bought for the public service at an established price; the sum will be paid to the one who will have captured it. But I expressly forbid any person to sell or claim any Right on any Negro, owned by a rebel, who may seek refuge in any unit of our [English] army. And I promise to any Negro who shall desert the rebel Standard, all security to follow within these limits, any occupation he may deem suitable. June 30th, 1779, Phillipsburg H.Q., signed H. Clinton¹⁵³."

In fact, the need for soldiers was so great that blacks—slaves or free— participated in the war in the English camp as well as among American insurgents. It is now estimated that "5,000 black Americans served as soldiers in

¹⁵² ●Moore, George H., *Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution*, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.3

¹⁵³ ●Moore, George H., *Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution*, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.23

the so-called Continental Army, while over 20,000 fought for the English¹⁵⁴." During the Siege of Yorktown in 1781, "Baron Closen, an officer in the French regiment of the Royal Deux-Ponts, estimated that about a quarter of the American Army was composed of Blacks¹⁵⁵." And at the battle of Rhode Island on August 29th, 1778, La Fayette described the valor of a black regiment (Colonel Greene) who three times in a row repelled much larger English forces. Blacks in the army had the same rights to plunder as White soldiers¹⁵⁶.

In spite of the planters' concern that their slaves would learn to handle weapons, blacks joined the American Militia. In November 1775, Lord Dunmore¹⁵⁷, governor of Virginia, began to make empty promises by pledging to free all slaves who joined the British army. In 1779, Sir Henry Clinton¹⁵⁸ enacted a similar law for the New York area. Most of the slaves served as planters, mechanics, laborers, or scouts. More than half of them died in the smallpox epidemics that struck the British armies. However, despite the promises of these British governors in the Thirteen Colonies, the majority of the surviving slaves were not freed. Most (white) Americans were told that it was just a bluff.

¹⁵⁴ • Lanning, Michael. *African Americans in the Revolutionary War*. New York: Kensington Publishing, 2000

¹⁵⁵ • Selig, Robert A., *The Revolution's Black Soldiers*

¹⁵⁶ • "Were intitled to the same bounty as the whites." Quarles, Benjamin. *The Negro in the American Revolution*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1961

¹⁵⁷ • John Murray, 4th Earl of Dunmore (1730–1809), usually called Lord Dunmore. Anglo-Protestant lord of Scotland, peer of England, and colonial governor.

¹⁵⁸ • Henry was descended from a Franco-Norman noble family dating back to the Franco-Norman invasion of England in 1066. He was the son of George Clinton, admiral of the fleet. Henry fathered two sons: Sir William Henry Clinton (1769–1846) and Lieutenant-General Sir Henry Clinton. (1771-1829).

Dr. Hopkins, an American writer opposed to slavery, wrote in 1776: "Our oppressors planned to win over the blacks and incite them to take up arms against us by promising them freedom. Of course they did not keep their promise, for it was only a ruse of war to divide the American nation¹⁵⁹." On the side of the insurgent troops, there were many cases of emancipation.

[American] PROCLAMATION

In his November 12th, 1775 declaration, Washington said:

"Neither negroes too young to bear arms, nor men too old to endure the fatigues of military campaign, are to be accepted." Yet, during the last days of the year 1775, when General Washington was notified that free blacks who had served in his army were extremely displeased at being sidelined, and fearing that they might seek to serve in the *Ministerial Army*¹⁶⁰, took the responsibility of deviating from the resolution which concerned them, and left them free to volunteer¹⁶¹. Washington changed his mind, for Lord Dunmore had just proclaimed the freedom of all enlisted men¹⁶², negro or otherwise, on condition that he join His Britannic Majesty's troops. It was the opinion of the Commander-in-Chief that, if Dunmore was not out of action before spring, he would become the most formidable enemy America ever had; his strength would grow like a rolling snowball, and still faster if some expedient could

¹⁵⁹ ●Cité par Moore, George H., dans *Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution*, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.3

¹⁶⁰ ●The Ministerial Army is the Royal English Army, as opposed to the American Continental Army.

¹⁶¹ ●Moore, George H., *Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution*, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.7

¹⁶² ●An "engagé" in New France [in American-English indentured servant] was a man or woman who had to work for free on colonial farms for a number of years in order to reimburse travel expenses from Europe. His status resembled that of the slave.

not be found to convince the slaves and servants of the impotence of his plans¹⁶³."

Curiously, thanks to the cunning of the English, the promises of liberation from those who were fighting for freedom (the Americans) seemed less convincing than the promises of those who only wanted to prevent freedom. The rallying of slaves to the English troops was done by the thousands (more than 10,000 according to some estimates; 20,000 according to others). The English presented themselves as the champions of freedom thanks to the famous *Somerset Affair*¹⁶⁴ dating back to 1772. "Historians have insisted on the naivety of the blacks... or they have shown the skill of the English who knew how to win the confidence of the blacks by concealing their true purpose, which was to use the slaves to weaken the patriot cause... Most studies insist on the unscrupulousness... of the British¹⁶⁵."

Alexander Hamilton advised the President of Congress (John Jay) on March 14th, 1779, to raise two, three or four "battalions of negroes,... by contribution of the proprietors, in proportion to the number they owned... I do not have the slightest doubt that the negroes will make

¹⁶³ ● Moore, George H., *Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution*, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.7

¹⁶⁴ ● A judge (Mansfield) had decreed that in the English metropolitan territory (as had been the case within French territory for a very long time), slaves became free as soon as they set foot on English soil. 14,000 slaves were suddenly free in Britain. "If we are to believe the wanted notices published in the newspapers of the time, many blacks (from the Thirteen Colonies) then tried to flee to England. Vincent, Bernard, and Marienstras, Élise, *The Forgotten of the American Revolution: Women, Indians, Blacks, Quakers, Freemasons in the War of Independence*, Presses universitaires de Nancy, Nancy, 1990. p. 90

¹⁶⁵ ● Vincent, Bernard, and Marienstras, Élise, *The Forgotten of the American Revolution: Women, Indians, Blacks, Quakers, Freemasons in the War of Independence*, Presses universitaires de Nancy, Nancy, 1990. p. 70 et note 46, p. 91. et aussi : Quarles, Benjamin. *The Negro in the American Revolution*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1961. p. 111 à 157.

quite excellent soldiers... It is a maxim with some great military theorist, that, with intelligent officers, soldiers can't hardly be stupid. According to this principle, it is thought that the Russians would make the best soldiers in the world, if they were commanded by officers other than their own. The King of Prussia is among those who support this doctrine... "I have frequently heard that he is opposed to the principle of incorporating negroes; that they are too stupid to make good soldiers. This is so far from appearing to me as a valid objection, that I think their lack of culture (for their natural faculties are as good as ours) coupled with that habit of submission acquired from their life of servitude, will make them capable of becoming good soldiers faster than our white inhabitants... I foresee that this project will have to fight a lot of opposition from racists and private interests. The contempt with which we have been taught to hold black people, makes us imagine a lot of things that are not based on neither reason nor experience, and a reluctance to dispose of such valuable property will provide a thousand arguments to demonstrate the impossibility or the pernicious tendency of an action which requires so many sacrifices. But we must consider that if we do not use them in this function, the enemy will probably do so, and that the best way to thwart the enemy's temptation is to offer them this option ourselves¹⁶⁶."

John Laurens' efforts, who also advocated the formation of black units immediately met with powerful and deep "opposition", nurtured from early childhood among this people, who would not stoop to entrusting the defense

¹⁶⁶ • Il est curieux de constater que ce furent ces mêmes soldats russes, sous commandement russe, qui, en 1812, allaient vaincre la Grande Armée, de même que, en 1942-1945, la Wehrmacht, meilleures armées de leurs époques respectives. Certains commentaires ne valent la peine d'être cités que pour en démontrer l'absurdité.

of their country to servile bands, or to share with a color—with respect to which the idea of inferiority was inseparably connected—the profession of arms and that proximity of conditions which must exist between the regular soldier and the militiaman¹⁶⁷."

All the good friends of the King of England (called *Tories* or *Royalists* or, later, *Loyalists*), instruments of the London Government, "have large plantations and own negroes, so that the Tories would lose their slaves, along with those of the Whigs. Banisay, the South Carolina historian, estimates the loss of Negroes during this war in the thousands. He states: "It has been calculated by good judges that between the years 1775 and 1783, the State of South Carolina lost 25,000 negroes." This was 1/5 of all the slaves in that State at the commencement of the war, and that was equivalent to more than half of the entire white population¹⁶⁸." Many Indian tribes including the Cherokee and Iroquois owned black slaves. Most used Indian slaves from other tribes. POWs became slaves in all American and African societies.

Freedom was granted to every black volunteer who entered the war, as well as compensation to the owner. Thus did the Americans—during the two wars in Iraq and Afghanistan—, with the Hispanics who joined their army: the survivors were given American citizenship.

Many planters (Tory) of English origin gave slaves to free themselves from risking their lives, and especially from fighting against their beloved mother country. They

¹⁶⁷ • Letter from Alexander Hamilton to John Jay, President of Congress, March 14, 1779. Letter quoted by Moore, George H., *Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution*, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.8

¹⁶⁸ • *Ibidem*, p.15. In America Whig was the nickname of the Independentists, and Tory of the anti-independentists.

refused to fight **for**; they were not going to fight **against**. They even promised freedom to these black fighters who were going to be killed in their place. *But when the war was over and all danger had passed, they tried to get them back and unjustly return them to their servitude.* "The infamy of this behavior raised a just indignation, and led to an *Act of Emancipation* of all slaves who had enlisted and faithfully fought for the freedom of Blacks and Whites¹⁶⁹." This act even allowed them to sue for damages against those who had unjustly re-enslaved them. It is true that many lost their lives in this Russian roulette of Justice against the whites.

The Colony of Virginia proposed to incorporate the blacks from the plantations owned by Englishmen. James Madison, then a Member of Congress welcomed the proposal, but made comments that betrayed the extent of his prejudice. The units would be safe only "with white officers and among a large majority of white soldiers. Thus, there could be no conceivable danger¹⁷⁰ from them."

In the wake of the English refugees driven out of the United States, a large influx of black slaves migrated to the colony of Nova Scotia (previously French Acadia, before and after the ethnic cleansing by the English), which was not yet a Canadian province¹⁷¹. Each family brought its chattels, which included its slaves. All these English refugees occupied the territories cleared by the unfortunate French Acadians, themselves expelled by the English¹⁷². It was these black slaves who built the fortifications of

¹⁶⁹ ●Moore, George H., *Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution*, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.22

¹⁷⁰ ●*Ibidem*, p.21

¹⁷¹ ●Called Loyalists in English History.

¹⁷² ●Krauter, J.F., et Davis, M., *Minority Canadians ; Ethnic Groups*, Methuen, Toronto, 1978.

Halifax with the *ashlars* (*cuboid stones* cut in France) from the demolished French fortress of Louisbourg, which was rebuilt in 1970 for the pleasure of tourists.

Other English refugees went to occupy and clear the western part of the province of Quebec, which was eventually amputated to form the province of Ontario. Three thousand black slaves who, under promise of emancipation had fought for England during the American Revolution, were settled in Nova Scotia, where the British government had promised them large land grants (concessions) to clear the forest (of 100 acres and more) as was done for the white Loyalists¹⁷³. But these promises were soon forgotten: 60% of the 3,000 surviving Black Loyalists received nothing at all. And the remaining 40% were only allocated small lots of only one acre¹⁷⁴, half of which were barren, in outlying areas that the Loyalists neglected¹⁷⁵. These Loyalists could choose their own sites and some even went so far as to expel Black families from their laboriously cleared land to take over their land, without any compensation and without their protests being taken into consideration by the colonial authorities

¹⁷³ • *Ibidem*.

¹⁷⁴ • The word arpent comes from the Gaulish *arepenn*, "arrow reach". Prior to the adoption of the metric system, Canada's linear acre was 58.4 m, and the arpent area was 3418.8 m². The arpent of Paris was equivalent to 3,417 m², the common arpent 4,221 m², the arpent of water and forests 5,104 m²

¹⁷⁴ • Lampkin, Lorna, *Visible Minorities in Canada*, dans R.S. Abella (dir.), *Research Studies of the Commission on Equity in Employment, Supply and Service Canada*, Ottawa, 1985. Aussi Krauter, J.F., et Davis, M., *Minority Canadians ; Ethnic Groups*, Methuen, Toronto, 1978. et même Davis, R, *Christian Slaves, Muslim Masters : White Slavery in the Mediterranean, the Barbary Coast, and Italy, 1500-1800*, Palgrave Macmillan Londres, 2003. M., *Minority Canadians ; Ethnic Groups*, Methuen, Toronto, 1978; et même Davis cf.bibliographie.

¹⁷⁵ • Boyko, J., *Last Steps of Freedom*, J. Gordon Shillingford, Toronto, 1998. p.159.

Diplomacy in the American Revolution

| AFRICAN PERSONNEL SERVING IN THE CONTINENTAL ARMY, AUGUST 24 TH , 1778 | | | | |
|--|------------|-----------|------------|------------|
| Brigades | Presents | Sick | On command | Total |
| North Carolina | 42 | 10 | 6 | 58 |
| Woodford | 36 | 3 | 1 | 40 |
| Mühlenburg | 64 | 26 | 8 | 98 |
| Smallwood | 20 | 3 | 1 | 24 |
| 2 ^d Maryland | 43 | 15 | 2 | 60 |
| Wayne | 2 | - | - | 2 |
| 2 ^d Pennsylvania | [33] | [1] | [1] | [35] |
| Clinton | 33 | 2 | 4 | 40 |
| Parsons | 117 | 12 | 19 | 148 |
| Huntington | 56 | 2 | 4 | 62 |
| Nixon | 26 | - | 1 | 27 |
| Patterson | 64 | 13 | 12 | 89 |
| Late Learned | 34 | 4 | 8 | 46 |
| Poor | 16 | 7 | 4 | 27 |
| TOTAL | 586 | 98 | 71 | 755 |
| [signé] Alexander Scammell, Adjutant-General | | | | |
| <i>NOTE: The Black Regiment of Rhode Island is not included here because it was not part of the main army. Neither were other units.</i> | | | | |

To add insult to injury, it was even proposed to use the Black Loyalists to pay the Americans the ransoms of some white English prisoners held in the United States¹⁷⁶. The table¹⁷⁷ above shows the number of Blacks fighting in the main army, the one commanded by General Washington, two months after the battle of Monmouth.

Without any title deeds, the Blacks could not even sell their modest pieces of land¹⁷⁸. It was again a ruse and

¹⁷⁶ ●Walker, J.W., A History of Blacks in Canada, Minister of State Multiculturalism, Ottawa, 1980.

¹⁷⁷ ●Moore, George H., Historical Notes on the Employment of Negroes in the American Army of the Revolution, Charles T. Evans, New York, 1862. p.17

¹⁷⁸ ●Bolaria, B.S. et Li, P.S., Racial Oppression in Canada, Garamond, Toronto, 1998.

these poor people ended up living on public charity, content to look for scarce, underpaid jobs. This did not improve the opinion of the white population of Halifax, who blamed the blacks for their inactivity, without looking for the reason. The victims were thus blamed by the executioners. But isn't this the basis of racism?

Curiously, Kings are often attributed with feelings of generous fairness when they are the first to profit from the perverted social system and the sweat of their subjects. A courageous black man, Thomas Peters, naively thought that the King of England George III should be made aware of this injustice of which some of his subjects were victims. In 1791, he went to London with his noble purpose to report to his King. But George III refused to grant him an audience.

The Sierra Leone Co. decided to ship the freed slaves from Nova Scotia back to Africa, as the Americans were doing in Liberia. 1,200 blacks from Nova Scotia left for Freetown in 1792. But they soon realized that the English company wanted to run Sierra Leone as a commercial enterprise that would pay dividends. Revolts broke out against the over taxation of the inhabitants¹⁷⁹.

Four years later, 550 maroon slaves¹⁸⁰ from Jamaica, in a state of armed insurrection, were also exiled to Nova Scotia for fear that they would join the abolitionist French Republicans. Indeed, on February 4th, 1794, the French Revolutionary Government had abolished slavery in the entire French territories. The British, driven by their pro-slavery lobbies, invaded the French colonies in the West Indies to re-establish slavery before the desire for freedom

¹⁷⁹ ● Wyse, Akintola J.G., *The Krio of Sierra Leone*, Howard University Press, Washington, 1991

¹⁸⁰ ● Deserter slave, usually mixed race, hence the brown color.

could infect their own slaves¹⁸¹. Paradoxically, these 550 slaves were integrated into the British armed forces and had to fight *in favor of* the re-establishing of slavery, against the French Republican forces, who were fighting *against* this restoration.



As far as *American women* were concerned, their struggle was essentially moral. "When hostilities broke out, at Lexington and Concord, in April 1775, a real "militaristic rage" descended upon the country. Women became propagandists, urging men to go to war and shaming them if they tried to avoid the military service¹⁸²." All these females did better than the best recruiting sergeants. The situation resembled that in England during the First or Second World War, where, since conscription was not universal, only the ironical sideways glances and criticisms of neighbors forced men who did not want to participate in hostilities to go to war. The smart ones then donned a uniform of the Local Defense Volunteers, the Home Guards, the Passive Defense, and other national or local organizations that swarmed at the time to cover up the many "dodgers" and "hidden ones". A more accurate picture of actual participation in the war can be obtained from the number of those killed in each country¹⁸³.

¹⁸¹ ● Bonaparte re-established slavery in the French colonies at the end of the same eighteenth century.

¹⁸² ● Vincent, Bernard, et Marienstras, Élise, *The Forgotten of the American Revolution: Women, Indians, Blacks, Quakers, francs-maçons dans la guerre d'indépendance*, Presses universitaires de Nancy, Nancy, 1990. p.70 and note 46, p.110

¹⁸³ ● STATISTICS OF THE FIRST WORLD WAR: France; Population: 39,000,000 including 9,000,000 mobilized or 23.00%; 1,615,800 killed, or 17.95% of those mobilized. (We will add 82,000 killed from the French colonies or 4.82% of all killed.) The losses of metropolitan France accounted for 95.18% of all losses of the French Empire. England; Population: 36,070,492 including 4,003,824 mobilized or 11.1% (some English statistics inflate the figures in order to exceed the number of mobilized in France); 258,676 killed or 6.46% of those mobilized. (An additional 303,720 were killed from

When the struggle dragged on in the Thirteen Colonies, "although the service was of short duration (that of the Militia usually lasted three months and that of the Continental Army rarely exceeded a year). Americans of English descent soon preferred pay a fine rather than perform their military service against England. The rich were thus privileged. As the war dragged on, some local security committees began to recruit both old and young, and even the occasional widow¹⁸⁴. It was felt that the enthusiasm to fight was falling. The "refusal-to-fight" mentality was taking over among the Americans. And as soon as the French Army landed, this feeling of refusal to fight (of the American youth) will be accentuated. We will talk about it again at the appropriate time.

As for the British army, the few English and Scottish regiments were allowed to bring their wives and even their children. This allowed them at least to be properly fed at the Ordinary of the Army. It was an ancient custom in the British Army. Although the phenomenon is known from the American of Independence, the accounts seem to be unpublished. On the other hand, many English soldiers have described the true epics of the brave Scottish, English and Irish women who followed Wellington's army through Portugal and Spain in the midst of the insurrection, during

the English colonies including Canada, Australia and New Zealand mentioned below. Metropolitan England's losses accounted for 32.38% of all British Empire losses.) Scotland; pop.4,748,167 of which 527,000 mobilized or 11.9%; 147,000 killed or 27.89% of the mobilized. Wales; POP 1,200,000 of which 133,200 mobilized or 11.10% ; 40,000 killed, or 30.03 of the mobilized. Ireland; pop.4.300.000 including 210,000 mobilized or 4.88%; 49,400 killed or 23.52% of those mobilized. Canada; pop. 7,200,000 including 620,000 mobilized or 8.60%; 66,940 killed or 10.80% of those mobilized. Australia; pop.4,500,000 including 331,000 mobilized or 7.35%; 61,928 killed or 18.70% of the mobilized. New Zealand; 1,100,000 including 100,000 mobilized or 9%; 18,050 killed or 18% of those mobilized.

¹⁸⁴ ● Vincent, Bernard, et Marienstras, Élise, *Les oubliés de la Révolution américaine : Femmes, Indiens, Noirs, Quakers, francs-maçons dans la guerre d'indépendance*, Presses universitaires de Nancy, Nancy, 1990. p.70 et note 46, p.111

the Wars of the First Empire. This Spanish example gives a clearer idea:

The Englishman Bell¹⁸⁵ told the anecdote of "two soldiers' wives who, during the terrible English retreat to Portugal from Burgos, "stuck to the army like bricks" and sometimes delayed the march of the army because of their indiscipline. Mrs. Biddy Flynn and Betty Wheel were supposed to follow their regiments. Instead, they often blocked the narrow passage followed by the retreating British Army, the beaten path, to such an extent that an exasperated Wellington had to order the slaughter of the women's donkeys if their mistresses refused to follow the directives of the High Command. Accustomed to doing as they pleased "like children who never suffered the slightest consequence", they did not take the threat seriously. Under the leadership of Mrs. Skiddy, a small, short Irish girl, very broad through and through, who rode a donkey irreverently called "*The Queen of Spain*", they tried once again to go ahead of the column. Alas! The provost [military police] had ambushed them and several of their donkeys and mules (including the famous Queen of Spain) were mercilessly slaughtered in order to discourage the indomitable rebellious "wives". Spitting wails and endless curses, these females marched on stubbornly, followed by the devoted Mrs. Skiddy, who was even more eager to gather loot and prepare a good nesting place for her dear man Daniel: "We've got to take a chance if we want to get there before the men, to have the fire an' a dhrop [drop] of

¹⁸⁵ •Bell, Sir George, major-général, *Soldier's Glory*, being *Rough Notes of an Old Soldier*, published by par Brian Stuart, Londres, 1956; page 60. As well as: Castex, Jean-Claude, *Franco-English Battles of the Wars of the First Empire*, Éditions P-O, Vancouver, 2013. pp. 121-122.

tea ready for the poor crather [creature] after their load an' their labour¹⁸⁶.

These undisciplined women were never again worried by the High Command. Adam Wall, in 1808, called military wives in the field "*those eternal clots which block the British army*"¹⁸⁷... As a result, their *children died like flies* in the bad weather, and the mothers were reduced to starvation and rags." What useless courage to be entitled to some pittance! It was all the same curious and even irrational that English men were so difficult to enroll and their women on the contrary so fearless. "Love, love, when you hold us, one can well say: Goodbye prudence!" said Jean de La Fontaine¹⁸⁸.

To return to the American War, recruitment in England was so problematic that the few volunteers were also granted all these prodigious privileges, similar to those of the Mongol warriors of Genghis Khan. As in the time of the Duke of Wellington, crowds of women and children followed the English armies. To this cohort of wives and children were soon joined by the thousands of black women who had escaped from slavery under the English promises to grant freedom to slaves if they left their American master, "nearly 10,000, for Savannah and Charleston alone"¹⁸⁹. The ruin of the American plantations was assured, but emancipation was not. Hannah Fayerweather Wintrop described the courageous women who followed

¹⁸⁶ • "To have the fire an' a dhrop of tay ready for the poor crathers after their load an' their labour."

¹⁸⁷ • Wall, Adam, capitaine, *Diary of the Operations in Spain, under Sir John Moore*, (Proceedings of the Royal Artillery Institution) vol. 14, Woolwich, 1886 3

¹⁸⁸ • In the fable *The Lion in Love*, dedicated to the daughter of Madame de Sévigné, Françoise-Marguerite, described as "The prettiest girl in France", who refused the libidinous pleasures of the lion Louis XIV. The coldness of the beautiful girl was very dangerous.

¹⁸⁹ • Gross, Robert A., *The Minutemen and Their World*, New York, 1976. pp. 147-148.

the defeated British army after the Burgoyne rout: "There were many women, like beasts of burden, bent double under the weight of bushels and baskets whose contents seemed to be pots, pans, various furnishings. The children were looking through pans and other kitchen utensils. Some very young children had been born by the roadside, from these barefoot women, dressed in rags. Such a smell filled the air as they passed by, that I would have feared to be contaminated, if it were not for the fact that they were constantly smoking¹⁹⁰."



In the French army, wives and children were not allowed to follow and encumber the troop in the field¹⁹¹. On the American side, women immediately had a special status. Many helped in the war effort. For example, the "women of Leitchfield, Connecticut, produced 42,000 rounds of ammunition with the lead from the statue of King George III which the *Sons of Liberty* had debunked on the Bowling Green of the City of New York¹⁹²." As the number of women increased, George Washington tried to discourage their presence, but he did not dare to exclude them entirely for fear of upsetting the troops and losing manpower. Yet, "when the Continental Army marched through Philadelphia in 1777, the female elements were ordered to remain in the adjoining streets, so as not to discourage or shock by their disorderly appearance, spectators or unconvinced patriots¹⁹³." Philadelphia was three-quarters Quaker, i.e., rather favorable to England.



¹⁹⁰ ●Ellet, Elizabeth, *Women of the Revolution*, vol.I, New York, 1848. Letter from Hannah Fayerweather Wintrop to Mercy Otis Warren, September 27, 1774.

¹⁹¹ ●Nor the wives of the German mercenaries of the British Army, for that matter.

¹⁹² ●Depauw, Linda Grant, *Founding Mothers, Women in America in the Revolutionary Era*, Boston, 1975, p.178. 5

¹⁹³ ●Vincent, Bernard et Marienstras, Élise, *The Forgotten people of the American Revolution: Women, Indians, Blacks, Quakers, Freemasons in the Revolutionary War*, Presses universitaires, Nancy, 1990. p.117

CHAPTER 4

Leniency and naivety of France towards England. French direct aid.

The somewhat neutral and objective observer, who tries to follow the relationship between France and England through the centuries, and more particularly during this *American Revolution* or *War of Independence*, is forced to note the leniency of the French in the face of the cunning London Merchant Lobbies, accustomed to using armed conflict and sheer force to achieve their commercial goals and thus to settle with cannons the problems of competitiveness with their rivals. Indulgence of France in favor of England through the centuries may seem paradoxical. One can even say that the United States of 1783 were also disappointed in their French ally—who wanted to spare England on its knees—as was Spain, another ally of France, at the end of the War of the Austrian Succession, when the English, unbeknownst to their allies, seeing that they were going to be defeated, secretly approached the French in order to not to suffer the serious setbacks of defeat¹.

Despite this great indulgence towards England, England did not hesitate, at the end of the Seven Years' War (1763), to dismember for its own benefit the French Empire, defeated on the continent by the Prussian army. And Frederick the Great, King of Prussia, played this time the

¹ • Read on this subject the Prolegomena of the Dictionary of the French-English Battles of the War of the Austrian Succession, by J. C. Castex, PO Publishing Vancouver, 2011. p.14. ISBN 978-2-921668-06-4

role of the dupe. So much so that he began to hate the English afterwards that he became aware that he himself had played the role of the "court jester" during the Seven Years' War against France, the role of the "disinterested collaborator" for the sole benefit of England. In this war of American Independence, therefore, Frederick the Great urged the French to wage war against England with these words: "I send you my secret against rabies. It is certain, none of the tests that I have made in my kingdom having failed, it should be used against the Parliament of England, which behaves like a madman in the American Affair... I still hope you will take up the mantle against these dildos, that you will help the Thirteen Colonies to become free and take back the Canada that was so deceptively taken from you. It is the wish of my heart, and it must also be that of politics²."

It is true that the French nation held a grudge against England. This latter country had taken advantage of the fact that, while France was busy defending herself against the powerful Prussia in Europe, England went stealing the badly guarded French colonies. This led to the Treaty of Paris (1763). That's why the French would impose a second Treaty of Paris on the English in 1783, 20 years later, like a boomerang. But the French King and Court did not seem to be accessible to this resentment in its apparent desire to seduce the London Merchant Lobbies rather than subjecting them to his reprisals; like a merchant who puts water in his wine rather than engage in a trade war.

In 1779, the Comte de Vergennes, French Minister of Foreign Affairs, wrote to M. de Montmorin, his

² •Lescure, Mathurin-François-Adolphe de, Unpublished secret Correspondence on Louis XVI, Marie-Antoinette, the Court and the City, from 1777 to 1792, published according to the manuscripts of the Imperial Library of Saint Petersburg, with a preface, notes and an alphabetical index, Henri Plon, Printer, Paris, 1866. Letter from Frederic, to a French Correspondent, from Nov. 3rd, 1777, Volume I, p. 108

ambassador in Spain, that "England is necessary in the balance of Europe³."

In June 1771, the Duc d'Aiguillon had replaced Choiseul at the Foreign Affairs, putting an end to the interim of La Vrillière. French diplomacy had continued to consider, without really believing in it, an improbable alliance between France and England. Should one dream of it?

In this same month of June, the serious events⁴ which were going to occur in Eastern Europe had incited the new minister Aiguillon to reactivate the search for a rapprochement with England. Châtelet, consulted, tried in vain to dissuade him [from this rapprochement]: "Never, you will never convince England to establish an alliance of France with England that it is not in the single goal to deceive us and make us fall in some trap. The interests of the two Crowns are too opposed. The prejudices of rivalry too well established in the minds of all Englishmen. There is not any man in England who could imagine as a possible thing the project of uniting the practical interests of the two nations⁵."

³ •Balance = balance. Bancroft, George, translated and annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, self-published, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. Letter from the Comte de Vergennes to M. de Montmorin, ambassador to Spain), dated September 21, 1779, at Versailles. p. 317

⁴ •Where the partition of Poland was being prepared; where Gustav III had just begun his reign and was going to make a coup d'état.

⁵ •This text is quoted on page 466 of the *Guidelines to Ambassadors*. *Recueil des Instructions donné aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française*, XXV 2 ANGLETERRE, Tome 3 (1698-1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. What could also apply to the twentieth century was communicated by the heir of Châtelet, the Marquis de Chabillan, and quoted by Bertrand de Fraguier in *Le duc d'Aiguillon et l'Angleterre*, in *Revue d'Histoire diplomatique* (*Revue trimestrielle*), Éditions A. Pedone, Paris, 1912. P.606. The argument was that by seizing Poland and particularly Danzig, Prussia might have Access to the Baltic Sea, to create a navy and compete with England at least in the Baltic; just as Prussia did between 1870 and 1914 to create a colonial empire.

In the *Diplomatic Directives* sent to the French ambassador in London, on January 28th, 1773, and written in the name of King Louis XV by the Duc d'Aiguillon, one reads continuously the desire of the French diplomacy to remain in peace with England which is not one of the very great *land powers* in Europe, but which, thanks to its *power of nuisance and sedition* has the capacity to upset the European chessboard. Contemporary English historians, eager to cleanse their country of this aspect of *greedy shopkeeper* always ready to make Europe fall in an hostility trap to take advantage of the war without sending English soldiers on the battlefields, have tried to ennoble the role of England by naming their policy: *The Balance of Powers*. This balance of Powers consisted in coalescing on the European continent a certain number of nations to counterbalance France, to fix the French forces on the European continent, while England split the wave to go and seize the French colonies⁶ always poorly defended.

⁶ • After 1870, the Prussian German Empire becoming a threat to the British Empire, England sided with France which became the glacis of England; but during the First World War, the French General Staff had to put strong pressure on the English Government to decree universal conscription; in vain. On the other hand, at the end of the First World War, the British lobbies (the think tank Milner Group) already found that France derived too much moral power from having defeated Germany and immediately considered an alliance with Germany against France. To this end, the think tank Milner Group was quite opposed to penalizing too severely Germany which had caused the Great War because France had gained too much power by the Final Victory. By defending Germany against France, the English thought that the Germans would thus be "converted to English ideas", i.e. seduced "by the ways of thinking and acting of the English", in other words favorable to an Anglo-German Alliance that would rebuild German power "as a British weapon in the system of Balance of Powers against Bolshevik Russia and against French militarism." The last chapter of this book proposes to set out in a more exhaustive way the turnaround of England which, after having used the force of France to reduce the German threat (World War I) coldly contemplated using German militarism (as it had done for centuries to constitute its Empire as we shall see in Chapter III of this book), to destroy France, without realizing that the refusal to penalize Germany would persuade the Germans that their defeat was only due to a communist betrayal (a stab in the back, as Hitler said), and that it would soon be necessary to engage in a new world war to settle the fate of France. Read Stephen Schuker: *The End of French Predominance in Europe: The Financial Crisis of 1924 and the Adoption of the Dawes Plan*, University of North Carolina Press, Chapel Hill, 1976. Read most: *The*

In the King's Directives, the Count of Guines was told: "The most natural and the most effective way to unite the two powers, in good sentiments concerning the general affairs of Europe, would be to form between these two countries some solid and durable bonds by treaties founded on convenience and justice as much concerning the common interests of the two nations, as well as with regard to the universal good of all the others nations⁷."

Justice! We perceive the immeasurable naivety of the French, some of whose diplomats have not yet understood that the Merchant Lobbies of England—which direct the Destinies of the country with an iron hand under a mask of democracy—, only see France as a rich Marianne whose purse they can steal with impunity, provided that they join forces with European Powers..

Comfortably seated in his Louis XV armchair, the Duc d'Aiguillon imperturbably continues to ramble: "The Count of Guines must never lose sight of this important object of negotiation [a commercial alliance for peace], and his words must have for motive only the desire to leave no doubt as to the real dispositions of the King of France in this respect."

A commercial treaty project is thus thrown on paper at Versailles by Choiseul. The "distant" goal is a defensive alliance of which the consequences would be all the more considerable that they could successively lead to defensive engagements between France, Spain and England, to assure to these three Powers the quiet enjoyment of their

Anglo-American Establishment, by Carroll Quigley, Professor of Foreign Service, Georgetown University, New York, 1981. Chapter 8 (War and Peace 1915-1920), p.196, and footnote 280.

⁷ •Collection of Instructions given to the Ambassadors and Ministers of France from the Treaty of Westphalia to the French Revolution, XXV-2- ANGLETERRE, Volume 3 (1698-1791) with an introduction and notes by Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. p. 471.

possessions and their Colonies... As soon as all this has been put before the eyes of the Ambassador, it will be easy for him to conclude that *His Majesty* [Louis XV] desires nothing more sincerely than to cement and the knots of his union with England and to find in this Crown the same sentiments⁸".

This *economic union*, intended to "*assure to these three Powers the quiet enjoyment of their possessions and of their colonies*", was only a chimerical fantasy for the French, but a nightmare for the English Merchant Lobbies who did **not** dream of sharing the benefits of world trade, but to *erase* the French commercial competition with which England could only compete with the mouth of its Scottish carronades and several allied Nations.



Ultimately, in the Polish problem in Eastern Europe (mentioned previously), the English, who did not see in this action any economic interest, left the French act alone in favor of Poland. They refused not only to intervene militarily jointly with the French, but even to participate in the diplomatic operation. The fate of Poland did not harbor the slightest economic interest for the London Lobbies. The dismemberment of Poland therefore took place in May. The supporter of the French, Gustav III, seized power in Sweden on August 18th. The English feared that France would send a squadron in the Baltic Sea, and in this case they planned to send also a fleet so that the French

⁸ • Done at Versailles on 28 January 1773, Louis (XV), Le Duc d'Aiguillon. From the Recueil des Instructions donné aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française, XXV-2- ANGLETERRE, Tome 3 (1698-1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. p. 472.

would not be the only ones to collect diplomatic laurels, if there were any⁹.

But the mirage of the Franco-British alliance was still breathing, though with a volatile and fleeting breath, at least in the minds of certain utopian French diplomats.

To the Versailles Directives (of 1773, mentioned above) of Union with England, the answer of the Ambassador-Count of Guînes was: "The project of an offensive treaty... could be accepted by England with all the more facility that, on the one hand, this country would meet there all its advantages combined and that, on the other hand, *it would not compromise England in any way, because the impossibility of determining the English nation to make any efforts to support France, if France were attacked,..* It would always be for England's ministers a sufficient pretext to neutrality, and that finally, they could find in this very treaty a pretext of the rupture of the *Family Compact*¹⁰" with Spain.

The Comte de Guînes, who sensed the English better than the average of the courtiers of Versailles, sent on March 23rd, 1773, the following answer: "The Plan of a Treaty of Trade between France and England... whose goal would be to establish between the two Nations the frankness and the freedom that might suit their mutual interests, *would be so manifestly contrary to those of the English Nation*, that one could hardly succeed to conclude it... *France has everything to give to England. The latter has nothing to give back.* England receives from France the greater part of the objects of first necessity, all those which the luxury—that has made the most rapid progress there—,

⁹ ●Recueil des Instructions donné aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française, XXV 2 ANGLETERRE, Tome 3 (1698-1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. p. 467

¹⁰ ●Ibidem. p. 474. The Bourbon Family Compact.

makes indispensable to them, and this country can only put in compensation things of very little value... It is not impossible, however, to bring this Power to some special arrangements¹¹."

Thus, such a treaty would be conceivable only insofar as France alone would have to respect its terms and obligations. One has the impression of consulting the *British Treaty of Accession* to the European Union, in which Britain demanded to enjoy all the benefits of Europe *without agreeing to be constrained in any way*¹².

We know that France ended up intervening in the Thirteen Colonies, at first discreetly, then directly by sending a small expeditionary corps (about 5,000 Infantry) and a fleet to support the Americans. Louis XV finally left (in May 1774) to join his accomplice, La Pompadour, who had died ten years earlier, after sowing misfortune and adversity in France and Canada. The count of Guînes returned in 1775 to London, still ready to realize his famous and irrational Franco-English commercial pact. You might as well ask today the multinational Monsanto to renounce its wish to monopolize the world's cereals.

In virtue of this utopia, there would have been no longer any need to provide aid to the American insurgents who were beginning to ask the French for arms and money. If the English diplomats neglected to pretend to believe in this utopia for the sole purpose of tying the hands of the French in the American War of Independence, it was certainly by an excess of confidence in them;

¹¹ •Ibid. p. 473

¹² •For example, the English tax havens authorized by the London Government in contradiction to European legislation are all the non-independent territories, still attached to the Crown: Anguilla, Montserrat, Bermuda, Cayman Islands, Gibraltar, British Virgin Islands, Bermuda, Guernsey, Jersey, Isle of Man, the territory of the two British naval bases in Cyprus, and even... City of London.

confidence that led them to defeat and to the loss of their Thirteen Colonies.

Vergennes, for his part, the new Minister of Foreign Affairs of the new king, Louis XVI, wanted to intervene or at least was favorable to the Americans. Guïnes thus addressed to him his memorandum which advocated a commercial and political alliance with England, but Vergennes found this project quite chimerical¹³, and, in spite of the support of the Queen Marie-Antoinette in favor of Guïnes, Vergennes had the latter recalled by Louis XVI. Guïnes left London¹⁴ on February 26th, 1776, and was replaced in May by the Marquis de Noailles¹⁵ who was considered very determined by the London Lobbies, "and it is consequently to this determination that England exhausted itself in men and ships, and that this country made treaties of ruinous expenses to carry the scourge of civil war to America¹⁶."

De Noailles' determination came to him from the directives of his superior. In his first letter, upon his arrival, the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, Vergennes, recommended

¹³ •Recueil des Instructions données aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres. p. 477.

¹⁴ •In an attempt to console and compensate him, Louis XVI named him Duke and granted him several huge pensions (10,000 livres + 6000 livres). During the French Revolution, Guïnes emigrated to Germany. He returned to the Consulate, but all his property having been confiscated, he died in poverty in 1806. The expression "in misery" does not, however, imply that he died of hunger; It was an aristocratic misery.

¹⁵ •Emmanuel-Marie-Louis, marquis de Noailles et de Maintenon, grandson of the 1st Marshal de Noailles and son of the second. Born in 1743, he was appointed ambassador to London on 24 May 1776. He was closely linked to Vergennes and Maurepas. It was Noailles who announced to the English the Franco-American Alliance just before leaving London and its embassy in March 1778. He remained in France during the French Revolution and died prosaically in his bed in 1822.

¹⁶ •Directives from Louis Gravier de Vergennes on behalf of Louis XVI. The king of France let it happen. Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the king to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. in Recueil des Instructions donné aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française, XXV 2- ANGLETERRE, Tome 3 (1698-1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. p. 483

to de Noailles to be firm with England, contrary to what Louis XV had been, always conciliatory with the English and always frustrated with their deceit: "The role of complainer is beginning to weary us. It is not the natural tone of France¹⁷."

De Noailles thus left for London with very precise instructions from his Minister of Foreign Affairs. "The object towards which we must preferably turn all our solicitude, is to discover, as much as possible, the views that the Court of London may have, when this country will have in some way ended its quarrel with its colonies; whether it succeeds in subduing them, or it is forced to subscribe to their independence. Will Great Britain recall its troops and quietly withdraw its ships into the ports of Great Britain, or will this country try to compensate its losses at the expense of France and Spain, or will it try to revenge itself on the two Powers for the help they have given to the Insurgents? The solution of this delicate question occupies essentially the King and his Council."

At the same time, De Noailles was ordered to sound out the Court of England to try to discover the intentions of the London Merchant Lobbies. But Vergennes advised him to be wary of appearances and especially warned him about the unreliability of the English in the field of promises: "The policy of the Ministry¹⁸ is so variable, its steps are so inconsistent, its views so uncertain, its existence so precarious¹⁹, that we would be running great risks to rely on the assurances he gives of his peaceful dispositions.

¹⁷ •Ibidem. p. 499

¹⁸ •That is, the British Prime Minister; In fact it is a criticism of the English parliamentary system that changes according to the party in power, party determined by the decisions of the merchant lobbies, according to the economic advantages of the moment..

¹⁹ •"Precarious" because the ministerial party (i.e. in power) could be overthrown by a simple democratic election while the power –theoretically absolute– of the King of France allowed more continuity. English voters had to own property, which left the vast majority of the English people without any democratic power.

Moreover, we know from unfortunate experience that the Council of London [the Merchant Lobbies] knows no other law than that of *convenience*²⁰, that it believes in whatever its interests and ambitions dictate. Even if one dared to count on their good faith, a thousand circumstances may arise which will force the Ministry to yield to the whims and clamors of the English people²¹, and to take, against his will violent resolutions and destructive decisions to the tranquility of Europe. It is easy to understand that with a Power (i.e. a Nation) of this kind, it is not permitted to rest on the faith of treaties. It is of the utmost consequence to *constantly enlighten their actions*²², and that a single moment of reliability can have the most dangerous consequences. *The truth which follows from this is that we must always beware of the affectionate language of the London Court. We must suppose it to have an ever-present desire to do us all the harm that is in its power, and that our Treaties with the British Nation are but truces which this country will break whenever its interest or caprice appears to require it*²³."

As an example of this *violation of treaties* by the English, Vergennes gives the case of the *Newfoundland fisheries*. According to Article 13 of the Treaty of Utrecht, France had reserved for itself the fishery between Cape Bonavista and the Cape St-John. This sector had been

²⁰ • What suits me today will not necessarily suit me tomorrow.

²¹ • Clamour aroused by the famous London magazines belonging to merchant lobbies.

²² • C'est à dire de trouver ses motivations profondes. Le segment mis en italique n'est pas mis en évidence dans le texte original.

²³ • Directives from Louis Gravier de Vergennes on behalf of Louis XVI. The King of France let it happen. Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the king to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. in Recueil des Instructions données aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française, XXV 2 Angleterre, Tome 3 (1698-1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. p. 484-485.

confirmed by Articles 5 and 6 of the *Treaty of Paris* of 1763- which assured at the same time to France the possession of the archipelago of Saint-Pierre-et-Miquelon. But English fishermen came in force to fish in these areas with the support of English warships. This created difficulties for French fishermen. It was obvious that the French aristocracy did not protect its fishermen and merchants against the exactions that the English, little respectful of international treaties, perpetrated against the French citizens.

It was the same in the East Indies. By Article 11 of the *Treaty of Paris* (1763), the King of Great Britain had committed himself to restore to France the various trading posts over which it had full sovereignty at the beginning of 1749. But the powerful *British East India Co.*, the same one that would provoke the American Revolution by imposing its overtaxed tea, was trying to sabotage the French trade. Here too, King Louis XV allowed the situation to become corrupted, considering that merchants were rather contemptible people. The English colonial lands of India belonged entirely to the famous *British East India Company*²⁴, whose powerful lobby was calling the shots in London through the corruption of British elites. And the English government and British Parliament were so much dependent on these lobbies that any constraint was unthinkable.

The leniency —which some would describe as *apathy* and even *indifference*—, of France towards England, finds a positive interpretation in a letter from the Count de

²⁴ ● These territories of the British East India Co. will not really become the property of the British Government until 1857 and the revolt of the sepoys that the Company could no longer control. At the same time, it was the revolt of the Métis-French in western Canada that prompted the British Hudson's Bay Co. to hand over its vast territory to the Canadian government. But the British government then forced the Canadians to buy their own territory for a fabulous sum..

Vergennes to Monsieur de Montmorin, French ambassador to Spain. Admittedly, the letter is dated September 21st, 1779, a later period in the war, but it reveals all the same the deep intentions of the French diplomacy, and will explain at the end of this war, the clemency of France towards the defeated Great Britain: "By occupying ourselves with humiliating [that is to say *defeating*] England, it is important not to give the false impression that our intention is to crush this country because England is necessary in the balance of Europe... We will be less feared, when we are content to cut off our enemy's arms, than when we want to pierce his heart²⁵."

It is certain that to pierce the heart of the *Angleterrians*, as the Alsatian Conrad Gérard called the English (first French ambassador to the United States), it would have been necessary to take advantage of their defeat to expel them definitively from Canada and from all of North America. Beyond the loss of the Thirteen Colonies, this was the greatest fear of the English. The King George III, had been so afraid of it that he had confessed to Lord North in 1778 to never abandon Canada, Nova Scotia and the Floridas: "for it is by these colonies that we are able to keep a certain fear on the abandoned Thirteen Colonies, in which important garrisons must be kept permanently²⁶."

²⁵ ●Bancroft, George, translated and annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, self-published, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. Letter from the Comte de Vergennes to M. de Montmorin, Ambassador to Spain), dated 21 September 1779, at Versailles. p. 317

²⁶ ●Letters of William Lee, Sheriff and Alderman of London, Commercial Agent of the Continental Congress in France, and Minister to the Courts of Vienna and Berlin, 1766-1783, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, Historical Printing Club, Brooklyn NY, 1891. Vol. II, p. 405 note au bas de la page. Lettre du 26 mars 1778 du roi Georges III à lord North. "I will never consent that in any treaty that may be concluded, a single word be mentioned concerning Canada, Nova Scotia, or the Floridas, which are colonies belonging to this country; and the more they are kept unlike the other

This prospect of losing Canada frightened the English very much, and they were ready to fight to the last German to keep Canada. But they knew in their hearts that a lost war could force the defeated to accept the unacceptable, according to the wishes of the victor. As we will see later, the goal of France was not to annihilate England, but to prevent it from becoming a superpower by remaining at the head of its Thirteen Colonies. For, according to the most lucid minds of the time, these thirteen modest colonies, whose population doubled every twenty-five years, would become a titanic giant, a continent that would empty Europe of a good part of its living demographic forces. And these perceptive soothsayers were not mistaken.

The weakened Europe of the 21st century, decimated by two world wars and even more radically by "*mundialism*" or *globalism*. contraception and abortion, can only keep itself afloat by massive immigration from Third World countries. As for England, unrecognizable as it is, it is trying to docilely submit and to the slightest wishes of this American continental-country²⁷.



From the beginning of the troubles, the French people observed the Americans with great interest, for they themselves dreamed of constitutions and perhaps even of... republic —in any case to get rid of the monarchical tyranny that had always plagued this people. "It must be said that freedom was germinating in France in all hearts, and applauding Franklin, representative of republican

colonies the better, for it is by them we are able to keep a certain awe over the abandoned colonies, where good garrisons must be continually kept."

²⁷ •So much so that the American philosopher Noam Chomsky was able to write in 1999 in *On War as a Foreign Policy of the United States*, p. 157: "America is an 'enlightened state' by definition. His watchdog, Britain, too; at least as long as she obeys orders.»

America, was a way of protesting in favor of French liberty²⁸."

The English for their part had once known the Republic²⁹, but it had proved even more tyrannical than their declawed Kings. The Grand Barons of England had succeeded in wresting (in 1215) the *Magna Carta* from King John, for the sole benefit of the aristocracy and not for the entire English people. As the American insurrection developed, the French took a position *for* or *against* the rebels. For some, the ideal of liberty dominated their motivations; others wanted to take revenge on England for what it had done in helping the agitation in French regions (Corsica, the Protestant Huguenot agitation, later the Catholic Chouans in Vendée...).

One of the first Frenchman willing to help the Insurgents was the writer, musician, businessman, poet and inventor Pierre-Augustin Caron de Beaumarchais. In his *Mémoire au Roi seul*, Beaumarchais wrote in 1776: "Sire, when the *State Reason* engages you to extend a beneficent hand to the Americans... Politics demands that Your Majesty take enough precautions so that some help secretly carried in America does not become in Europe, the spark of a conflagration between France and England³⁰."

Beaumarchais founded a commercial company *Hor- talès et Cie* which allowed him to sell weapons to the Insurgents. From the beginning of agitation in the Thirteen Colonies, France had formed a squadron at Brest which

²⁸ ●Laboulaye, Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790) ; p. 51

²⁹ ●From 1649 to 1653 and from 1659 to 1660. It was not called re-publique (public thing) but Commonwealth (common, public or collective riches, which amounts to the same thing). It was even more oppressive than the Monarchy. 117

³⁰ ●Beaumarchais, Pierre-Augustin, *Mémoire Au Roi seul*, February 1776, New York Historical Society, Collections for the year 1886. Col.I, pp. 100-108

was to reach Martinique and Saint-Domingue, which worried the English. In July, a first emissary of the revolted colonists, Sileas Deane arrived in Paris to secretly gather war supplies. Beaumarchais, who in 1775 had become Vergennes' secret agent in London, took charge of the transport and the delivery, thanks to his trading company.

Even before Beaumarchais, French volunteers had begun to enlist in the insurgent army. As early as 1775, the American Archives tell us that two French officers, from Cap-Français of Saint Domingue, offered military aid to the Continental Congress. The Congress "accepted their offers for supplies of powder, arms and other munitions of war³¹." As a result, 15,000 Charlesville muskets Model 1763 were delivered. The American militia lacked engineers, it was Barbue-Dubourg, a friend of the American secret agent posted in Paris, Silas Deane, who found some in France in³² 1776. A whole host of young French noble officers followed La Fayette and joined the American.

At the beginning of the hostilities, the arrival of the French volunteers, brought especially a psychological help. Some of the volunteers were so ambitious that they dreamed of leading the operations of the war. Silas Deane in Paris, anxious not to rebuff or dismiss the French or European nobility for his cause, even had the naivety "to support with the Congress, the ambitions of the princes Ferdinand, duke of Brunswick, or the count of Broglie, or the

³¹ ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. *Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-1783*. p. 69 of the French version. The Springfield Model 1795 musket was the first musket to be produced in the United States under French license. It was a direct copy of the French Charleville Model 1763 musket, which was imported from France in very large numbers during the American War of Independence. The Springfield Model 1812, an almost identical copy of the French Charleville Model 1777 musket, further improved the Model 1795..

³² ●Il s'agit de Gouvion, Portail, La Radière et Laumoy.

marshal of Maillebois³³ who each wanted to serve the United States *on the condition of occupying the position of generalissimo*, that is, to supplant Washington³⁴."

Faced with the arrogance of these aristocrats who believed themselves irreplaceable, young La Fayette confided to George Washington: "I have the right to demand two graces; one is to serve at my own expense, the other is to begin serving as a volunteer." Such noble detachment went straight to the heart of the American general. His modesty was not his least virtue, and when Washington expressed his regret that he had no finer troops to present to a French officer, La Fayette replied, "I am here to learn, not to teach." It was with such words that he was able to seduce Washington³⁵ as well as the American people, so much so that, as a sign of gratitude, 42 cities or counties bear his name today.

La Fayette therefore refused the immediate pay and honors. Moreover, he was a Freemason, as was George Washington. The latter since 1752 and La Fayette since 1778³⁶. Freemasonry was not yet, as it is today, plagued by the mafia-like indignities of organized crime. For all these reasons, Washington (45) immediately took this teenager under his wing and made him obtain from Congress the rank of major-general and the command of a division. Those who know the military milieu can imagine the anger that the American officers under the command of this refined teenager must have felt.

Continental Congress accepted a number of volunteers but paid for the return to Europe of many aristocrats

³³ ●Yves-Marie Desmarests, marquis de Maillebois, héros de la Guerre de Sept Ans

³⁴ ●Selon Stillson et Hughan, *History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders*, 1890. p.226

³⁵ ●Yves-Marie Desmarests, marquis de Maillebois, heroes of the Seven Years' War

³⁶ ●Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 133

whose only talent was ambition. The Americans feared to disoblige the French and to lose French military aid. Unlike La Fayette, Philippe Tronson de Coudray, an artillery officer, succeeded in being appointed major-general of the American army, commander of all the artillery. He even claimed the power to report only to George Washington and to the Congress. He demanded a large salary and a pension; this caused indignation among the population³⁷. His death on September 15th, 1777, reassured everyone in America.

Unlike La Fayette too, Thomas Conway, an Irishman in the French Army, angered the United States by demanding, upon his arrival, to be appointed brigadier-general. Then, having won his case, he asked Congress to make him a major general. Faced with the the outcry, he imprudently wrote to General Horatio Gates³⁸, criticizing George Washington: "Heaven is determined to save your country, for otherwise a weak and ill-advised general should have led it to ruin³⁹." Washington let him know of his bad mood.

●

If the young French nobility generally displayed ideas and opinions favorable to the revolt of the Americans against the sacred person of their sovereign, King Louis XVI, more lucid on the meaning of this republican revolution, refrained from approving it. Reluctantly, he gave aid to the Americans and granted the American privateers the right to take refuge in French ports. And when Franklin

³⁷ ●When we know that, in the year 2000, forty-five million Americans were not even covered by Social Security, we can imagine the arrogance of such a retirement requirement at the end of the eighteenth century.

³⁸ ●Gates – like Conway, for that matter – claimed supreme command of the US Army.

³⁹ ●The Conway-Gates Cabal. Lettre de Washington à Conway, le 9 nov. 1777. George Washington, *The Writings of George Washington*, from the Original Manuscript Source, 1745-1799, John C. Fitzpatrick, Editor, Washington, 1936. 39 vol., t.10, p. 29.

came to settle in Paris, in Passy, he swept away the last resistance in favor of official aid, more out of weakness than conviction. Silas Deane was the Paris agent of the Continental Congress, and he was active in getting money, arms and then volunteers. The King literally gave in to the pressure of public opinion. As he will do it until the guillotine.

Thus, the revolutionary ideas that were sweeping France were fueled for generations among the general public by scandals such as the *Affaire des Poisons*⁴⁰, the public debauchery of Louis XV. This was abundantly and thoughtlessly denounced by the Clergy of France despite the fact that this social group [the Clergy] was profiting from the system, and the *Affaire of the Necklace* under Louis XVI - had deeply penetrated the young men of the Nobility. They seemed to forget that the revolution against a European monarch –be it in America– was totally incompatible with their own privileged status.

The young count de Ségur was one of them. He expressed his thoughts of liberty, which would have been worth a cold cell in the Bastille to any other than the count de Ségur: "Though young, I have already passed through many trials, and I returned from many errors. The arbitrary power weighs me down. Freedom, for which I am going to fight, inspires me with great enthusiasm. And I would like that my country could enjoy the one that is compatible with our monarchy, our position and our morals... United by happy ties with the granddaughter of Chancellor D'Aguesseau, my most desire, by following another career than that of this illustrious magistrate, is to raise myself to the height of his immortal principles of virtue, justice and love for my country... This great magistrate, so devoted to

⁴⁰ •Updated by the secret tribunal called the *Chambre ardente*, whose investigations were suppressed by Louis XIV, but which nevertheless transpired.

his King, carried in the courts, in the legislation and in the administration, all the independence and all the republican virtues. My admiration for such a noble model dissipated in my soul the false attractions of a crazy ambition, of the desire of riches. It makes me resist the whirlwind of the world... Warrior, I leave my family and my homes, all that charms my life, to strictly fulfill the duties of a profession, the noblest of all when one exercises it to support a just cause⁴¹."

Among the aristocrat officers who fought alongside the Americans a very large number of them, to be sure, were "later hostile to any idea of reform in France and they did not even fear to take up arms against their own country to fight the Revolution. They had not foreseen the consequences of their acts, and this contradiction in their conduct is a new proof of the power of the ideas spread in France and under the impulse of which they had taken the arms fifteen years before, in favor of Liberty⁴²." Thus, the duke of Castries, who also fought for the independence of the United States, realized too late that he had unwittingly fought for the French Revolution: "Nothing could open our eyes in this disastrous war. We never saw all of us that it was immoral⁴³." Only the old aristocrats realized this.

As stated above, all the French or foreign volunteers who went to the Thirteen American Colonies were not as disinterested as the young La Fayette, as evidenced by this letter from General George Washington to Governor Morris: "The prodigality with which ranks have been

⁴¹ ●Comte de Ségur, *Mémoires ou Souvenirs et anecdotes*, Tome Premier, Alexis Eymeri, Libraire-Éditeur, Paris, 181824. p. 323 The letter of Louis-Philippe, Count of Ségur was written in the harbour of Brest, aboard LA GLOIRE, on May 19, 1782.

⁴² ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-83*, Philadelphia, 2 vol., 1891-1895. *Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-1783*. p. 214 de la v. fr.

⁴³ ●He snatched from heaven his lightning, from the tyrants their scepter. Franklin is the inventor of the lightning rod.

distributed to foreigners will certainly bring about one of these evils: it will render our military advancement contemptible, or add to our present burdens by encouraging foreigners to fall upon us like torrents, so much so that our national officers will give up military service, not to see unjustly placed above them foreigners who have no other titles than unbridled pride and ambition, and who solicit with such perseverance that it requires an uncommon firmness to resist their pretensions⁴⁴."

The letter was essentially referring to General Conway, the famous Irishman already mentioned, who had made a career as a Major in the French army. Conway had left Paris with the Marquis de La Fayette. He had obtained the rank of general in the American Continental Army. But at that unstable and critical time, the young Continental Congress of the United States was wary of possible treachery by a military leader who was too powerful and too omnipotent a military leader. To limit George Washington's power, Congress appointed a President of the War Office (Gates) with some part of the military powers.

●

Arriving in Paris on December 21st, 1776, the representative of the Thirteen American Colonies, the scholar Benjamin Franklin, stayed in a private mansion in Passy called the *Hôtel de Valentinois* which a Frenchman lent him free of charge. Opportunist merchants sold his portrait with the motto *Eripuit coelo fulmen sceptrumque tyrannis*⁴⁵. The French people were enthusiastic and greeted the advent of Liberty. Even though France did not yet officially recognize the United States, the French government

⁴⁴ ●Governor Morris Memorial, I, Jules Renouard et Cie, Paris, 1842. p.135 et suiv. Letter written in Philadelphia, July 24, 1778.

⁴⁵ ●He snatched from heaven his lightning, from the tyrants their scepter. Franklin is the inventor of the lightning rod.

advanced Beaumarchais a million pounds to buy ammunition and arms, and Louis XVI granted the Commissioners 500,000 livres per quarter⁴⁶.

In front of this enthusiasm of the French population, strongly influenced by the liberal ideas of the *Age of Enlightenment*, Franklin wrote many letters expressing his effervescent optimism in the future. This one was addressed on May 26th, 1779, to the Committee of Foreign Affairs: "It is my firm opinion that, in spite of the considerable losses that the trade of France suffered since the beginning of the hostilities, the Court [of Louis XVI] is still determined to continue the war until it has established our independence, and [it is also my firm opinion] that France's esteem for us has not diminished⁴⁷." Its casualness about trade seemed as deep as that of the French.

Franklin was arriving in an "eery" world, totally new and strange to him. He knew the English court from his time there in a representative capacity on behalf of his Massachusetts Colony, but the contrast between the two nations was palpable. In 1779, the *French Court* had changed little since the 15 year old Seven Years' War, and it seems interesting to read the description that an American historian, Francis Parkman, made at the time of the the Seven Years' War but which can be applied to the court of Versailles to the French Revolution: "The Government (of France) had become a big centralizing machine to administer⁴⁸ the country, with a King at its head —although this King could not or would not govern⁴⁹. All rivalry had

⁴⁶ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, translated from the English and annotated by Édouard Laboulaye of the Institute of France and Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome 11 (1757- 1775, page 27. 122

⁴⁷ •Édouard Laboulaye, p. 81, lettre écrite au Comité des Affaires étrangères, à Passy le 26 mai 1779

⁴⁸ •"one great machine of centralized administration "

⁴⁹ •It was then Louis XV who let his mistress govern.

disappeared between the King and the Nobility, feudalism had been deprived of life and was only a shadow of its former self, deprived of its reason for being, except for its abuses, its caste privileges, its extortions, its pride and vanity, its power to humiliate and oppress.

In England the Aristocrats were a living fraction of the nation, and if they enjoyed any privileges, they paid for them by constant services to the state. In France, they had no political life and were separated from the people by very clear demarcation lines. Warlords became courtiers. Those of them who had the means —and many of those who did not— abandoned their lands to the care of a steward, to gather at Versailles and orbit the Throne like flashy satellites, to be paid in pageantry, in meaningless honors, or in rich sinecures for the power they had lost. They strangled their vassals to support their extravagances that ruined them. Those who remained at home were the object of pity and contempt. "*Far from the presence of Your Majesty*," said one of them, "*we are not only unhappy but ridiculous*," rather like the moon that fades outside the glare of the sun.

The American historian compared Versailles to "a vast and magnificent theater, where everyone was an actor and a spectator at the same time; and where all played their parts to perfection. There, crowds of silken nobility whose ancestors rode caparisoned of iron, tournament after tournament. An image of these times represents an evening in the great hall of the Castle [Versailles], where the King, in front of stacks of gold louis, sits at a large oval gaming table, throwing dice in the midst of princes and princesses, dukes and duchesses, ambassadors, marshals of France, and a multitude of courtiers, like a living bed of tulips, because the men as the women wear bright and varied colors, under frescoes by Le Brun, surrounded by sculpted and

inlaid marble, as well as mirrors that reflect the moving splendors of the scene and the blaze of the crystal-sparkling chandeliers. The pomp, the magnificence and profusion were an obligation and a duty at the Court. *Versailles was an abyss in which all the work of France was engulfed, and which was never filled*⁵⁰.

The reality of the situation at the French Court, confirmed by the descriptions of Benjamin Franklin, seems closer to this description than to the one than that described in a caricatured letter from Horace Walpole, Earl of Orford, to his cousin Henry Seymour Conway⁵¹, written in Paris on July 30th, 1771, which describes the Court of Louis XVI in such a parodic way that it loses its authenticity: "The distress here is incredible, especially at the Court. The King's treasurers⁵² are ruined, his servants starving, and even the angels and archangels cannot get their pensions and salaries, except to sing "*Woe!*" "*Woe!*" "*Woe!*" instead of the *Hosannahs!* Compiègne is abandoned; Williers-Coterets and Chantilly crowded, and Chanteloup even more visited⁵³." The purpose of these systematic denigration and *disinformation* of Walpole was to panic the international Dutch bankers from whom the French were borrowing fabulous sums to give to America. The French also played the role of *guarantor* to allow the

⁵⁰ ●Parkman, Francis, Montcalm and Wolfe, MacMillan & Co., London, 1884. Chapter I, The Combattants. pp. 20-21.

⁵¹ ●Henry Seymour Conway [Seymour is a corruption of the French Saint-Maur], Lieutenant-General of the Ordnance, Crown Secretary in Ireland, Member of Parliament for Thetford, colonel of the 4th Regiment of Dragoons, colonel of the Royal Regiment of Horse Guards. He had been leader of the Chamber of Commons from 1765 to 1768.

⁵² ●Court Money men to translate King's tradesmen: the bursars, the commissioners ...

⁵³ ●Mercy d'Argenteau, Smythe, Lillian C., The Guardian of Marie Antoinette: Letters from the Comtesse de Mercy-Argenteau. Austrian Ambassador to the Court of Versailles, to Marie Therese, Empress of Austria, 1770-1780, Publisher Hutchinson, 1902. Numérisé par l'Université de Californie à Los Angeles. Extraits de cette lettre p. 160. This letter can be found in extenso dans : The Letters of Horace Walpole, Earl of Orford, including numerous Letters now First Published from the Original Manuscripts, 6 col., Richard Bentley, Londres, 1840. Vol.5 p.305 124

Americans to borrow from these same bankers. Dutch bankers were the only ones to profit from this war, as well as the German princes of the Holy Roman Empire who sold their stronger peasants as soldiers to England. The letters of this kind usually appeared in the London Magazines, and financiers were immediately notified. Today, we would call this text *propaganda* or *fake news*.

Still in the field of economic warfare and disinformation, Franklin also cites in his many letters other rumors propagated and spread by the English to discredit the French and the Americans and prevent them from borrowing. "To encourage the loan we are making in Holland, the King [of France] has been good enough to engage, underhand, as our guarantor for the payment of the interest of 3,000,000 French livres... I finally obtained, as I said above, the King's Bond for the payment of the interest of 3,000,000, if we can borrow this sum in Holland or elsewhere. But, although two powerful houses of Amsterdam have undertaken the placement of this loan with hope of success, they have both written to me recently that the great demand for money in Germany and England have made the interest rise higher than our figure, that the success of the English in Georgia and St. Lucia, the destruction of French trade, the alleged divisions of Congress, *strongly magnified by the English minister* [false rumors], and the loans solicited by several of our (American) states, made the capitalists doubt our stability, as well as the power we would have to repay what we were lent, and that we have to wait for a more favorable time to place our loan⁵⁴."

⁵⁴ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Volume II (1775-1790); p.p. 83-84; Letter of May 26, 1779, written in Passy, by B. Franklin, for the Foreign Affairs Committee of France, written in Passy on March 21, 1779.

Until the very end of the war, the United States of America's need for cash was enormous. In June 1782, Franklin wrote to Robert Livingston that Congress was still soliciting fabulous sums of money to cover the operations of the new Republic. The Resolutions of Congress "charge me to apply to France for a loan of twelve millions of *livres* for the present year... I have received a promise of six millions... I hope however that the loan of three millions of florins that Mr. Adams has opened in Holland, and which, it is said, is successful, will be able to make up this deficit."

Little Holland was doing a gold business that would make jealous bankers and usurers of other nations and the war-profiteers of all origins, because everyone borrowed from them, including the English. The business sense of this small nation was so developed⁵⁵ that—it can be stated peremptorily—if it had been lucky enough to be protected from the territorial gluttony of the French by a protective sea, as the English had been, the whole world would speak Dutch. Paradoxically, to supply their loan services, the Dutch had to borrow from all over Europe, including private institutions, like the famous *Bank of England* which was then a *private institution* and will remain so until after the Second World War. France, the United States and England, like fledglings opening their hungry beaks, were trying to gobble up all these mythical amounts to feed their relentless killings.

All these loans, which filled with delectable pleasures the hearts of the international usurers, gave cold

⁵⁵ This small country had the good fortune to host a good part of the Jewish community expelled from Spain and Portugal in 1492 and 1496, respectively, along with the last Muslims. The Muslims had taken refuge in Morocco and had begun to kidnap Europeans in retaliation for selling them as slaves in Muslim countries. The Jews, for their part, had developed the Netherlands and then England into economically powerful countries. The Iberians had to bite their fingers to have thus killed the goose with the golden eggs.

sweats to some responsible citizens of all the nations involved. John Adams, who visited Amsterdam in 1782, wrote: "We shall not get the sum. Cash is not inexhaustible in this country [Holland]. For two or three years the commerce of Holland has been ruined [by England]. France, Spain, England, Russia, Sweden, Denmark, and other powers are here [in Holland]; not to mention the Dutch loans, national, provincial, municipal loans. The lenders are already loaded with burdens beyond their strength, and all the brokers of the Republic [of the United Provinces] are so committed that they cannot lend a ducat beyond what they have promised⁵⁶."

In total, "the French disbursed 1.3 billion livres⁵⁷ to directly support the American budget, not including the sums spent on fighting England elsewhere in the world, outside the Thirteen Colonies⁵⁸" during the same war, in the East Indies, the West Indies, Africa and South America. It would probably be necessary to multiply by two this one billion three hundred million to have an idea of the sacrifices imposed on the French people to help the Americans, apart from the loss of life, of course. The sacrifice was so great for the people of France that some American politicians began to believe that the French had a strategic plan to annex the overextended United States. Indeed, until 1778, France's conduct seemed equivocal as it reflected the contradictions that were rife among the French people: on the one hand, the liberal ideas of the popular masses who dreamed of Liberty, Equality and Fraternity, and on

⁵⁶ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye of the Institute of France and Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790); p. 197. Lettre de John Adams à Franklin du 2 mai 1782 à Amsterdam

⁵⁷ •French livres; in modern currencies, approximately US\$13 billion, or nearly €10 billion.

⁵⁸ •Schiff, Stacy, *A Great Improvisation: Franklin, France, and the Birth of America*, Macmillan, 2006. p.5.

the other, the conservatism of the King and the High Nobility—at least those of a certain age—who could not conceive that subjects could revolt against "the sovereign that God had placed on the throne by His own will," as assured and confirmed with conviction by the complicit Clergy.

As a result, the equivocality of the French gave cold sweats to some of the wiser foreigners: on the one hand, huge loans were granted through the intermediary of French diplomats usually very generous with the money of others, military aid arrived through the Société commerciale of Beaumarchais, volunteers ranged in crowd under the rebel flag, but at the same time the French royal authorities unloaded smuggled ships and refused to pronounce themselves officially in favor of the *rebels to their king*. The French ministers "treat our representatives with all civility, but they are careful not to offend England. They take all means to satisfy England publicly, listen to their complaints, forbid the departure of vessels loaded with cargoes of military equipment, suppress the authorization of *unpaid leave* for officers who wanted to go to America as volunteers, and, in the presence of the British ambassador give strict orders that American catches⁵⁹ should not be sold in France, and, at the same time, all these things are nevertheless done, and they assure us of their good will. Can we find stronger proof of French concealment and American inconsistency than this?" In fact, this was only the first example of "bordelization" that has become so destructive in the 21st century

The same French-born American politician Henry Laurens who was later to become President of the Continental Congress, declared that he eventually feared that

⁵⁹ ●The catches: English ships captured by American privateers.

France would send its fleet to demand Americans to pay their debts⁶⁰. The American government, which did not want to raise taxes on the inhabitants of the colonies, tried to create wealth in several ways: by printing "square dollars"⁶¹, by borrowing from France, by confiscating and selling at public auction the property of the English who refused to cooperate in the struggle for independence, and finally by borrowing fabulous sums from the French and the Dutch. As for the issue in profusion of "square dollars", this "virtual" wealth was prejudicial and even perilous from the economic point of view. Especially since the English authorities —as the Nazis did during the Second World War—, were printing masses of counterfeit money in order to ruin the economy of the Thirteen Colonies, hoping that they would eventually beg (on bended knee to King George III) to forgive them for their absurd attempts at independence when life was so good as British citizens. In occupied cities such as New York and Boston, counterfeit banknotes were distributed free of charge and at will —with great fanfare of advertisement in the local newspapers— to all those who were to travel to the insurgent areas. Thus, every traveler participated, sometimes unconsciously, in the ruin of the American economy by spreading profusely this "*monkey money*". This was pushing cynicism to its extreme limits.



The sale of the property of the "*kollaborators*"⁶² went well. But all those destitute Englishmen who took refuge in Canada received, in compensation for their

⁶⁰ ●Lettre de Henry Laurens à John Lewis Gervais du 5 septembre 1777. Letters of Members of the Continental Congress, édition Edmund C. Burnett, publié par The Carnegie Institution of Washington, Washington DC, 1921. Vol. II, pp. 478- 483.

⁶¹ ●Most banknotes of the American Revolution were square in shape.

⁶² ●To use an anachronistic but very meaningful term.

losses and their lands, in the southern part⁶³ and in the western part of the Province of Quebec, a financial aid, farm equipment, food, tools and seed, thanks to the taxes paid by the French Canadians. All these Tory refugees appear furious at having been expelled and robbed by their compatriots, foaming with rage against the "French" who had helped the Americans to defeat England, and determined to annihilate these French Canadians who were fighting for them and paid overwhelming taxes to compensate them. The dogs were biting the generous hand that gave them food. They asked almost immediately⁶⁴ to cut off the western half of the Province of Quebec to create the English province of Ontario because they refused to be a minority in a province with a French Papist majority; the two nightmarish scarecrows of the English soul subjected for two centuries to a furious anti-Catholic propaganda. Catholics and Protestants behaved as badly among Christians as Sunnis and Shiites do today. As for the third and most important source of revenue that allowed the war to continue —the loans from the French Nation— Henry Laurens would have preferred to borrow from the American population, whose upper stratum was very rich. But the wealthy planters and slave owners among the population of English background, was secretly opposed to independence, without daring to display ostensibly their feelings. They were not entirely willing to pay to equip this American army whose combatants happened to be essentially of Scottish, Irish, and German origin, a lower origin created essentially to give blood for the benefit of the noble ruling class.

⁶³ •Called today Eastern Townships, because they are east of Montreal, divided not according to the French Canadian cadastre but according to the American townships.

⁶⁴ •In 1791, as soon as American independence was consummated, and the hope of a return was vanished..

Most Americans of English descent openly displayed pro-American sentiments to avoid the *feather & tar* ordeal, deportation and confiscation of their property, but the Tories' duplicity did not go so far as to fight or subsidize the maintenance of the insurgent army, if they were not forced to do so. In his long, very long letter of September 5th, 1777, of which we will retain only a few significant flourishes, a letter intended for John Lewis Gervais⁶⁵, Henry Laurens exposed all his fears about the dangers of becoming too indebted to France "because of the interest which accumulates and will have to be paid to a foreign country, which amounts to mortgaging a good part of our soil to the benefit of an astute foreign power. I cannot bring them to understand that if the Loan Certificates were payable in one year instead of three or five, and the interest quarterly or half-yearly, the holders of money [domiciled in the Thirteen Colonies] might be induced to lend more⁶⁶."

Laurens' letter expresses well the fear of some Americans of falling from Charybdis into Scylla, of escaping from the clutches of England to fall into the clutches of France through the accumulation of immense debts, and thus, to have to give in pledge to France a part of their territory: "To be in debt with France... will mortgage our

⁶⁵ • Jean-Louis or John Lewis Gervais (1741–1798) was an American planter from South Carolina. He was a delegate to the Continental Congress in 1782 and 1783. Gervais was born in Germany to French Huguenot parents. He had immigrated to the Thirteen Colonies in 1741. Henry Laurens (1724–1792) was also an American planter and merchant from South Carolina. A descendant of French Huguenots, he became a politician during the War of Independence, was a delegate to the Second Continental Congress, and then became its President. As President, he signed the Articles of Confederation in 1777..

⁶⁶ • Letter from Henry Laurens to John Lewis Gervais, September 5, 1777. Letters of Members of the Continental Congress, Vol.II, pp. 478-483, Edmund C. Burnett edition, Published by The Carnegie Institution of Washington, Washington DC, 1921. "Square dollars": as mentioned above, the first US dollars had a square shape and not a rectangular one.

land... Wisdom thus imposes on us not to call upon France any more in order to obtain funds, except those which are absolutely necessary to us to buy, and pay for the articles to our defensive war. [Wisdom also imposes on us] to restrict our public and private dependencies, to *recommend taxation in each colony*⁶⁷, to make our loans in the interior of the country on the best terms, to the landed estates of our enemies⁶⁸, to sell⁶⁹ abandoned and confiscated property, as well as other property, to encourage the factories⁷⁰... If we do not have enough virtue to save ourselves, well! a too easy access to the Treasury of France will only accelerate our ruin⁷¹... I no longer wish to issue paper money, I wish to avoid it⁷²."

Unenlightened about the political mores of French Governments which still persists in the twenty-first century, the Americans could not understand how France would squander with such great irresponsibility the money laboriously earned with the sweat of its people, without demanding the slightest guarantee. Find the trap!

How can a citizen of a country exclusively ruled by economic and financial lobbies, which —in a very usual way— seeks its own interest in all its actions, could understand the actions of a government almost totally detached from the search for economic interests, which acted only on the spur of the moment, and whose aristocratic ruling class ostensibly despised anything mercantile.

Although of Huguenot origin, Laurens did not understand. The apparent disinterestedness of the French

⁶⁷ ● This segment in italics was not highlighted in the original text.

⁶⁸ ● That is to say, to expel the English royalists.

⁶⁹ ● At auction or public auction.

⁷⁰ ● Letter from Henry Laurens to John Lewis Gervais dated September 5 1777. Letters of Members of the Continental Congress, Vol.II, pp. 478-483, édition Edmund C. Burnett, Publié par The Carnegie Institution of Washington, Washington DC, 1921.

⁷¹ ● Ibidem. pp. 478-483.

⁷² ● Ibid. pp. 478-483

could conceal a trap: "France does not ask us any guarantee, it offers its loan *without any security* and when we will be her debtor, it will be her interest to help us... It is coherent for the interests of France to support us when we are in debt to her; it will be equally consistent according to its interest and its habits also, to send some ships of war, battalions and officers in one or more of our ports to protect us from the insults of our enemies and at the same time to collect the interest income generated by the loans⁷³."

Such behavior seemed very curious indeed because French Aid represented an almost hemorrhagic outpouring. It was not limited to financial aid. France was also behind the creation of the US Navy. The Scotsman John Paul Jones "gave such a high opinion of himself to the French Minister of the Navy that the latter wished to employ him by giving him the command of a particular enterprise. Captain Jones is at the moment in command of a fifty-gun ship and some frigates, *armed at the expense of France*, and flying the American flag. It is said that he will set sail about the 1st of June, 1779⁷⁴." Many of the members of John Paul Jones' crews came from the hundreds of *American* prisoners, forced labor in the coal mines of Nova Scotia, whom the British had finally agreed to exchange for English prisoners; after a thousand negotiations and numerous successive refusals on the part of the London authorities.



⁷³ • Letter from Henry Laurens to John Lewis Gervais dated September 5th, 1777. Letters of Members of the Continental Congress, édition Edmund C. Burnett, Publié par The Carnegie Institution of Washington, Washington DC, 1921. Vol. II, pp. 478- 483

⁷⁴ • Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye of the Institute of France and Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790); p. 82 Lettre de B. Franklin à David Hartley, écrite à Passy le 21 mars 1779.

The British defeat at Saratoga committed Vergennes to accept to open direct hostilities with England. This was the *apparent* cause or rather *the pretext*⁷⁵. The Frenchman signed an official treaty of aid with Franklin on February 6th, 1778. Frightened after Saratoga, the English legislated to abolish taxes that the American colonists refused to pay anyway. It was at this time that France notified London of the Franco-American Treaty. On March 13th in London, Weymouth gave an audience to de Noailles. The Englishman received him with tears streaming down his face. Stormont immediately left the British embassy in Paris, and de Noailles, "extremely happy," left London without taking leave. It was the open war.



⁷⁵ ●We will explain later why this was only a pretext.

CHAPTER 5

Role of Canada and Canadians. The Test Act imposed everywhere in the Empire, including Canada. Quebec Act. Participation of the French-Canadians on both sides. Conquest of Canada either by France or by the Americans? American Proclamations in regard to the Canadians.

The Canadians, newly subjects of His British Majesty, played a very important role during this war of independence of the Thirteen Colonies. The casualness¹ of Louis XV in abandoning the brave Canadian people who had fought so well for his mother-country, for a century and a half, had been so unworthy of a great Nation, and so inconceivable in the mind of a citizen of His Majesty the King George, that some Englishmen saw in it a Machiavellian intention. Thus, the special envoy of the English government to Franklin, Mr. Richard Oswald², a direct representative of the London Merchant Lobbies, maintained "*that the cession of Canada to the English, at the time of the Peace of 1763, had been a political act on the part of France*³, because it had weakened the ties between

¹ •Casualness by the tiny number of French regiments – a few meagre battalions totaling approximately 3000 soldiers from more or less *disciplinary regiments* – sent to defend an empire as large as Europe.

² •Richard Oswald was a wealthy English slave trader born in Scotland by the chance of history. The London Lobbies had him appointed Commercial Adviser to the British Government on the independence of the Thirteen Colonies and Negotiator in Paris in 1782..

³ •The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &.&. , comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating

England and her Thirteen Colonies, and that he, Oswald, had not hesitated to draw from it the prediction of the present Revolution [American]." In other words, by removing the Canadian Sword of Damocles, the ever alarming danger of the Canadians perched on the head of the Thirteen Colonies *like a vulture on a tree*, the French had demobilized the Americans and had given them the possibility to turn against England. Until then, this French menace channeled and attracted the fear and hostility of the Thirteen Colonies, and urged their American population to remain well huddled under the protective wing of England.

From now on, the disappearance of this big worry uncovered many little annoyances. The Americans realized that the anti-economic-development laws that prevailed in the British Empire in order to reserve the lion's share for the England homeland, hindered the development of manufacturing and the improvement of their prosperity.

This unstable strategic situation had been foreseen since the beginning of the Seven Years' War by one of the key players of that period, the Marquis de Montcalm, who, from 1757 to 1759, the year of his death on the Plains of Abraham, seems to have written to his cousin M. de Ber-ryer, some letters which question the insane motivations of the *English who did not realize that the fall of New France would inevitably lead their Thirteen American Colonies into a spiral of independence from England*. According to Montcalm, "Canada is the safeguard of these

the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, Londres, 1817. Vol.II, p. 181 et suiv. Lettre de B. Franklin à lord Shelburne, written in Passy on April 18, 1782.

[Thirteen-] Colonies. Why does the English minister seek to conquer it? This country once subjected to British rule, the other English colonies will become accustomed to no longer regard the French as their enemies⁴."

The American historian Thomas Balch, for his part, believes that this prediction was a French minister Choiseul's maneuver, intended to thwart the English government in its desire for conquest. This could have been the case had Montcalm's divinatory letters been *published earlier and proclaimed in diplomatic circles*, but this was not the case. The irrepressible desire of the English Merchant Lobbies to seize, bulimically appropriate and monopolize went far beyond these letters.

In any case, the prophecy was fully realized.



What was, then, the general situation of this French people of America, who had become, through the negligence of Louis XV, unloved subjects of the King of England. The *Treaty of Paris of 1763* left the French Canadians as disarmed in the hands of the English Colonial Government as the harkis delivered by General de Gaulle to a mob of fanatical torturers. Paradoxically, *Article IV* of the Treaty of Paris of 1763, which claimed to guarantee religious freedom in favor of the French-Canadians⁵. This was very promising, but the English negotiators slipped in a codicil at the end which seemed insignificant and which moreover passed unnoticed in front of the myopic eyes of

⁴ •Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. *The French in America during the War of Independence -1777-1783*. p. 49 of the French version.

⁵ •Dictionary of Franco-English Land Battles of the Seven Years' War, by Jean-Claude Castex, Les Presses de l'Université Laval, Québec, 2006. p. 577

the French diplomats no doubt won over by the sympathy of the English negotiators; it was "*as long as the laws of Great Britain permit.*" But they did not, as we shall see."

Shortly after the signing of this famous treaty of Paris (of 1763), the English François (Francis) Masérès⁶, born in London, was appointed on March 4th, 1766, Attorney General of the new British province of Quebec, the former French Canada. Masérès held this position from 1766 until the fall of 1769. In February 1769, he submitted to Governor Carleton a report on the reform of the law in the province. In an essay published in London in 1770, *he recommended that the colonies be represented in the House of Commons in London.* But this was out of the question, unconstitutional, for the *Test Act* in force in all the territories dominated by the English, reduced the (Roman) Catholics to the state of sub-humans, a bit like the Cagots in ancient Gascony. The Catholics were therefore not eligible, and it would have been as illegal to elect them as to allow them to vote.

The situation of the French in Canada was tragic after being delivered to a vindictive England by an ungrateful and indifferent Louis XV. English Catholics had been oppressed for centuries in the British Isles by their Anglican, Puritan and other compatriots. But the insurrection of the Thirteen American Colonies caused England to put its religious intolerance Law on hold in Canada. The English wanted to dissuade the French Canadians from siding with

⁶ •The name of this French Huguenot eventually became a common name: the Masères were French Protestants who left France following the revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685. Masères, François (Francis), A Collection of Several Commissions, and Other Public Instruments, Proceeding from His Majesty's Royal Authority, and Other Papers, Relating to the State of the Province in Quebec in North America, Since the Conquest of it by the British Arms in 1760. Printed by W. and J. Richardson, Salisbury Court, Fleet Street, London, 1772. pp. 103-112. This document is digitalized online.

the American Insurgents. Thanks to this fear of the English Government to see the Canadians side with the rebellious Americans, we Canadians were able, after a few brief years of religious persecution, to quickly get rid of the Test Act. So, we did not have to suffer these persecutions intended to transform the Catholic population into humble subhuman.

The military regime of Canada, started immediately after the occupation of the country by England (1759). Until the total cession in 1763), French Canadians were bound only by the *Oath of Loyalty and Allegiance* to the King of England. From 1764 onwards. It was required *in violation of the Treaty of Paris*, which was supposed to give freedom of worship⁷.

The *Test Act Oath*; was active in England and in all the colonies, as well as in Ireland, Scotland, Wales, Cornwall... This *Oath* (Test Act) included an *Abjuration* of the descendants of James II, Catholic king of England, an *Abjuration of Transubstantiation*⁸ and an *Abjuration of the cult of the saints and of the Virgin*.

Not a single Canadian consented to take the latter oaths, and the result was that the Catholic Canadians—that is, the absolute totality of the population—found themselves excluded, in principle, from *any Government office*. Since not all the English in the country were competent to

⁷ •Article 4 of the Treaty of Paris that ended the Seven Years' War read: "Accordingly, [His Britannic Majesty] shall give the most precise and effective orders that his new Roman Catholic subjects may profess the worship of their religion according to the rite of the Roman Church, as permit by the laws of Great Britain." But the laws of Great Britain did not allow it, and French diplomats probably knew it. Quoted by the Dictionnaire des batailles terrestres franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Sept Ans, by JC Castex, Les Presses de l'Université Laval, Québec, 2006. p. 577

⁸ •The transformation of wine and bread, during the Catholic Mass, into the blood and flesh of Christ.

fill the Civil Service, Governors Murray and Carleton—less intolerant than their London chiefs⁹— had to call in a few Canadians without requiring them to submit to the *Oath of the Test*.

We give here the Oath of Loyalty and the Oath of the Test, excluding the abjuration of James II.

I. Oath of Ligence [of allegiance] or *Fidelity*: "I, *Firmin Tremblay*, do promise & swear sincerely that I will be faithful and keep a true ligence [allegiance] to his Majesty King George. Thus God help me."

II. Oath of Abjuration of the Powers of the Pope.

"I, *Pierre Dupont*, swear that I abhor from the bottom of my heart and that I detest and abjure, as being impious and full of heresy, this awful doctrine and maxim that princes who are excommunicated, or deprived of their kingdom or territories, by the Pope, or by any authority of the See of Rome, may be dethroned or put to death by their subjects or by any other persons. And I declare that no foreign prince, person, prelate, state, or potentate has, or shall have, any jurisdiction, power, superiority preeminence, or ecclesiastical or spiritual authority in this kingdom. So, help me God."

V. Declaration against the Transubstantiation, or Real Presence of the Body of Jesus Christ in the Lord's Supper.

"I, *André de La Durantaye*, declare that I believe that there is no transubstantiation in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper of Our Jesus Christ, any transubstantiation

⁹ •Murray and Carleton were Protestants, but Murray was from Scotland and Carleton from Ireland.

of the elements of bread and wine, neither at the time of their consecration, nor after their consecration, by any person whatsoever."

VI. Declaration against Papism¹⁰ : *"I, Alfred Rousseau, profess, testify, and declare, solemnly and sincerely in the presence of God, that I believe that in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper of our Lord Jesus Christ there is no transubstantiation of the elements of bread and wine into the body and blood of Jesus Christ in the time, or after the time of their consecration by any person whatsoever; and that the invocation or adoration of the Virgin Mary, and of any other the sacrifice of the mass, as they are practiced today in the church of Rome, are superstitious and idolatrous [Sic!] And I profess, testify, and declare, that I make this declaration and every part of it part of it, in the natural and ordinary sense of the words which have been read to me as they are commonly understood by English Protestants, without any evasion, equivocal interpretation, or mental reservation whatsoever, and without any person, or authority, and without thinking that I am, or can be, before God or men, sensible, free from the obligation of this declaration, or that I may be absolved from it, or any part of it, though the Pope, or any other person, or person, or persons, or power whatsoever, dispense with it or annul it, or declare that it was null and void from its beginning."*

One senses the obsession of the English legislators to foresee and to thwart any red herring, loophole or trickery in order to feign the false conversion that would allow a Catholic to emerge from his state of outlaw to acquire

¹⁰ • The word Popery does not translate the word papism because popery is a derogatory name for Roman Catholicism.

land, an honorary position, or an education. Since the English Reformation was initiated by King Henry VIII, it was natural that submission to his essential requirements should be imposed with some solemnity¹¹, by oath, by test or by formal declaration, and that this would change according to the various moods of those who ruled the State.

I. Oath of Royal Supremacy. This oath was imposed in March 1534 by Henry VIII. The title of *Supreme Head* was first introduced by Henry VIII in a decree of Convocation on February 11th, 1531, but was vigorously contested by the Catholic clergy of England. In vain! The oath had no religious implications yet, but the Clergy feared that it could be subject to another interpretation... Indeed, two years later, a change took place that had previously seemed inconceivable; the King of England having broken with the Parliament decided that the King should be "taken into consideration, accepted and deemed as the only supreme authority on earth of the Church of England by all his subjects." However, no formula for swearing in was laid down in this Act.

The *Act of Supremacy* was rescinded by Queen Mary (Catholic) and revived by Elizabeth (Protestant). The required formula was: "*I, Paul Légaré, do absolutely testify and declare in conscience that Her Highness the Queen is the sole supreme ruler of the realm, both in all spiritual or ecclesiastical as well as temporal matters, etc., etc., May God help me!*" It was not intended to impose this oath immediately to everyone, but only to the members of the clergy, and to all those who occupied a state function. This moderation in imposition of this oath in small doses helped

¹¹ • This text is based on the Old Catholic Encyclopedia, published by the Robert Appleton Company New York, NY. Vol. 1 2 : 1907; Vol. 3-4 : 1908; Vol. 5-6 : 1909; Vol. 7-8-9 : 1910; Vol. 10-11-12 : 1911; Vol. 13-14-15 : 1912, and searchable online.

to prevent indignation, and allowed the Government to compel the recalcitrant one after the other. For example, several years passed before the *Supremacy Act* was imposed on university graduates.

The last repressive laws imposed by Queen Elizabeth 1st against Catholics — from 1592 to 1593— provided for a new ordeal to subjugate the refractory¹². This ordeal included "a self-criticism which recognized as a serious offense the contempt of Her Majesty's Government"; the Queen's Supremacy ; a clause which forbade dispensations and dissembling by playing with words. Success in "the establishment and consolidation of the Anglican religion" by Elizabeth the First was really due to her alliance with the party which later took the name of Puritans, a rigorous Presbyterian sect.

II. *The Pledge of Allegiance* of James I (1606) was also called the *Pledge of Obedience*. It bound Catholics from birth to death, a journey that for some was a horribly shortened Way of the Cross. They were harassed and persecuted at baptisms, weddings, funerals, education. "I, Paul Johnson, truly and sincerely acknowledge that our Sovereign Lord, King James, is lawfully and justly King, and that the Pope, neither by his own nor by the authority of the Church, nor by that of the Roman Vatican, nor by any other means, has any power to depose the King nor to authorize any foreign prince to invade it or to give license to anyone to take up arms, or to create tumult. I also swear that, notwithstanding any sentence of excommunication, or dispossession, I will keep my allegiance and true faith to His Majesty. And furthermore, I swear that from the

¹² ●Great Britain. Statute Law Committee, Chronological Table and Index of the Statutes, printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office, Londres, Edinbourg et Dublin, 1882. 35 Elizabeth c. 2.

bottom of my heart I abhor, detest and abjure as and heretical, that damnable doctrine and opinion that the princes who are excommunicated by the pope may be deposed or murdered by their subjects or by any other person. I believe that the pope has no power to release me from this oath¹³."

III. *Oath of Abjuration* under the Commonwealth (1643). When the party of the fundamentalist Puritans dominated during the civil wars [the English Wars of Religion], the abuses of the Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance fell into disuse, and these oaths were annulled by the Act of February 1650. In their place a new "Commitment of Allegiance" to the *Commonwealth* was created. But the fate of the Catholics did not improve; on the contrary, it became worse by the introduction of an "*Act of Abjuration*". This last law was passed on August 19th, 1643. Every Anglican citizen was assigned "a papist" who had refused to recant. Penalties against strong-minded Catholics ranged from the confiscation of two-thirds of their movable property to the deprivation of almost all their civil rights.

IV. *The Oath of the Test* (or Test Oath, 1672, 1678). Known also under the name the *Oath of Declaration of Attestation*. The first Parliament that followed Restoration revived the *Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance* on July 14th, 1660. After the conversion to Catholicism of the Duke of York (James), the "hatred" of the Anglican party worsened, and in 1672 a *Test Oath* was passed by Shaftesbury, which reinforced the obligation for all those who held an official office to make a brief *Declaration against*

¹³ • This oath was passed and put into effect during the reign of James I and proclaimed law on June 22, 1606.

Transubstantiation, i.e., to swear "that *no transubstantiation in the sacrament of the Lord's Supper... either at the moment itself, or following the Consecration which is carried out by any person*¹⁴".

This examination or test of passage was very effective. The Duke of York, James, had to resign as Lord Grand Admiral. But when the country and Parliament were disrupted by *the Oates' Conspiracy*¹⁵ in 1678, a much longer and crueller Test was put in place by the addition of a further statement:

"The invocation to the Virgin Mary¹⁶ or to any Saint, and the Sacrifice of the Mass... are superstitious and idolatrous... I make this declaration without any ambiguity, equivocation, or mental reservation whatsoever, and without any dispensation which the pope has granted me¹⁷." In modern times, this formula became known as "*the King's Declaration*". It was binding on all those who held office

¹⁴ ●Great Britain. Statute Law Committee, Chronological Table and Index of the Statutes, printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office, Londres, Edinbourg et Dublin, 1882. 25 Charles II, c. 2.

¹⁵ ●The Oates' Plot was a Popish Plot, a false conspiracy perpetrated in England in 1678. That year, Titus Oates, an Anglican priest, wanting to influence elections, boasted of having uncovered a "popish plot" whose objective was to assassinate the Anglican king Charles II of England and replace him with a Catholic king, James, his brother. This false Popish Plot resulted in the execution of nineteen Catholics and the exclusion of several Lords. Most Protestant sects took advantage of the frame-up to give full support to the Anglican Whigs, who won a majority of seats in the House of Commons. Thus, the Whigs tried the following year to pass the Exclusion Bill, prohibiting any Catholic from becoming king, in order to deny James access to the throne, but the law was rejected by the House of Lords. [Hibbard, Caroline M., Charles I and the Popish Plot, University of North Carolina Press, Chapel Hill, 1983.]

¹⁶ ●Note that the word blank was not capitalized in this case.

¹⁷ ●Great Britain. Statute Law Committee, Chronological Table and Index of the Statutes, printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office, London, Edinburgh et Dublin, 1882. 30 Charles II, ii. 1

and on Members of Parliament, except for the Duke of York¹⁸.

Upon Charles' death, James II took over with plans to abolish all such anti-Catholic oaths. But his entourage ensured that he never had the opportunity to bring his bill before Parliament. He succeeded in freeing himself by the "*Dispensing Power*". But the *Revolution of 1688* quickly brought the situation back to its usual state. The Parliament that followed the accession of William of Orange added a clause in the Bill of Rights, which forced the King himself to take the oath¹⁹.

V. *The Irish Oath* from 1774 until *Emancipation* in 1829. In 1770, under the pressure of the American Revolution which required *cannon fodder*, General Burgoyne proposed to free Catholic soldiers from the obligation of the Oath of Test; in vain. In 1771, however it became urgent to *keep the French-Canadians loyal to England in the face of the revolutionary stirrings of the Americans*, and the *Quebec Act* was passed, the first measure of tolerance for Catholics, which Parliament had accepted since Queen Mary Tudor. Forced by the need to obtain Irish Catholic *cannon fodder*, the Anglo-Protestant Parliament of Ireland also took the first step in softening the rules of William III of Orange, who considered himself as *God's Executioner*.

In 1774, an oath of allegiance to King George III and a rejection of the Pretender (Catholic) was proposed, but without implying a rejection of papal authority, or of any dogma of faith. The slogan of "*no faith with heretics*" was

¹⁸. •The Duke of York became King James II of England and Ireland and at the same time King James VII of Scotland. He was their last Catholic king.

¹⁹ •Great Britain. Statute Law Committee, Chronological Table and Index of the Statutes, printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office, Londres, Edinburgh et Dublin, 1882.

1 William III & Marie, sess. 1, c. 8.

put on hold, as was the power to depose, as well as the depreciatory words of *impious*, *damnable* and *heretical*. The temporal power and civil jurisdiction of the Pope, direct or indirect, were also abjured. Any papal dispensation to comply with the oath by trickery was to be refused [oath by deception]. *The Irish Oath* of 1774 was accepted by the legislature as evidence of loyalty and was freely taken.

In 1778, the same need for military manpower became so urgent in England itself, that the first *Relief Bill* —also known as Sir George Savile's Act—, relieved even the Catholics of England from some of the penal consequences of these discriminatory laws. It included the Irish Oath²⁰. In the face of absolute necessity, the law passed without difficulty, despite the sharp protests of the Anglican religious authorities, the *main Cornerstone* of Intolerance in this country. In principle, the Emancipation of Catholics was fully completed by 1829. Officially, at least, because in practice, the bad habits (in particular that of asking the religion of the candidates to the University, and to refuse them, eventually) continued for more than a century [Relief Bill].

VI. Abrogation of the legal oaths (statutory) against Catholicism (1867-1910). The Relief Bills were usually relief measures only, leaving the old statutes, oaths and tests in the Books of Statutes, and some of the state's leaders still had to abide by them. The complete and official repeal of these tests and oaths by William III of Orange did not happen all at once; it was staggered —paradoxically— in modern times. In 1867 the Declaration was

²⁰ ●Great Britain. Statute Law Committee, Chronological Table and Index of the Statutes, printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office, London, Edinburgh and Dublin, 1882. 18 George III, c. 60.

abolished²¹. After that, the only person required to take the oath was the King himself at the beginning of his reign; like the swearing in of a president.

In 1871, *the Promissory Oaths Bill*²² repealed all the old oaths of allegiance²³. In 1891, a first attempt was made by Lord Herries in the House of Lords to get rid of the *King's Declaration*, but the amendment proposed by the Government was so empty and meaningless that the Catholics themselves opposed it. It was said that it would be the French-Canadians who, once again, would come to the aid of the English, who were frozen in their old religious prejudices like a goose stuck in its fat.

In 1901, a strong resolution passed against its retention in the *House of Commons of Canada*. Similar petitions were proposed in Australia, and by Catholics in the English colonies. In 1904, 1905 and 1908, similar bills were proposed in England, but without effect. After the death of King Edward VII (in 1910), finally, King George V quietly suggested to the Government that it should propose a Repeal Bill. This was done, and English public opinion, after much hesitations, finally declared itself in favor of the bill which was voted by both Houses with a large majority. The Royal Assent came on August 3rd, 1910, thus purging the English Constitution of its last outdated anti-Catholic oaths, the leprous wrecks of an era when politicians shamelessly used the Christian religion for divisive purposes. It is said that people continue to love until death those who have loved them. So, it is with Hate.

²¹ ● *Ibidem*. 30, 31 Victoria, c. 75

²² ● The adjective promissory: provisional, ephemeral, transient, takes rather the nuance of: obsolete. It is therefore the Law of Obsolete Oaths.

²³ ● Great Britain. Statute Law Committee, Chronological Table and Index of the Statutes, printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office, Londres, Edinburgh et Dublin, 1882. 34, 35 Victoria, c. 48.

It happened to me to hear, in the years 1980, on a radio-program in English Canada, some people devaluing Catholics, with fright or hate. Only the near death of Anglicanism in England rid the Commonwealth (around the year 2000), of the absurd anti-popish hatred and transformed it into anti-islamism.



Seeing the unrest spreading throughout the Thirteen American colonies, beginning with the Boston insurrection of 1773, the English Government tried to negotiate with the Canadian Catholic Clergy as quickly as possible to seduce them, to win them over to its views, and to recreate for its exclusive benefit the *Canadian threat*, which for centuries had already intimidated the minds of the colonists of New England, New Holland, New Sweden and the other southern colonies, in order to force them to remain under the wing of the English mother hen.

The French-Canadian people had been left orphaned by the French government of Louis XV, who cared little for *the few acres of snow*, even if these acres were populated by a crowd of full-fledged Frenchmen. The great Voltaire, so petty at times, had thrown this pejorative expression into the bad wind in order to minimize the loss of a continent, with the sole purpose of supporting his dear commoner friend, Madame de Pompadour²⁴, accused by the French people with the setbacks of France during the Seven Years' War. They needed a culprit outside of the King. Faced with the vacuum triggered by the repatriation of the noble aristocrats and civil servants who had fled,

²⁴ • Who had made him obtain a formidable royal pension. It was *a return of elevator* for Voltaire; he hated the aristocrats who had shown him contempt in the famous affair of the Chevalier de Rohan-Chabot.

like rats, from the sinking Canadian ship, the English Government negotiated with the Catholic Clergy²⁵ about the military cooperation of the French-Canadians intended to threaten the boiling Thirteen Colonies. The result of this cooperation would be the *Quebec Act*, which was approved and passed in 1774 by the Parliament of Great Britain²⁶.



The *Petition of 1773*, written by the French-Canadian Clergy, had served as the basis for the *Quebec Act*, which granted Canadians everything they could dream of except a return to their mother country, France. The Quebec Act was thus, in part, an act of the British Parliament that gave the Canadians a legal existence and saved them from the pitiful fate of the Catholics in England, in Ireland and in Scotland, who were subjected to the terrible *Test Acts*. Under this new statute, Canadians regained all their civil, linguistic, religious, scholar and judicial rights. The Catholic Church, which had been the driving force behind this "collaboration" with the English occupiers, regained its right to levy its traditional tax — the dime or tenth part of the annual income.

The area of Canada, called *the Province of Québec*, was greatly expanded to include some of what is now Illinois, Indiana, Ohio, Michigan, Wisconsin, Minnesota... and Ontario. With their civil customs and the official use of the French language, the Canadians reclaimed Labrador, the Magdalen Islands, Anticosti Island, the Great Lakes to the confluence of the Ohio and Mississippi, the border river of Louisiana, that Louis XV had given to

²⁵ Clergy was the only *constituted body* left on the spot, in the front line.

²⁶ ●Citation 14 George III c. 83

Spain by the secret treaty of 1762. An assembly controlled by the selfish and discriminatory English merchants would not be imposed on them, but rather the number of members of the Council would be increased to counterbalance them. Thus London, faced with the looming danger of losing everything, had showered the French-Canadians with supreme treats. Their homeland was back on the map. England also re-established the land grant system according to the particular cadastral system of the French seigneurial in Canada²⁷.

The purpose of this expansion was certainly to please the Francophones, but also to confine—to incarcerate—the Thirteen Colonies in a closed field to prevent them from any territorial extension that would allow them to establish their young pioneers whose population doubled every quarter of a century. England re-established to its exclusive benefit the same antagonism to its exclusive profit, the same hatreds between the French and the Americans, which had plagued North America for centuries and which had finally enriched the English fur & hide lobby.

English diplomats had a long experience in the subtle art of antagonizing their enemies in order to weaken and neutralize each other by an eternal and ferocious hatred to their own profit²⁸.

²⁷ ● Long strips of land perpendicular to the rivers that provided transport, drinking water, irrigation. The English cadaster was composed of large squares of one mile on each side, subdivided into concessions.

²⁸ ● The Scots versus the Irish in Ireland, the Scots versus the French Métis of the Red River, the Scots versus the French Canadians in 1837, the French-Canadians versus the Americans of the Thirteen Colonies with the *Quebec Act*...

The French-Canadian Clergy, then, endeavored to win the loyalty of the population of Canada²⁹. According to the Anglo-Canadian agreement, any French-Canadian who sided with the Americans would be ostracized from Canadian society. The Clergy were indeed the sole holders of the wrath of Heaven and Hell, in the form of sacramental *excommunication* (the equivalent of an Islamic fatwa), which would sent the recalcitrant to hell in case of untimely death. The insubordinate person was ostracized from society by excommunication of those who would violate the order of social ostracism. Only close relatives had the right to speak to the excommunicated who thus became a pariah in his own environment³⁰. At the end of his life of stubborn insubordination and disrespect for the Church's rule, his dead body could not be buried in the holy ground of the village cemetery. His remains would be thrown outside the walls of the city of the dead. Not only would his soul be cursed, but his reprobate body would remain excluded even beyond the threshold of death. And God himself would meekly bow to the lowly political considerations that had brought his excommunication on earth to close on him the doors of Paradise. Only Beelzebub would opened his welcoming arms to him, no doubt sneering.

Excommunication was thus a terrible weapon in the hands of the English, as destructive as a Charleville model 1777, the French rifle³¹ with which the Americans "booted" the English out of their homeland. A hierarchy is

²⁹ •A population that was almost exclusively catholic, if we exclude the few hundred English merchants (about 500), rapacious and virulent, who had very opportunely infiltrated Canada behind the bayonets of the Anglo-American army in 1759-1760

³⁰ •Nine rulers of France (including Napoleon), as well as two of England and one of the Holy Roman Empire, were excommunicated by popes.

³¹ •The Charleville *Model 1777* was designed by Gribauval and manufactured under license in the United States under the name *Springfield*, the city where the Charleville was manufactured under license.

easy to control; you just have to change its head. By controlling the *chain of servitude* called Religion in the brain of the French-Canadians, the English colonial authorities succeeded in taking control and almost enslaving the traditionally combative French-Canadian people, who for centuries had kept the Thirteen Colonies in a state of terror. Only a few thousand *freethinking* Quebecers braved the flames of Beelzebub to fight alongside the Americans.

Thus, thanks to this official collaboration, Canada was almost restored in its former limits of New France. Catholics had the right of access to official functions. Civil laws remained the French Law of the *Coutumes de Paris*. The *English* criminal law was the old Franco-Norman law to which had been added the *Habeas Corpus*³². The French seigneurial regime and the Land Surveyor's Register were preserved and legalized. The Government was assisted by a Legislative Council of 17 to 23 members, open to French-Canadian seigneurs³³. The alliance between the British Crown and the French-Canadian elites was tightened when, in May 1775, Bishop Briand reminded his flock of their duty of loyalty to their Sovereign. So the French-Canadian were going to play a major role in 1776 in saving Canada from an American offensive. From then on, Canada was, for the American Insurgents, the symbol of a British enemy, aggravated by papism³⁴.

The *Quebec Act*, which secured the loyalty of the Canadians against the Americans, skillfully placed once

³² • *Habeas Corpus* was suspended in Canada during the two World Wars against citizens of warring nations residing in Canada, and during the October Crisis of 1970 against French Canadians.

³³ • The aristocrats having fled, the local lords were Canadian burghers or even Englishmen who had the means to buy back the seigneuries at knock-down prices.

³⁴ • Lacroix, Jean-Michel, *Canada et Canadiens*, Presses Universitaires de Bordeaux, Centre d'Études canadiennes, Bordeaux, 1984. p. 32.

again an imminent danger —a Sword of Damocles— over the head of the Americans, as during the so-called *French and Indian Wars*. This same danger, *Catholic and furiously combative*, which had forced the American Thirteen Colonies to remain under the yoke and boot of England for centuries. Papism and cannons of the French Canadians were brandished as a scarecrow by London to bring the Thirteen Colonies back into line. By the good will of the French Catholic Clergy, the French-Canadians became ironically and paradoxically *the Guardians of the British Empire*, with the same irrationality, the same incoherence as the title of *Defender of the Faith* which was granted by the Pope to the King of England was still attached to the worst enemies of the Holy See.



Bishop Briand's open Episcopal Letter of May 22nd, 1775, was of course more effective than all the fraternal and reassuring invitations of the American Congress, duly translated into French. By one of the perversions of History, disobeying the English led to this infamous excommunication, an infernal trap, in the literal sense. The countryside priests lost their Latin (their bearings) there.

Paradoxically, the only "new-Canadians" who did not appreciate the removal of the Test Act and the liberalization of the French-Canadian people were the 500 English merchants who had recently settled in Canada and who used *colonial and religious discrimination* as an apartheid fence to ghettoize French Canadians, monopolizing the business, securing and maintaining their lucrative activities. They would rather keep these papists, who were reduced by the Test Act to the state of sub-humans,

banned from everything and incapable to compete economically with them³⁵.

Organized in a powerful Merchant Lobby, they had already caused the first colonial governor of Canada a great deal of trouble —James Murray— a Scot whom they judged to be too tolerant in favor of French-Canadians, and therefore a traitor to their religion. To the fanatics, tolerance always appears as a vice. Denounced by the powerful mouthpiece of the *London Plantation Council* (the administrative organization of the London Merchant Lobbies), James Murray was sanctioned and dismissed.

The intention of the English legislators was understood by everyone, as indicated by an unsigned letter dated July 1st, 1774, in London: "The infamous *Act of Quebec*, which establishes Papism and arbitrary power in a country [potentially] capable of containing a population larger than that of England, France and Spain, *is intended to keep the former colonies in terror. And those in power here are not shy about saying that, by taking care to train the Canadian Militia*³⁶, *they will be able, with the Militia and the fleet, to keep the [American] colonies always in submission*³⁷."

The Americans themselves saw in this law a very vexatious punitive measure: "What! We Americans have spent so much blood and wealth in the service of Great Britain, in the conquest of Canada, that the British and the

³⁵●A perversion as diabolical as China's current political system, which allows global capitalists to use the subjugation and coercion of communist systems for their selfish profit to force workers and low-income earners to allow themselves to be exploited without protest and strikes.

³⁶●The Militia = The French-Canadian National Guard.

³⁷●Peter Force, *American Archives*, publiées de 1837 à 1853, Vol. IV : p.136.

Canadians may now enslave us today?³⁸" The boomerang backlash was hurting badly. In fact, what shocked the Americans most about the *Quebec Act* was that unbelievable tolerance towards the Catholics so hated since ever in the Thirteen Colonies, subjected, generation after generation, to the worst sectarian indoctrination. The historian Marcel Trudel recalls³⁹ that the army from Massachusetts that attacked the fortress of Louisbourg in 1745, carried the motto, embroidered on their flags: "*Nil desperandum, Christo duce*"⁴⁰ and that the troops had been forced into a day of fasting and fervent prayers⁴¹. It was the *Allahu Akbar!* of the Islamists of the 21st century and the *Dieu le veut!* of the Middle Ages' crusaders. How could the French papists stand up to English troops led by Christ?

As soon as the American threats disappeared, London would abandon its velvet gauntlet to the French-Canadians, until a new threat came along to frighten the English again. For example, when the United States once again assailed Canada during the *Napoleonic Empire*⁴², in 1812. Here again, the Catholic Clergy forced the French population to fight on the side of England on pain of sacramental excommunication. The infeodation of the Catholic Clergy to intolerant England was greatly facilitated under the Napoleonic Empire, by the fact that Napoleon —himself excommunicated— was considered the *Antichrist* for having

³⁸ ●Quincy, Josiah Jr., *Avocat à Boston, Memoir of the Life of Josiah Quincy Junior, of Massachusetts Bay, 1744-1775*, by his son Josiah Quincy, Little, Brown & Co., Boston, 1875. October Letter, p. 182.

³⁹ ●Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 60.

⁴⁰ ●«We must not despair of anything when Christ shows us the way.» 283.

⁴¹ ●Benjamin Franklin, *Writings*, II, Letter of 10 March 1645, p.283.

⁴² ●Battle of Châteauguay 1813, a battle that allowed Quebecers to demonstrate that their fighting value was unparalleled, as in the time of New France: 300 French Canadians and a handful of Indians inflicted a crushing defeat on an American army of 7,500 men.

humiliated the Pope to the point of keeping him in captivity. And then the revolutionary convulsions of anticlerical France caused an unceasing influx into Canada of Conservative French priests (political refugees). They described France's excesses which, in the minds of Canadians, transformed *the Eldest Daughter of the Church* into the *Elder Daughter of Beelzebub*.

In both cases⁴³, it was the French-Canadian troops who kept Canada under British boot. Even the famous Jules Verne, more of a novelist than a historian, understood well that England, which had cancelled the Test Act in Canada to gain the loyalty of the Canadians, did not hesitate to show its teeth and its desire to destroy the French civilization of North America, as soon as all danger was over. The novelist explained the reason why —the American ogre being mellowed—, the English colonial government, totally liberated from the fear of losing Canada, began to defraud, to no longer respect the rules of democracy, by artificially taking away the rights of the French people, suppressing the political weight of French-speaking Canadians: "The members of the Legislative Council appointed for life by the Crown, were all English by birth and they completely annihilated the popularly elected House of Assembly. Out of a population of 600,000⁴⁴ [in 1837], of which 525,000 were Franco-Canadians, three-quarters of the jobs were held by civil servants of English origin. Finally, it was once again a question of banning the use of the French language in the whole colony⁴⁵."

⁴³ ● American Revolution and War of 1812.

⁴⁴ ● 600,000 inhabitants in 1837. Democratic fairness was not better respected with American populations, since the London government flatly refused to allow them to be represented in the London Parliament.

⁴⁵ ● Verne, Jules, *Famille-sans-nom*, Guérin, Montréal, 1982. p. 20. Jules Verne wrote three novels set in Canada: *L'île flottante* (an expedition adrift on an iceberg), *Le Pays*

Thus spoke Jules Verne, on the subject of the Canadian insurrection of 1837, showing that opportunistic collaboration with Albion is always disappointing and even horrifying. As the minister Vergennes once said: "Treaties with the British Nation are only truces that this country will break whenever its interest or its whim seems to require it"⁴⁶.

Generally speaking, the incentives of the French-Canadian Clergy to collaborate with the English colonial government was very poorly received by the people, even when psychologically restrained and firmly harnessed by the Clergy.



American plans to invade Canada with the army of the Insurgents contained several important motivations. One of them, the most crucial, was to counteract the effects of the Quebec Act which enlarged Canada at the expense of the Thirteen Colonies, and sequestered those colonies between the Appalachian Mountains and the Atlantic Ocean, taking away their control of trade and agriculture over most of the continent, and particularly the Ohio River

des fourrures (inspired by the history of the Hudson's Bay Company), and *Famille-sans-nom*, which evokes the tragedy of French Canadians threatened with losing their identity by the abandonment of France. In reality, today, at the beginning of the twenty-first century, Quebec seems better equipped to fight against American assimilation than France itself, and the future will undoubtedly confirm that long after Europe in general and France in particular have become totally English-speaking, Quebec will still resist, like the famous village of Asterix in Bretagne.

⁴⁶ • Directives from Louis Gravier de Vergennes on behalf of Louis XVI. The king of France let it happen. Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the king to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. in *Recueil des Instructions donné aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française*, XXV 2 Angleterre, Tome 3 (1698-1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965.

Valley, which had been *the bone of contention* in America during the Seven Years' War. According to Trudel, the Americans feared that the English would launch the Papist army against the American colonies, this army of papists that had so frightened the English people at the time of the Seven Years' War⁴⁷. One of these fears claimed that the English had stockpiled enormous reserves of gunpowder in Canada; probably a false rumor, fakenews or *disinformation* launched by the English authorities to dissuade any attack. George Washington himself believed that Canada was "the greatest store of ammunition ever stocked in America⁴⁸... an object of such great importance that it would be folly not to make every effort to achieve it⁴⁹". Not to mention the strategic importance of Quebec City, Gateway to the St. Lawrence and to the vast Great Lakes basin. The fortress of Quebec was the key to the Great Lakes, like Gibraltar to the Mediterranean.

The ambiguous policy of Vergennes towards the conquest of Canada by the Americans would place the French in very delicate situations. This policy was clearly defined in a non-hermetic language, for the sole benefit of the French ambassador, who replaced Gérard, to whom Vergennes explained the exact position that he had to follow: "All that will prevent the conquest of this country [Canada] will essentially enter into our views. But you will feel yourself, Sir, that this way of thinking must be an *impenetrable secret* from the Americans. It would be a crime they would never forgive us for. It is advisable to leave

⁴⁷ ● Marcel Trudel, *La Révolution américaine*, (1775-1783), Les Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. 146

⁴⁸ ● It was to be compared to Saddam Hussein's pseudo *weapons of mass destruction* that justified the destruction of Iraq by the Americans who wanted to seize their oil.

⁴⁹ ● [to invade Canada] Secret Journals of the Acts and Proceedings of the Continental Congress, Édition Worthington C. Ford, 31 volumes, Vol.V, p.770; et Trudel p.97.

them in illusion, to take all the necessary steps to make them believe that we share the will of conquest, but to prevent without affectation all attempts to which it could lead if we are required to cooperate⁵⁰.

It was indeed "very complicated because *Article 4* of the Franco-American Alliance obliged the French to participate in the conquests of Canada and of the Maritime Provinces. The situation was very delicate because the French were committed to helping the Americans to conquer Canada, for the sole benefit of the Thirteen Colonies. But the French were determined —not to prevent them— but at least to do their best to keep Canada in English hands in order to satisfy the strange world strategy of the French Minister of Foreign Affairs.

Moreover, in their desire for conquest, the Americans were anxious to *appear as the aggrieved and not the aggressors*⁵¹. This attack on Canada was only a defensive attitude against the English who were threatening to unleash the rabid pack of Papists against the Thirteen Colonies. In the Proclamation addressed to the inhabitants of Canada in 1776, the American asked the question: "When were we the aggressors? Did our troops enter the field before the (English) Government began their aggressive invasion to Lexington and Concord? Did we take possession or plan to take possession of Canada before we learned that it was one of the points of the [English] Government's program to release Canadians on our borders⁵²?"

⁵⁰ ●Bancroft, George, translated and annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, self-published, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. Volume 3 contains historical documents. Letter from the Comte de Vergennes to the Chevalier de La Luzerne, dated 14 October 1782, at Versailles.

⁵¹ ●As they would later do in Viet Nam, Iraq, Afghanistan, wherever they were defeated.

⁵² ●Wilson, James, *Selected Political Essays*, A.A. Knopf, New York, 1930. p.115.



Despite the formal directives of the Clergy and the condemnation of recalcitrant to eternal hell, it is important to emphasize the fact that the mass of Canadians remained neutral in this war, while a few thousand of them fought on both sides, some to earn pay, others for ideals. In order to sound out public opinion, American spies who spoke French came to mingle with the Canadian population in order to get a sense of what kind of collaboration the Insurgents could expect: "On the 24th of last month [July], by order of the general, I left for Canada with 4 men, with orders to penetrate the country and to gather whatever information we could obtain concerning the military preparations made there by the Canadians troops and the Indians; what was the situation [of the strongholds of Saint-Jean, Chambly, Montreal and Québec]; the number of men defending each place; whether the Canadians intended to fight against us; whether reinforcements had just arrived⁵³" in Canada.

Major John Brown, the author of these lines continued as follows: "I arrived in Canada on the 30th of July 1775..., protected by Canadians, who, I can assure you, are our friends. Without their protection, I would have fallen into the hands of the enemies. It is impossible for me to describe the kindness shown to me by the French [in Canada], as well as their horrifying situation, when they are threatened with destruction by the King's troops [of England] by fire and iron, because they refuse to take up arms against the [Thirteen] Colonies... They pledge to supply us with everything in their power. The Amerindians are

2 • Letter from Major John Brown to Governor Trumbull, Crown Point, August 14, 1775, from Peter Force, *American Archives*, published 1837-1853, Vol. III: p. 135

determined to act in conjunction with the Canadians⁵⁴." And, mistaking his desires for reality, Brown concluded with these words: "It is time to take Canada. It can be done very easily and at a very low cost; and I am confident that the Canadians will join us. Many of them are defecting [from the Royal English troops]... It seems that the King's troops are not reassured⁵⁵."

An Englishman from Ticonderoga who thought he knew the Canadians well, warned the English governor of Connecticut in August 1775: "The Canadians are generally armed, but have little ammunition or not at all. Otherwise, it is more than likely that they would rise up to oppose the current measures⁵⁶." This seemed to minimize the power of the Catholic Clergy's hold on their minds. Their disappointment and even disillusionment could not but be great.

Canadian society, despite the strict orders and prohibitions of the Clergy, was divided into three unequal blocks: those who yielded to the will of the ecclesiastical authorities, on the one hand, and the recalcitrant on the other formed two equal groups. But the immense majority remained impervious to both. *The reoccupation of Canada by the French remained throughout this war as a secret hope of all the Francophones except the French diplomats* who did not want the Americans to give up their independence for fear of finding themselves alone to face the French. The old fears of the Seven Years' War were still lurking among Americans.

⁵⁴ • Ibidem, p.p. 136

⁵⁵ • Ibidem p.p. 136 1

⁵⁶ • Letter from Major John Brown [a spy sent to Canada] to Governor Trumbull, Crown Point, August 14, 1775, from Peter Force, American Archives, published 1837-1853, Vol. III: p.p. 136

General Lévis⁵⁷, a lord of *little nobility* but of great virtue and personal sublimity, underlined the negligence of the French Royalty through its ministers: "Even admitting that M. de Maurepas did not act impolitically by openly helping the Americans⁵⁸, one will always have the right to reproach him for the weakness and the lack of skill he showed in the conduct of this war. He missed the most favorable opportunity to provide France with some magnificent establishments in the old and new continents. Instead of sending in the Antilles a petty expedition, whose exploits were necessarily limited to the capture of a small sugar island (a true conquest of gazette), why didn't he send to Canada a Corps of ten or twelve thousand men? This colony, still entirely French, would have risen up in our favor, and we would possess it today. On the other hand, two or three ships of the line and a few thousand more soldiers in India would have given us a decisive superiority there; and the French empire of Mysor would have been saved⁵⁹."

Lévis was a soldier, a true one, and the fanfluffles of courtiers did not suit him very well. And in the end, when one knows with which ingratitude the American Government treated France at the end of the American Revolution War, one wonders if the French would not have done better to be less disinterested and to reconquer Canada.

However, the French Government still refused to reclaim Canada, despite the hopes of all Francophones and

⁵⁷ •The General who defeated the English in 1760 on the Plains of Abraham, almost on the very spot of the famous battle of 1759 and whose name was given to the nearby town of Aubigny (across Quebec City) to celebrate the centennial of this victory.

⁵⁸ •"Impolitically" because it encouraged the revolt of subjects against their sovereign "by divine right", and, at the time of writing, had led to the same process in France.

⁵⁹ •Duc de Lévis, *Mémorabilia and portraits, 1780-1789*, Chez Laurent Beaupré, Libraire, Paris, 1815. p. 15.

Francophiles (including most of the Indian tribes of the Mid-West who rebelled in 1764 in the hope that the French would return). On the other hand, the Thirteen American Colonies dreamed from the beginning to join this Canadian people who had made them tremble for centuries and who still frightened them. They wanted to tear them away from their alliance with London, for they knew that this "*priest-ridden Province*"⁶⁰ was formidable in the hands of the opportunistic Government of England. They wanted this alliance *less out of affinity than out of fear*; in spite of all religious misgivings, not to say *repugnance*.

Two days later, from Ticonderoga⁶¹, Ethan Allen sent a Proclamation to the Canadians (dated June 4th, 1775), to make them understand that the Americans had grievances only against the English and not against "our brave and respectable friends and countrymen, the French inhabitants of Canada"⁶². Their dream was to detach the Canadians from the defense of this English colony.

At the beginning, there were only 600 soldiers in Canada, according to what Governor Carleton had written on June 7th, 1775. They were scattered all along the Saint Lawrence River⁶³. The Caughnawaga Indians⁶⁴, pretended to collaborate with the Americans but played a

⁶⁰ ●The pejorative expression *priest-ridden province* (Province ruled by priests) to designate Quebec, was launched in the following century by xenophobic English movements to denigrate Quebec society. In 1843, Bishop Bourget of Montreal wrote: "Our religion is our first national distinction, at the same time as it is the basis of our institutions. It is because we are Catholics that we are a nation in this corner of America." [Quoted by Roy, Paul-Émile, Article: Quebecers and their religious heritage, University of Ottawa Monthly Intellectual and Cultural History Review, Ottawa, Ontario.]

⁶¹ ●Mentioned above. Fort-Ticonderoga is the former Fort Carillon of the French, in the current state of New York. 3 Journals of the Prov. Cong. of NY, II, p. 26, dated June 4, 1775.

⁶² ●Journals of the Prov. Cong. of NY, II, p. 26, dated June 4, 1775

⁶³ ●Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution, (1775-1783)*. p. 184

⁶⁴ ●Today the Kanawaké Reserve, an enclave in the Montreal agglomeration.

double game⁶⁵ because they knew that, on both sides, no matter who wins they could only gain unpleasantness from them. These Americans who were supposedly fighting *for freedom* while they owned black and Amerindian slaves, did not inspire any confidence in them.

The English, more skilled in the art of the double language, circulated false rumors according to which England was planning to return Canada to France. This *disinformation* was intended to sow suspicion in the American people and even terrorize them, and the diplomatic community by casting doubt on France's incomprehensible disinterest⁶⁶. In a letter⁶⁷ from Benedict Arnold to the New York Congress, he wrote that the American Thirteen Colonies were "equally threatened by Canada, whether this country remained in the hands of Great Britain, or if it was restored to France, which many suspect the English Minister would like to do," to create panic among the Americans and force them to remain under the protection of England. Arnold's postscript at the end of his letter about his preparations for invading Canada by Lake Champlain, mentioned that he had heard this rumor from an English merchant named Hay who was passing through Crown Point⁶⁸. This misinformation reached France, and Vergennes, Minister of Foreign Affairs of Louis XVI, wrote in August 1775, that the English Government was seriously mistaken "if it believed that we regret Canada as

⁶⁵ ●Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution, (1775-1783)*. p. 89.

⁶⁶ ●De Witt, Henri, *Thomas Jefferson : Historical Study of American Democracy*, Librairie académique Didier et Cie, Paris, 1861.

⁶⁷ ●Quoted by Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution, (1775-1783)*, Les Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 92

⁶⁸ ●Crown Point is the former French *Fort de la Pointe-à-la-Chevelure*, which defended the southern marches of New France.

much as it can repent of having acquired it⁶⁹." Canada, the bone of contention, was becoming a kind of "*hot potato*" that everyone wanted to pass on... or pretend to pass on.

In order to seduce and to attract the Canadian French to its side, the American Congress decided to subsidize – with funds borrowed from France – the raising of two French Canadian regiments of 1,000 men each. Enthusiasm for fighting **against** England was hardly greater than that for fighting **in favor**. The two regiments were only modest battalions. Thus, on November 29th, 1777, a Special Committee of Congress again invited Canada to join the United States, in a letter written in French⁷⁰. The same Committee proposed the creation of a *French Legion* composed of *a brigade* (two regiments of Canadian volunteers) that would also fight to have Canada join the Union as the 14th State. To encourage volunteering, a rank was promised to anyone who recruited fighters: "with 3 recruits, the recruiter became a corporal; with 5, he rose to sergeant; with 15 he became ensign; and with 30, second lieutenants⁷¹. The Committee had, without knowing it, invented the famous *pyramid method*!

Thus, were created the two French-speaking regiments mentioned above. Thanks to their recruitment potential and their knowledge of the English language⁷², two American merchants established in Canada were able to offer themselves the highest ranks. The command of the

⁶⁹ ●Doniol, Henri, History of France's participation in the establishment of the United States.

⁷⁰ ●Secret Journals of the Continental Congress, I, p. 452

⁷¹ ●Trudel, Marcel, The American Revolution (1775-1783), Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 131

⁷² ●At that time, 95% of Canadians did not speak English. Today, in 2015, 60% of Quebecers are bilingual (French-English), but 40% do not yet speak Canada's second official language. In English-speaking provinces, the percentage of unilingual English is even higher.

first regiment went to Livingston and the second to Moses Hazen. Hazen returned to Montreal and continued recruiting by offering a £40 bonus to those who enlisted, plus a monthly salary.

Thus, along with so many French Canadian volunteers who fought in the ranks of the English Army to obey the Catholic Clergy, two Regiments fought in the American Continental Army, the first one commanded as we said) by Moses Hazen and Clément Gosselin⁷³, and the second one by James Livingston, a Scottish merchant who had been living in Canada since 1744.

According to the Journal⁷⁴ of François Baby, Gabriel Elzéar Tachereau and Jenkins Williams (pro-English), 747 Canadians⁷⁵ took up arms in support of the Americans at the very beginning of the conflict, two years before La Fayette's arrival in 1777. Livingston's regiment took part in the battle of Saratoga and fought at West Point against the treacherous Benedict Arnold⁷⁶ in 1780.

Hazen's Regiment took part in the siege of Quebec City defended by French Canadian soldiers. After the failure of Montgomery's desperate attack on the Old Capital

⁷³ •Moses Hazen was a merchant; he became a landowner, lord and then an officer because in the British Army the offices of officer were bought. He was born on June 1, 1733, in Haverhill, Massachusetts; m. 5 Dec. 1770 Charlotte de La Saussaye in Montreal. Moses Hazen initially tried to join Carleton's English army, but Carleton turned him down, knowing that he had first spoken to the American invaders. He then joined them. Clément Gosselin (1747-1816) was a captain in his regiment. He fought in many places, including Yorktown, where he was wounded.

⁷⁴ •Baby, François, Gabriel Elzéar Tachereau et Jenkins Williams, *Journal de 1776*, Publié par Aegidius Fauteux, Québec 1929.

⁷⁵ •And not the 2,000 initially planned.

⁷⁶ •Benedict Arnold was an American officer who, disadvantaged in his hierarchical advancement by the American Congress, took revenge for injustice by moving into the British Army. He had previously agreed to surrender Fort Clinton at West Point to the British, but the plan was foiled when the English officer John Andre was captured with the compromising documents. Arnold managed to escape by passing to the English but Andre was hanged by the American authorities.

(Quebec City), on December 31st, 1775, Hazen and Edward Antill⁷⁷ were sent to the Second Continental Congress in Philadelphia, to deliver the news of Montgomery's death and request reinforcements.

At the end of March 1776, Hazen took command of the Montreal garrison for the American Army. He was also given the task of keeping open the retreat line for the Americans along the Richelieu Valley and Lake Champlain in case the conquest of Canada did not succeed and turned sour. Therefore he put the forts of Saint-Jean and Chambly-du-Richelieu in a state of defense. Chambly and Saint-Jean-sur-Richelieu Valley were the route of the Thirteen Colonies. Hazen's regiment reinforced with recruits remained a fighting unit throughout the course of this American Independence War.

In September 1778, Hazen launched a new campaign for an invasion of Canada. The following year, his French-speaking regiment built a road for this eventuality, now called the Bayley-Hazen Road, through northeastern Vermont to Missisquoi Bay, but the invasion through this road never happened.



In June 1783, at the end of the war, the Canadian soldiers were discharged by Congress... demobilized. They joined their families in refugee camps in Albany and Fishkill, in the State of New York, where they only received a few free rations from the Continental Congress. Offended by this ingratitude⁷⁸, Hazen fought a constant battle with

⁷⁷ ●Americans who lived in Quebec City and had been expelled by the English governor Carleton.

⁷⁸ ●Ingratitude to veterans has become a strong tradition in the United States, if we are to believe the tens of thousands of homeless veterans who clutter the streets of this

the Continental Congress to obtain some compensation for his expenses incurred in recruiting and maintain his regiment. The indifference of the Continental Congress to the surviving French-Canadians who had fought for the United States's independence was matched by the same Congress's lack of appreciation for France that had helped the Revolutionaries to gain their freedom without asking for anything in return. There was not even a simple thank you⁷⁹ when George Washington discharged the French Army at the end of the war. On the other hand, in 1783, the English government retaliated against Hazen's Canadians: Hazen's property in Canada was confiscated. This indifference on the part of the U.S. government to the soldiers who shed their blood for this country is a well-known fact. After every war this country fights, tens of thousands of veterans are left to poverty, suicide, and mental illness, completely abandoned to beg on the streets of major American cities.



Why France did not take advantage of the fact that this country had brought England to its knees to recover a significant part of its New France: Canada? France could easily have done so. But a superior strategic project—or one considered such by the French—thwarted this design.

One still felt the toxic effects of Louis XV and especially of his mistress, Madame de Pompadour, of whom

country after the wars in Iraq and Afghanistan, as well as the 22 daily suicides among these now useless soldiers. At some point in their lives, half of Iraq and Afghanistan's veterans were homeless. [source CBS]

⁷⁹ ●Schiff, Stacy, *A Great Improvisation: Franklin, France and the Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York, 2005. p.411.

Choiseul was one of the creatures⁸⁰. Let us recall the description painted by Solnon: "*A 'grisette' directs the court, decides the choice of the Ministers, commands the Armies, directs the Diplomacy. Her castles and her parties ruin the kingdom, she sells regiments and the posts of Farmers General. Her desire to amass is insatiable*"⁸¹.

Under Louis XVI, even if Choiseul was no longer at Court, his policy continued through Vergennes. The abandonment of Canada to England was already the policy of this great inspirer of French politics during the Seven Years War. Vergennes was content to ape ambiguous strategy, and, through this Minister, it was also the choice of the King Louis XVI. Choiseul, so Machiavellian that he was himself confused, can certainly be regarded as the most important actor in the lowering of France which began at this time of cultural greatness and political decadence between Louis XV and the Revolution.

In spite of the disasters of the Seven Years' War, Vergennes persisted in pursuing "the foreign policy of Choiseul. The continuity of French policy was thus assured⁸². The renunciation of Canada was part of it, as well as the guarantee of Canada to England⁸³. "While passing for a great enemy of England, Choiseul could have been in the pay of the English Lobbies that he would not have better precipitated the decline of France, as did Charles Robert Godeheu de Zaimont in the French East Indies.

⁸⁰ ● Étienne-François, comte de Choiseul, then duc de Choiseul-Stainville, born in 1719 in Nancy and died in 1785, was the unofficial Prime Minister of Louis XV between 1758 and 1770.

⁸¹ ● Solnon, Jean-François, *La Cour de France*, Fayard, 1987, p. 521.

⁸² ● The great Canadian historian Marcel Trudel tells us, perhaps with a touch of irony, *The American Revolution*, (1775- 1783), Les Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976

⁸³ ● Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution* (1775-1783), Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 170. 3

According to the geopolitics of this extravagant and even zany (as are today some pseudo-reasoners of the range of BHL), France had to give up any advantage, and if, this time, it did not fight for the King of Prussia, it was for the United States and, paradoxically, for England. On the occasion of the negotiations concerning this Franco-American Alliance, the Continental Congress did not offer the slightest advantage to France, which demanded absolutely nothing for itself, and committed itself by *Article 6* not to acquire anything on the North American continent: "*Le Roi Très-Chrétien renounces to possess Bermuda nor any part of the North American Continent, which, prior to the Treaty of Paris [of 1763] or by virtue of that treaty, have been acknowledged to belong to the Crown of Great Britain*"⁸⁴. Thus, by this treaty, France definitively renounced Canada and its inhabitants. Louis XVI was inexorably abandoning the Canadiens to calm the anxiety of the United States, just as it had abandoned the Acadiens, and the Newfoundlanders at the beginning of the same eighteenth century to bribe the English⁸⁵. *Never, ever, was a policy more suicidal for a Nation whose politicians seemed at the time to be as unreasonable as those of today. In truth, the incompetence of politicians and absurd policies have always been the curse of France.*

France also allowed the United States —without facilitating anything— to conquer Canada. All in all, the French preferred the United States to annex Canada than to see the Thirteen Colonies remain within the English Empire. The secret letter of October 30th, 1778, from the Comte de Vergennes to Monsieur de Montmorin, written

⁸⁴ •Ibidem. p. 165.

⁸⁵ •See about this bribe *The History of Franco-English diplomatic relations during the War of the Spanish Succession*, by Jean-Claude Castex, Les Éditions P-O., Vancouver, 2010.

at Versailles, clearly explains France's foolish strategy: *"We ask for independence only for the Thirteen States of America which will be united between them, without including none of the other English possessions that did not participate in their insurrection. We do not desire, by much, that the new Republic remain the exclusive master of all this immense continent. Soon, [the American Republic] would be sufficient for its own needs and the other nations would be in a position to count with it, because, being able to do without all of them, this country would most certainly make them a very hard law*⁸⁶. *The dominant spirit of this Republic is, according to what I know, the mercantile spirit. It is not an evil that it reigns: it won't be less dangerous for its neighbors. According to what Mr. Gérard tells me, it will take a long time, even centuries, for this new Republic to take a consistency which puts it in a state to play an external role. Nevertheless, it is no less interesting that the English remain masters of Canada and Nova Scotia. They will make the jealousy of this people [the Americans people], which could well turn elsewhere, and make them feel the necessity of having guarantors, allies and protectors*⁸⁷". And who would these "allies" and "protectors" be? Devinez qui? Guess who?! The French of course⁸⁸! That's what some sorcerer's apprentices thought.

⁸⁶ ● In fact, it took just over 89 years for the population of the United States to exceed that of France. That was in 1870. And by 1875, the United States overtook Germany.

⁸⁷ ● In fact, it took just over 89 years for the population of the United States to exceed that of France. That was in 1870. And by 1875, the United States overtook Germany. Bancroft, George, annoté par Adolphe de Circourt, *History of the Joint Action of France and America for the Independence of the United States*, published in Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. The 3rd volume contains historical documents. This important document is Vergennes' letter to Montmorin, written on 17 Oct 1778. Vol. III, pp. 310-311. Segments in italics were not highlighted in the original text.

⁸⁸ ● The British followed a similar strategy when they created tiny states that abounded in precious oil (Kuwait, Abu Dhabi, Ajman, Dubai, Brunei,... and even Arabia, large in extent but small in population). They thus became the "protectors" of this energy. When

Thus, this curious policy of France was based on the concept that: **1)** England absolutely had to be detached from its Thirteen Colonies, which would in time become very powerful and allow English Merchant Lobbies —if this country kept its Empire— to tyrannize Europe and not only the rest of the World. **2)** In order for the Thirteen Colonies —which were as mercantile as England—, not to end up themselves tyrannizing the World, Canada had to remain English not only to prevent the United States from becoming "*continental*," and therefore too powerful, but to keep a jealous guard dog [England] watching over them, and forcing the United States to maintain a defensive alliance with France for a long time to come.

As for Spain, a not very active ally of France for various perfectly justified reasons⁸⁹, it quickly allowed itself to be convinced of the French plan, because thus the United States were entirely contained and limited by the south border (part of Spanish Florida), by the West border (Louisiana was Spanish since the Seven Years' War), and by the North border (Canada and Nova Scotia which had been abandoned to England by the French). *By this strategy which consisted in leaving Canada to England and Florida to Spain, "the Americans will be contained beyond the necessary to prevent them from becoming enterprising and inconvenient to their neighbors"*⁹⁰.

England became a mere auxiliary state of the United States, it was the Americans who played this role of big brother in the exploitation.

⁸⁹ • The Spanish monarchy was suffering from schizophrenia: On the one hand it wanted to weaken England but on the other hand, it did not want to help its subjects to revolt against their King. Spain feared that these new United States would set a bad example for its own colonies, and, moreover, feared that this independent country would become too powerful to the point of endangering its empire; This was also the case. Fifty years later, the United States began to tear away huge chunks of the Spanish Empire.

⁹⁰ • Bancroft, Letter from Vergennes to Montmorin, Nov. 2, 1778. Vol. III, p. 312. 2

This curious policy of North American equilibrium was, as we have said, inspired by the old Choiseul who, without being consulted, continued to influence the foreign policy of France in its spiral of decline⁹¹. According to him, France should only keep the fisheries of Newfoundland: "I wanted to realize what I would advise the King if he consulted me about the position of his affairs... I know of only one ally to whom he should communicate his secret determinations, *Spain*, because the United-States of America must in my opinion be considered as a means to achieve the views one may have against England rather than as allies... I believe that it is appropriate for France to have only islands in America and to have only what is useful for the defense and trade of her kingdom..."

In this part of the world, "there is a cod fishery that brings in to the kingdom of France about 20 million pounds a year and which would bring in *even more* if the fishermen of France did not have each year more or less to fear bullying (humiliations) from the English, either in their fisheries, or in their *sècheries* (drying facilities) which would have been specially reserved to the French in an article of the Treaty of Utrecht, by which France ceded to England the island of Newfoundland. Each year of peace, England sends warships to Newfoundland to protect English fishing but above all to disrupt the fishing of the French nation.

English fishing ships have harbors which serve them as shelters and meeting points. France cannot send ships to this part, as France has no harbors in this area, so that the French fishermen are at the mercy of the English

⁹¹ • Mémoires du duc de Choiseul, 1719-1785, Librairie Plon-Nourrit et Cie, Paris, 1904. Plan of campaign against England written around 1778-1779, pp. 427-431.

forces. There are brawls between the fishermen, vexations; an object of covetousness always involves disputes.

In peace time, one carries the complaints to the Court of England. The verifications of these complaints are done with a calculated slowness. It always results, from these verifications in London, that the Frenchmen are wrong and, as the French are not determined to make a war for a point which seems of little interest at the moment, for a peccadillo, to use a trivial but rather appropriate expression, the discussion is wearily abandoned, and the French fisherman who has suffered the disadvantage and to whom Justice has not been done is disgusted and does not go fishing any more." Thus, Choiseul only recommends the recovery of Newfoundland and Île Royale⁹², to house a naval squadron to protect the French fishermen of Newfoundland.

When one evokes this amphigoric and stringy strategy of the old Choiseul⁹³, warmed by Vergennes in the flamboyant salons of Versailles, which led to the abandonment of the French peoples of North America, one cannot help but think of all those Acadians, all those Canadians, all those Micmac Indians, all those Terreneuviens [Newfoundlanders], all those Indians of Pontiac who offered their lives during centuries for this dear France, so

⁹² •Île Royale —now Cape Breton Island— had the excellent harbour of Louisbourg, whose fortress had been demolished and whose ashlar had been used to build the fortifications of Halifax. But this roadstead, or another, could easily have been restored to a state of defense.

⁹³ •At the time of writing this letter, Choiseul (1719-1785) was only 59 years old, a venerable age at that time when human longevity did not reach 40 years. He died 7 years later, having destroyed the 1st French Empire in North America. Curiously, many streets bear the name of Choiseul in France and, paradoxically, a lake in Quebec. His work, the Treaty of Paris which ended the Seven Years' War "marks the beginning of a more than bi-secular decline of France, at least from the point of view of power" [Emmanuel Le Roy Ladurie]

generous for centuries towards its selfish Nobility, its parasitic clergy, and (even in this XX and XXI centuries) these French Politicians only concerned with their career as traitors to their Nation.

Thus, we can line up the following few hypotheses:

- If, **before** the US War of Independence, France had declared its wish to recover Canada, the Thirteen Colonies would have been afraid, would have refused to separate from England. As a result, England, swollen with the Thirteen Colonies, would have become the most powerful country in the world in less than 90 years⁹⁴. This gigantic country would have tyrannized Europe and especially France, then the great economic competitor of England.
- If France had declared, **during** the War of Independence, that it wanted to invade Canada on its own behalf, thus violating the Franco-American Treaty of Alliance, the United States would have tried to prevent the invasion and would have approached England, to create a defensive alliance against France. The French government did not want this option.
- If France had helped the United States to conquer Canada—which the United States deeply desired (and that French diplomats did not dare to refuse officially)—the United States would have finally become a continental country (what was exactly the Americans wanted when they created this continental country), gigantic and

⁹⁴ ● It was indeed in 1870 that the United States reached the population of France (38 million at the time). Germany (40 million) reunified by Bismarck had just passed France which was stalling at 38 million. In 1900, the United States reached twice the population of France (76 million); in 1930 the triple; in 1960 the quadruple; and in the year 2000 the quintuple.

overpowering the whole of Europe. France did not want this option.

- If France procrastinated in helping the United States (as it did) to conquer Canada, the Americans, insufficiently powerful would fail in their attempt. Thus, Canada would remain in the hands of England, which would retain a threatening role against the United States, and which would limit (out of jealousy) the expansionist ambitions of the United States. While France could remain the ally of the Americans, eager to retain its friendship and protection for the US in front of England. That dream was a French utopia.



This permanent intimidating threat of England on the independent United States seems so derisory to us today when we see the English Government, always anxious to slavishly please Washington in order to keep its friendship and its protection. This threat probably penetrated the spirit of the English diplomats, since George III had written to Lord North in 1778 (as previously mentioned), when the direct intervention of France was beginning to comprehend the loss of its North American empire: "I will never accept in any treaty whatsoever, to mention a single word about Canada, Nova Scotia or the Floridas, for it is by them that we are able to keep a certain fear on the abandoned colonies, in which large garrisons must be permanently kept⁹⁵," probably in the hope of recovering these colonies one day.

⁹⁵ ● Letters of William Lee, Sheriff and Alderman of London, Commercial Agent of the Continental Congress in France, and Minister to the Courts of Vienna and Berlin, 1766-1783, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, Historical Printing Club, Brooklyn NY, 1891. Vol.II, p. 405 footnote. Letter of 26 March 1778 from King George

This desperate statement came from a King consumed with the fear that his reign would be tarnished by the loss of his North American Empire. George III had signed the *Treaty of Paris* (in 1763), which marked the highlighted *climax* of his reign. But 20 years later he was still in power to sign another *Treaty of Paris* (in 1783) that would plunge him into the most ignominious despair, despair which will make him *demented* in the evening of his life. But the Providence was going to maintain him on his throne until 1820 and so he would have the happiness to see his revenge accomplished by the fall of Napoleon, even if the Russians, the Prussians and the Austrians were the main gravediggers of the First French Empire and its *Grande Armée*, while the English would linger as long as possible in Spain, Portugal and Sicily, in other words, far from Napoleon's main theaters of war operations⁹⁶.

In any case, to return to the strategic hypotheses in North America mentioned above, this was, in a way, the last assumption that was partly fulfilled. Indeed, the United States became so powerful that they very quickly imposed their every wish on England, which ended up becoming their submissive and unconditional Ally⁹⁷.

III to Lord North. "I will never consent that in any treaty that may be concluded, a single word be mentioned concerning Canada, Nova Scotia, or the Floridas, which are colonies belonging to this country; and the more they are kept unlike the other colonies the better, for it is by them we are able to keep a certain awe over the abandoned colonies, where good garrisons must be continually kept."

⁹⁶ ●As did the Americans during World War II (they landed in North Africa), leaving the Russians the role of breaking the Wehrmacht, despite Stalin's repeated demands that the Americans open a second front on the Atlantic coast. In the end, it was the fear of seeing Western Europe Sovietized, like Eastern Europe, that forced the Americans to open this famous front.

⁹⁷ ●As mentioned above, the United States surpassed France demographically in 1870 (only 90 years later), after some attempts at reconquest (see the four English defeats at New Orleans in 1815), and revenge (fire of Washington) on the part of England.

Throughout this War of American Independence, the British used and abused the Americans' phobia of seeing the French Army reoccupy Canada in order to terrorize the Thirteen Colonies into giving up their independence. To this end, they launched incessant, continuous and false rumors that wrongly claimed that France was secretly preparing to take over Canada. This disinformation filled the Canadians and Indians of the Mid-West with hope. The objective of these lies was to frighten the Americans into not breaking the colonial link with England (together we are stronger to fight the French), and at the same time to create mistrust on the honor of the Kingdom of France. According to the French ambassador in Washington, the Alsatian Conrad Gérard: "The English, moreover, endeavored to maintain their old hatreds against the French name. Their constant strategy has been in America, to make us suspicious and in Europe to inspire distrust in us. The advantageous offers that the English offered in Paris to the Minister of the King of France were presented as assured by formal agreements. They claimed that Canada was to be ceded to the King [of France] as the price of his indulgence, and that the French had dealt with the Americans only to prolong the war for the sole purpose of obtaining fruitful concessions from England. The leaders, Monseigneur, seem to have never indulged in such crude illusions; but suspicious minds, accustomed to the greedy and unjust policy of the English, retained suspicions. Several considerable characters speak to me about it with frankness⁹⁸." Thus acted perfidiously the agents of Albion.

⁹⁸ •Dispatch from Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassador of France) to M. de Vergennes (Minister of Foreign Affairs), in Philadelphia on July 25, 1778. Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. p.178



At the announcement of the Franco-American Alliance, which implied the entry of the French-Canadians' former Mother Country into the war, many Americans believed that Canadians would be seduced by a Canadian-American Union. The news was widely spread across Canada in order to influence Canadians who, reluctantly, could not shake from their minds the centuries of horrible warfare with their southern neighbors, when the "Bostonnais" and "Yangais"⁹⁹ sent bands of Iroquois to launch cruel coups against the French villages of Canada. The Canadians were fighting back by launching retaliatory raids, in which they accompanied the Francophile Indians.

During the War of Independence, the Americans wished to influence the Canadians favorably and also the Indians, who, influenced by English agitators, were inexorably devastating the border regions of the Thirteen Colonies¹⁰⁰.

When, on March 29, 1778, Monsieur de Vergennes had given Conrad Gérard, first "unofficial ambassador" of France, his *Memorandum to Sieur Gérard*, Secretary of State, who was to reside in the name of the King of France at the Continental Congress in Philadelphia, the capital of the new country: "The Independence of North America [the United States] and its permanent [political] connection with France, have been the principal aim of the King of France... [To secure both parties] His Majesty agreed to the eventual stipulations contained in this Treaty of

⁹⁹ ● In New France the word Bostonian or Bostonian referred to "the English." The Francophile Indians referred to the English rather as "les Yangais" who gave the word "Yankee."

¹⁰⁰ ● Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 181.

Alliance, and that in the Treaty of Commerce *France has not assured itself of any exclusive advantage...* It is essential that Mr. Gérard convinces Congress of this fact, and that he thereby protect their Government against all suggestions that the English could make to them to bring the Continental Congress to a separate peace¹⁰¹."

Vergennes continues imperturbably, concerning the famous Article IV: "The deputies of the Congress have proposed to the King of France to take the engagement to favor the conquest of Canada, Nova Scotia and the Floridas¹⁰² that the Americans would undertake, and there is reason to believe that the project is very important to the Congress. But the King has considered that *the possession of these three countries, or at least of Canada by England, would be a useful source of anxiety and vigilance for the Americans, that would make them feel more the necessity to have the friendship and the alliance of the King of France. It is not in the interest of the French to suppress this anxiety.* According to this, His Majesty thinks that he should not make any commitment with respect to the Conquest in question. However, if the Congress makes the opening, as is to be presumed, Mr. Gérard will reply that the King of France will always lend himself with alacrity to everything that may be convenient for the United States, and that he will willingly cooperate to the execution of their plan of conquest as far as the circumstances may

¹⁰¹ ●Always Vergennes *in* La Luzerne. The Americans will be tempted to violate this clause by negotiating with the English behind the backs of the French, in contravention of the Franco-American Treaty of Alliance.

¹⁰² ●The current state of Florida was then cut in two by a line that separated Spanish or eastern Florida (the Florida peninsula) from English or western Florida (the current more continental region with the panhandle (pan handle) in which the capital Tallahassee is located.) The north-south boundary between the two Floridas passed through the Tallahassee area. The British had settled in Florida at the end of the Seven Years' War (1763), in exchange for Havana. The Spanish recovered their territory twenty years later in 1783 at the end of the American War of Independence.

permit; but that the uncertainty and variability of these circumstances do not allow him to make a formal commitment.

"Such is the principle which the King of France has adopted with regard to this object; and the intention of His Majesty is that Sieur Gérard should take it as the basis of his allusion and Language. If, however, the Congress should become too impatient and Sieur Gérard judged that the King could not refuse to cooperate with their views without giving rise to suspicion of his goodwill and of the uprightness of his intentions, he could, in this case, condescend to their desires; but by making them understand however that the conquest of Canada should not be an essential condition of the next peace. The Sieur Gérard will feel by himself that this last allusion will have to be made with enough dexterity so that it does not indispose the Congress¹⁰³. *Approved this 29th of March 1778.*"

How to imagine that the ambassador of France could have possessed enough verbal "dexterity" —according to the expression of Vergennes—, so that the Americans did not realize, in the long run, that the French ambassador, Conrad Gérard, was playing a double game. Understanding that the French had a secret project, the Americans

¹⁰³ •The long letter from M. de Vergennes (Minister of Foreign Affairs at Versailles) to Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassador of France), dated March 29, 1778, entitled **MÉMOIRE POUR SERVIR D'INSTRUCTION AU SIEUR GÉRARD, SECRETARY OF STATE GOING TO RESIDE ON BEHALF OF THE KING [OF FRANCE] AT THE GENERAL CONGRESS OF NORTHERN AMERICA**. From Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. pp.128-129. This text, which is crucial for understanding the unusual behaviour of France is also, of course, to be found in the *Recueil des instructions donné aux ambassadeurs et ministres de France, depuis les Traités de Westphalia jusqu'à la Révolution française*, XXV 2 ANGLETERRE, Tome Troisième (1698-1791), avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Editions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965.

came to doubt their good faith and their honesty. The secret plan, they feared, was to take over Canada and reintegrate it into the French Empire. This is what appears in this letter from George Washington to the President of the Continental Congress¹⁰⁴, Henry Laurens. This mailing included an *official letter* that could be shown to the French, and the *secret letter* that follows¹⁰⁵:

"Frederickburgh, November 14th, 1778.

Dear Sir, This shipment is accompanied by an *official letter* concerning the proposed expedition against Canada... I am indeed not without apprehensions... I have an objection to this, which I do not mention in the public letter... It is that, introducing a large body of French troops in Canada, and put them in possession of the capital of this province which is attached to them by all the ties of blood, customs, usages, religion and the ancient ties of Government, would, I fear, create too powerful a temptation for a force motivated by national interest to resist¹⁰⁶. Let us imagine for a moment the striking advantages that France would derive from the possession of Canada."

And here the President enumerates the commercial advantages that France could obtain, monopolization of trade, independence from others. Let us suppose, he said,

¹⁰⁴ ● Laurens had been President of Congress since November 1, 1777..

¹⁰⁵ ● Letter from George Washington to Henry Laurens, November 14, 1778. The Writings of George Washington, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, G.P. Putnam's Sons, The Knickerbocker Press, New York, 1890. 1778-1780. Vol.XIII, pp.254-257.

¹⁰⁶ ● "to be resisted by any power actuated by the common maxims of national policy" At this point, the draft hinted at a redacted sentence; Here is this sentence: [One must] "not add any particular pressure on that spirit of ambition and desire for domination which the enemies of France have led us to believe to be the particular prerogative of this enterprising nation." "to lay no particular stress on that spirit of ambition and love of dominion which the enemies of France have pretended to be peculiarly characteristic of that enterprising nation."

that the French Army occupied Canada and held the country "as a guarantee and security for the debt owed to France by the United States." What would we be left with but "resentment, reproach, and submission"¹⁰⁷." And George Washington wondered quite honestly how France could be capable of playing such a disinterested role: "I am from the bottom of my heart willing to lull myself into the most favorable feelings about our new Ally, and to cherish them in a reasonable degree, but there is a maxim based on the universal experience of Mankind, that *no nation can be trusted beyond its own interests*, and no statesman or politician will venture to overstep this rule. In our case, we must be particularly cautious. Indeed, we have not yet reached sufficient vigor and maturity to recover from the shock of a bad step that would cause our downfall. If France were even to contemplate taking this course [of the conquest of Canada], at first with the purest intentions, there would be the greatest danger that, as the action progresses, invited into it by circumstances, and perhaps incited by the solicitations and wishes of the people of Canada, it might alter its purpose"¹⁰⁸." And George Washington concluded with these words: "I would wish as much as possible, to avoid giving any foreign power any new rights

¹⁰⁷ •Secret letter accompanying an official letter of November 14, 1778, from George Washington to Henry Laurens, President of Congress, since November 1, 1777, from *The Writings of George Washington*, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, G.P. Putnam's Sons, The Knickerbocker Press, New York, 1890. 1778-1780. Vol.XIII, p.254 et seq. «This is the introduction of a large body of French troops into Canada, and putting them in possession of the capital of that Province, attached to them by all the ties of blood, habits, manners, religion and former connection of government. I fear this would be too great a temptation, to be resisted by any power actuated by the common maxims of national policy. Let us realize for a moment the striking advantages France would derive from the possession of Canada.»

¹⁰⁸ •Secret letter of November 14, 1778, accompanying an official letter from George Washington to Henry Laurens, President of Congress, since November 1, 1777, from *The Writings of George Washington*, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, G.P. Putnam's Sons, The Knickerbocker Press, New York, 1890. 1778-1780. Vol.XIII, p.255.

of merit *for services rendered* to the United States, and would ask no assistance unless it be absolutely indispensable¹⁰⁹.

The reply of Henry Laurens, President of the Continental Congress, to George Washington, was written on November 20th, 1778:

"I have good reason to believe that the project of an expedition to Canada in concert with the Arms of France originated in the breast of the Marquis de La Fayette, probably encouraged by consultations with the Count d'Estaing. I also believe that it is the fruit of the purest motives as to the origin [of the idea]. But this is not sufficient to commit my agreement in a field rich in *possibilities of slip-page*. To the small extent that my time and faculties have allowed me to study this question, I have often contemplated our delicate connection with France, and though it is painful to speak of our own sagacity, I foresaw and predicted fifteen months ago the state of humiliation to which our embryonic independence would be reduced by begging this Nation for more money than is necessary for the maintenance of the army and our poor navy. I was one of the six unfortunate opponents to this resolution to borrow money from France to pay the interest on our *Loan Certificates*. We have by this simple article of law plunged the Union into an abyss of debt... and I dreaded the consequences of subjecting our happiness to the will of a powerful creditor, who might for specious reasons reduce our national honor to its destruction. I warned my friends of the danger to mortgage these States in favor of foreign powers. Every million pounds you borrow implies a security on our land, and it is at the option of the creditor to be

¹⁰⁹ •Ibidem, p.254.

repaid to the *Bank of England* with an exorbitant premium, or to seize the money due in any of your ports, and at his own convenience... From there, Your Excellency will perceive what my sentiments are, when the proposals to subdue Canada by means of the French Fleet and the Army were first discussed in my presence. I objected with all my strength to the plans of the Marquis¹¹⁰ and expressed some doubts about the approval of the Congress;... The whole matter was entrusted to a Committee which reported to the Marquis... but the House determined very cautiously to consult the Commander-in-Chief before making the final decision. Despite your observations, Your Excellency, I should be very much mistaken if every Member of Congress did not have an opinion in favor [of the invasion]. If the prosecution of so extensive a project is, for our Army and our financial means, impossible for our part, it becomes at the same time of little need to discuss this plan from a political point of view, and I trust that the Marquis will be satisfied with such reasoning to excuse us from the pursuit of his favorite enterprise, as circumstances dictate... I have always been opposed to all proposals which tended to scatter our forces, and to increase our debt. Events have confirmed my opinion¹¹¹."

Despite all the unfathomable fears of American politicians who wished to receive everything but give nothing¹¹², and the embarrassed reticence of the French,

¹¹⁰ • This is, of course, the Marquis de La Fayette, who at the very beginning of the war wanted France to recover Canada, then, informed of part of the foggy strategy of French diplomats, he opted to conquer Canada for the benefit of the United States, knowing that the Americans were unable to do so without the help of the French..

¹¹¹ • Reply of November 20, 1778, from Henry Laurens, President of Congress, to George Washington's secret letter of November 14, from The Writings of George Washington, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, G.P. Putnam's Sons, The Knickerbocker Press, New York, 1890. 1778-1780. Vol. XIII, p. 257.

¹¹² • For example, New York Governor Morris, the founding father of New York State, wanted the French to conquer Canada, Nova Scotia and Newfoundland for the benefit

scenarios to invade Canada continued throughout the War of Independence. Finally, for the reasons explained very clearly in his letter to Henry Laurens, Washington gave up the second invasion of Canada under the false pretext of technical reasons.

This second invasion which did not take place involved a French squadron sailing up the St. Lawrence River. Canadian Historian Marcel Trudel expressed the fears of the Americans well when he wrote: "In control of New Orleans and Canada, France could easily impose its law on the United States, with the help of the Indian tribes¹¹³." Curious comment, since France was not then the owner of Louisiana, which had been given to Spain by donation of the incapable Louis XV. George Washington thought that this invasion project came from La Fayette, but that the French Diplomatic Services could have suggested the idea to him. What was his purpose? He did not attempt the slightest hypothesis.



As one never catches flies with vinegar, there was no question of letting the French-Canadians, who were the object of so much American covetousness, know that most of the inhabitants of the Thirteen Colonies gnashed their teeth at the mere mention of the adjective "popish" always pronounced with a sneer of hatred or contempt, even though the basic doctrine of Christianity should have been to *love your neighbor as yourself*. The First American Proclamation, intended to seduce the French-Canadian people was issued on October 21st, 1774. It enumerated to

of the United States, and that, as a reward, they would get a larger share of the fisheries and even some land in Newfoundland.

¹¹³ ●Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 199.

the people of Quebec five important privileges under the British Constitution that had not yet been implemented in their Canadian colony more than a decade after the Treaty of Paris of 1763, when the French subjects in Canada had become British subjects, with theoretically the same rights as all other subjects of distant England. These five privileges were: a *representative Government of the people*, *Jury Courts*, *Habeas Corpus*, *the Right to Ownership* and *the Freedom of the press*. The American printer Fleury-Mesplet, published 2,000 copies of the French translation attributed to the Huguenot Pierre du Simitière¹¹⁴.

The Second Proclamation was published on May 10th, 1775¹¹⁵. In its lines, the Congress again deplored the form of government that the Quebec Act had imposed on the Canadians: "a tyranny" that made Canadians "slaves."

The Third Proclamation was issued in September 1775. It announced an American invasion of Canada from Fort Ticonderoga¹¹⁶. Finally, in December, the Americans ran into the thick walls of the fortress of Quebec held by an army of French Canadians, and were repulsed with heavy losses in a humiliating defeat. The proclamation (dated from Île-aux-Noix) announced to the Canadians that the Americans were only after the English and not the French-Canadians. The American commander promised the Canadians and Indians that their lives, their freedom and their property would be respected. Knowing how

¹¹⁴ •A depressing name that sounded a bit like *tombstone* (pierre du cimetière).

¹¹⁵ •«Proclamation of May 10, 1775, following the fighting of April 19 (Lexington and Concord), which saw the Americans force a much larger English army to retreat to Boston.

¹¹⁶ •Fort-Ticonderoga that can still be visited today and where tourists can buy local (made-in-China) souvenirs, bore, under the French, the pretty name of Fort-Carillon. It was on the glacis of this fort that was fought the great battle of Carillon of which the Canadians are so proud, since, at 3,000, they inflicted a humiliating defeat on 15,000 English. The current flag of Quebec is read: Carillon flag.

much Indian rights were violated 10 years earlier¹¹⁷, they were entitled to question these promises.

George Washington, as Supreme Commander, issued his own Proclamation to the Canadians, urging them to join the Americans against England. "*The cause of America and Liberty is the cause of each and every virtuous citizen*"¹¹⁸. "You would think you were listening to the incorruptible Robespierre purifying France with the guillotine, or even President George Bush talking about imposing the holy American democracy (swarming with corrupting lobbyists) to the rogue states at the beginning of the 21st century. General Washington seemed more sincere, he who knew very well the French-Canadians, especially since he had surrendered to them at Fort Necessity 21 years earlier and he had been their prisoner¹¹⁹. George Washington had indeed given Benedict Arnold his "fourteen-point orders," in which he commanded that the French-Canadians, their property, their Catholic religion would be respect. He had even ordered the *punishment by death*, for serious offences inflicted to Canadians¹²⁰... It was out of the question to treat the Canadian papists as badly as they were treated in the Thirteen Colonies or in England.

The two combined invasions of Canadian territory were carried out through Lake Champlain and the Rivière

¹¹⁷ ●During Pontiac's War (1763-64), the British Army had voluntarily spread smallpox among insurgent Indian tribes. See on this subject the Dictionnaire des batailles terrestre franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Sept Ans, by Jean-Claude Castex, Les Presses de l'Université Laval, Québec, 2006.

¹¹⁸ ●Washington, George, Writings, Vol.III, p.478 et seq..

¹¹⁹ ●cf Dictionnaire des batailles franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Sept Ans, by J. C. Castex, Les Presses de l'Université Laval, Québec,

¹²⁰ ●He remembered that the French-Acadians, deported earlier to the Thirteen Colonies in the midst of a Protestant milieu, had been brutalized by the Protestant populace.

Richelieu, towards Montreal, and the other towards Quebec by the Rivières Kennebec and Chaudière.

During the 1775 invasion, Montgomery sailed upstream the St. Lawrence River towards Quebec City, to join up with Arnold's forces (December 2nd). In the meantime, the American army, poorly supplied, was short of ammunition and food¹²¹. The Canadian population, solidly harnessed by the almost absolute control of the Clergy, who brandished excommunication as an axe of war, refused to collaborate openly with the Americans. However, rumors of an American victory reached Philadelphia. The Court of France learned the false rumor of the complete capture of Canada. At Versailles, Jacob Nicolas Moreau, wrote that Canada had fallen into the hands of the Americans: "It was assured, at the King's Rising, that, in America, the Insurgents had made themselves masters of Quebec and Montreal. The Duke of Gloucester, brother of the King of England, had won his bet. He had wanted to bet, while he was in France, that, *under one year, the English would have lost America*"¹²²."

But despite these good (false) rumors, the American Army was in total disarray: lack of ammunition and food, unwillingness of the Canadian inhabitants to cooperate, aggressive rigor of the Canadian winter; officers going on leave without permission, "those in charge of paying the troops and supplies disappearing"¹²³". Soldiers who had

¹²¹ •French billions were systematically diverted by US politicians to themselves, and the soldiers had to fight under-equipped.

¹²² •Jacob Nicolas Moreau, *Mes souvenirs*, Plon, Paris, 1901. Moreau was the librarian to the Queen of France

¹²³ •Trudel, p107.

finished their contracts¹²⁴ threatened to return home. Schuyler did not even know what his numbers were¹²⁵.

On December 31st, 1775, at about 5:00 a.m., Montgomery launched his assault against the fortress of Quebec City in the midst of a terrible snowstorm. Canadians were more accustomed to this kind of blizzard than the Americans. Montgomery was killed. As a result, his soldiers fled. As for Arnold's troops, they were attacked and captured by the French-Canadians. This setback led to the demoralization of the Americans. Many of their officers retreated with their units to Montreal.

On January 2nd, 1776, Arnold had only 800 American soldiers left, the bravest, including the French-Canadian regiment of 200 (the survivors). The passivity of the English general Carleton encouraged Arnold to continue his hopeless siege. Consequently, this American defeat at Quebec triggered a real effort by Congress to draw the French-Canadians into revolt. But the Catholic Clergy was holding the people in an iron grip. They tapped the fingers of the offenders, inflicted a few infernal threats on the minds of the stubborn, a few excommunications against the most intractable, and... the uprising failed.

The Commissioners of the Congress arrived in Montreal on April 29th, 1776, but despite apparent sympathies, the talks failed because the Clergy would not listen. It seemed as if the cautious Clergy had gotten information that France was opposed to England being driven out of Canada. Moreover, to celebrate the American defeat at

¹²⁴ ●The American militiamen who formed the basis of the U.S. Army were under contract. Normally, they were required to serve in the territory of the Thirteen Colonies and even within the limits of their country.

¹²⁵ ●Letters to Washington, p.187. Letter from Schuyler to Washington of April 12th, 1776, in which he admits that he does not know the numerical state of his workforce.

Quebec, Bishop Briand, anxious to make amends for his political hesitations, had a *Te Deum* celebrated. Franklin, disappointed, left after ten days in Montreal¹²⁶. The American troops were at the end of their resistance: famine, negligence of the American commander (Wooster), epidemic of smallpox that worried the soldiers, and finally, to top it all off, an English squadron arrived in Quebec City on May 6th with General John Burgoyne and the first elements of an army of 9,000 Scots and Germans; no English. The Commissioners Carroll and Chase denounced the situation and returned to Philadelphia after forcing the English merchants to supply his American army. Himself faced with mounting setbacks, Arnold looted the Montréal stores¹²⁷ and retreated on June 17th, 1776, to Saint-Jean-sur-Richelieu.

On the 18th, the retreating Americans army passed the fort on Île-aux-Noix, and then marched on Fort Carillon at Ticonderoga. The whole expedition was a total failure [a real prefiguration of the American evacuations in Vietnam and Afghanistan]. "Our army is now at *Pointe-à-la-Chevelure*¹²⁸, but still half of the force is out of action, contaminated by smallpox¹²⁹." The Continental Congress set

¹²⁶ • Benjamin Franklin was already 70 years old and had a great reputation when he arrived in Montreal during the short American occupation. He tried to win over the Canadians, but the Clergy was watching. He was accompanied by two other emissaries of the Continental Congress, Samuel Chase and Charles Carroll. According to the Château Ramezay Museum website, Carroll writes that they were very well received by Arnold (who had returned to Montreal in mid-April) and that they were staying in the house of Thomas Walker. Fleury Mesplet joined them on May 6th with his printing equipment. When the emissaries left, Mesplet decided to stay in Montréal. On June 3rd, 1778, he founded *La Gazette du commerce et littéraire*, the first French-language newspaper in Montréal.

¹²⁷ • Letters to Washington, p. 187. Letter from Arnold to Schuyler, June 6, 1776. Military stores or warehouses.

¹²⁸ • Crown Point or Pointe-à-la-Chevelure for the French, in the State of New York, en souvenir d'un scalp.

¹²⁹ • Letter from Jefferson to Francis Eppes, written in Philadelphia on July 15, 1776. The Works, vol.2 (1771-1779).

up an administrative inquiry to find the causes of this failure.

Three causes were identified: the enlistment of American troops for a *fixed period* of time, which resulted in their departure *without permission at the end of the contract*; *the lack of funds to buy food*, and finally a *smallpox epidemic* that momentarily put half of the American Army's strength temporarily out of action. It was rumored that it was the English who had spread this disease in the American Army, as they had done against the Indians during the *Pontiac War* in 1764. Moreover, in 1786, Jefferson directly accused Carleton, the English leader, of having committed this crime¹³⁰. The accusation, though impossible to substantiate, remained within the realm of the *likely* and even of the *probable*, since the smallpox epidemic only ravaged the American army. The investigation also revealed that some American officers had not shown the most fighting spirit: "You ask how Arnold behaved at Cedars? The scoundrel Major Butterfly capitulated with his 390 soldiers, entrenched in the fort with 20 to 30 days of food supplies and plenty of ammunition. He capitulated before losing a single man of his 40 professional soldiers, surrounded by 100 French Canadian volunteers and 500 Indians¹³¹."



¹³⁰ ● The Writings of Thomas Jefferson: Being his Autobiography, Correspondence, Reports, Messages, Addresses, and Other Writings, Official and Private: Published by the Order of the Joint Committee of Congress on the Library, from the Original Manuscripts, Deposited in the Department of State, (first edition of the Jefferson Writings, published by Taylor & Maury in Washington, D.C. XVII, p.140.

¹³¹ ● The Writings of Thomas Jefferson: Being his Autobiography, Correspondence, Reports, Messages, Addresses, and Other Writings, Official and Private: Published by the Order of the Joint Committee of Congress on the Library, from the Original Manuscripts, Deposited in the Department of State, (première édition des Jefferson Writings, published by Taylor & Maury in Washington, D.C. XVII.

1778 Invasion of Canada. Washington was again preparing to invade Canada. While awaiting the green light from Congress and from the *Ad Hoc* Committee. That Committee delivered its report on December 5th. The *Ad Hoc* Committee, who took its wishes for reality, was of the opinion that the British would abandon the whole of North America if the United States obtained independence. The Committee was convinced *that France would help, without which the conquest would be impossible*. He entrusted La Fayette and Franklin with the task of establishing optimal cooperation between the French and the American armies if France sent its Fleet to Quebec and an army in support. Congress approved the whole thing on December 6th, 1778.

In late December 1778, believing that the invasion would not take place, the French Ambassador Gérard tried to awaken Congress and launch an operation in order to create a diversion by dividing the English forces: "I have made it clear that a mere defensive action to contain the enemies in New York would not fulfill the expectations of the Congress, that this plan [of inaction] would dispense the English from increasing their forces,... that there are undoubtedly points susceptible of attack, that a thoughtful and voluntary inaction would be detrimental to the United States in the minds of their present and future allies and would cause astonishment in all of Europe¹³²."

Vergennes, for his part, "considered Canada as a bait to awaken the Americans, and he was convinced that the

¹³² •Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents by the French Institute of Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. p. 178 Dépêche de Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassadeur de France) à M. de Vergennes (Ministre des Affaires Étrangères), à Philadelphie le 25 juillet 1778

Congress would never succeed in its enterprise of conquest. He thus approved the tactic of Gerard¹³³ of keeping busy American troops in all-out attacks on English possessions and even Canada. "I think like you, Sir, that *if the [English] evacuated New York and Rhode Island, inertia would soon overtake the Americans, they would only be occupied with the care of enjoying the rest which this event would bring to them and, to all appearances, they would see us quietly bearing the whole burden of the war.* You will judge from this that I cannot but approve the course you have taken in presenting a new bait to the Congress, by making them look to Canada. But I am persuaded that they will never attempt this enterprise, because it is unlikely that the English will resolve (as the Americans presuppose it), to abandon the only two points [Canada and Nova Scotia] which they still occupy in Northern America." Moreover, Spain "is not favorable to the desire of Congress to invade Canada¹³⁴."

Attempted Invasion of Canada. On June 21st, 1779, Spain who intended to take advantage of the war to wrest Gibraltar from England, declared war on the latter. But La Fayette, who did not know the grandiose strategic plans of Vergennes and of the specter of Choiseul, still hoped to conquer Canada for the benefit of the United States with the help of the French.

"Vergennes, reassured by the Diplomat Gérard that the Americans would never succeed in conquering Canada

¹³³ •Trudel, Marcel, *La Révolution américaine (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 201.

¹³⁴ •Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. p. 178 Dépêche de M. de Vergennes (Ministre des Affaires Étrangères) à Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassadeur de France) à Versailles le 19 février 1779. p. 536

without the French¹³⁵, and that it would always be easy "with some ruse" to make the conquest a failure, had practically encouraged La Fayette to launch an action in the fall of 1779. The French were always anxious to stimulate and energize the Americans, who tended to be lulled by peace, and, from 1780 on, to abandon the fight to the French. If the United States wished to keep the hope of concluding one day a peace based on friendship with England, it seemed necessary to annex Canada. And Canadian historian Marcel Trudel¹³⁶ cites in support of this hypothesis, the very words of Benjamin Franklin, who wrote that, if Canada remained England's possession, peace between the two countries could only be an armed peace: "Perhaps you might, by virtue of your treaty, keep all (Canada, Nova Scotia and the Floridas)¹³⁷. But if you wanted to have in America a truly friendly as well as capable ally, and avoid all future occasions of discord, which otherwise will continually arise on the American frontiers, you should give yourself these countries, these lands. And you might call it, if you please, compensation for the destruction of our cities by fire; which compensation will otherwise be demanded sooner or later¹³⁸." The distant future did not confirm this opinion.

La Fayette, who was not in the secret of the gods of French diplomacy [probably because he was too young], also learned later, not the real cause, but the pretext of the reticence of the French: "The French Ministry... refused

¹³⁵ •Trudel, Marcel, *La Révolution américaine (1775-1783)*, Éd. du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 209.

¹³⁶ •Ibidem. p. 140

¹³⁷ •The Florida peninsula was then divided into two Floridas, West Florida to the north and East Florida (the peninsula). One belonged to England and the other to Spain.

¹³⁸ •Wharton, Francis, Letter from Franklin to James Hutton written at Passy (France) on February 1, 1778, *Revolutionary Diplomatic Corr. of the United States*, Government Printing Office, Washington, 1889. 6 t. Tome II, p. 484

the conquest of Canada, under the pretext that before adding a fourteenth state to those which had declared themselves independent, it was advisable to deliver the thirteen others from the yoke of the English. Mr. Necker feared everything that could increase the expenses or prolong the war¹³⁹. The Americans found themselves in a dilemma: certainly, they wished to annex Canada, by force, if necessary, but they knew that without the help of the French they would not be able to conquer it. Moreover, as mentioned above, they feared at most that this fourteenth potential state falls into the hands of the French, if, by chance, the latter seized it on behalf of the Americans. We hope, if the war continues, that Canada will be wrested from the hands of the British. This could easily be accomplished by invasion by sea and land, provided our finances permit us to maintain an army... If such a strategy is adopted, France must give us the most unequivocal assurances that this country does not intend to return to governing Canada, but to integrate this country into the United States. It is in its interest, and it is so consistent with the basic principles of the Alliance, that I have no doubt that France intends to do so, and it will only be necessary to make France's intentions known in the most explicit manner, at least to us¹⁴⁰."

¹³⁹ ●Mémoires, correspondance et manuscrits du général La Fayette 31 décembre 1777-4 mai 1781 publiés par sa famille - H. Fournier aîné (Paris) - 1837-1838. Tome. I, p.256.

¹⁴⁰ ●Sparks, Jared, The works of Benjamin Franklin, containing several political and historical tracts, not included in any former edition, and many letters official and private, not hitherto published with Notes and a Life of the Author, Volume VIII, Hilliard, Gray and Co., Boston, 1840. Letter of Samuel Cooper (1725-1783) to Benjamin Franklin, 4 janvier 1779. p. 308. Il s'agit d'un pasteur de Boston qui correspondit avec Franklin et non pas de celui qui avait participé à la Boston Tea Party. «We hope, if the war continues,... that Canada will be wrested from the British power. This may be easily done by a joint invasion by sea and land, provided our finances will allow us to support an army... If such a plan of operations is adopted, France must give us the most unequivocal assurances, that she means not to resume the government of Canada, but to incorporate it with the United States. This is her true interest, and is so agreeable to the

La Fayette's False Proclamation (in 1780). At the beginning of the year 1780, news came of the landing of the Count of Rochambeau's French Army. The plans to invade Canada began to bloom like primroses, in France and in the Thirteen Colonies. General George Washington—who no longer wanted the French to invade Canada for fear that they would not be able to resist the temptation to keep this beautiful French country for themselves—, decided to strategically use this *false prospect* to deceive and frighten the English. He hoped that the English troops still occupying the United States would withdraw to protect their Canadian rear base. The supreme military leader [George Washington] of the American troops, therefore, asked La Fayette to write a false Proclamation in French that would not mislead the Canadians—since they would never read it—but the English, by arranging through a leak due to the always very active and successful espionage, to reveal the terms of this Proclamation in English circles in New York and elsewhere. It invited the Canadians to rally to the fleur-de-lis flag¹⁴¹. At this last mention, the English invaders who were afraid of losing Canada as well, could not resist the urge to turn back.

After reporting to La Luzerne, La Fayette drafted the Proclamation and explained its purpose as follows: "I have the honor to inform you, M. le Chevalier, that in order to deceive the enemies about the object of our expedition, General Washington desires me to make a project of Proclamation to the people of Canada. This document will be printed in the greatest secrecy, but care will be taken to get it through New York. As for the other copies, they will be

principles and basis of the alliance, that I have not the least doubt she intends it, and it will only be needful to make known her intentions in the most explicit manner, at least to us.»

¹⁴¹ •The fleur-de-lis spangled banner.

thrown into the fire at the arrival of the French troops. Thus, I can write whatever I please in a work destined never to be published¹⁴²." It had first been thought to entrust La Fayette and Conway to command this fictitious invasion of Canada. But La Fayette did not like Conway because the latter was against his chief George Washington.



At the beginning of 1781, General John Sullivan, strongly solicited by Moses Hazen, wrote an address to Congress to invade Canada: "Gentlemen,... the enemy [the English] are in full control of two States¹⁴³. He occupies important places in several others, and still holds the Province of Canada, which contains more territory than the entire Thirteen States. This province, which encircles almost all of them, must, because of its situation and the growth of its inhabitants, soon become sufficient, united to the naval forces of Great Britain, to deprive us of those privileges for which we have so long fought for¹⁴⁴." The invitation was passionate, and Sullivan offered himself, of course, as commander-in-chief of this invading army.

The following month of the same year, 1781, another project for the invasion of Canada was put forward by the Reverend [pastor] Jacob Bailey in a letter to Congressman Richard Howley. But Howley advocated General Gates to

¹⁴² ● Letters from Lafayette to Luzerne, 1780-1782. Au Quartier-Général. Dans *American Historical Review*, Edited by Waldo G. Leland, Vol. XX, Nos 2 and 3, January and April 1915, p. 349. Letter from La Fayette to La Luzerne, May 25, 1780. p. 349

¹⁴³ ● Georgia and South Carolina. The news wasn't going fast. In fact, Cornwallis only retained the coasts of these territories.

¹⁴⁴ ● Sullivan John, Letters and Papers of Major-General John Sullivan, Continental Army, published by Q.G. Hammond, volumes XIII (1930), XIV (1931), XV (1939), Collections of the New Hampshire Historical Society. Vol. III, p. 313, and quoted by Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 225.

command the invasion. The dispute immediately erupted with General John Sullivan, mad with jealousy. It was not a good idea, because Sullivan was forced to retire, pushed out by his misappropriation of French money intended for the US army. In France, "Vergennes also received, in July 1781, an invitation to conquer Canada. It came to him from the Sulpician Pierre Huet de La Valinière, former parish priest of Canada, whom Governor Haldimand had had him dismissed¹⁴⁵" for his opposition to the system of collaboration with the English colonial authorities. He had gone to France. Valinière had of course sided with the United States. Disappointed with the behavior of his country of origin *which took so little account of its own national interests*, Pierre Huet de La Valinière returned to Canada in 1798.



And so the years passed and also the chances of the Canadians to return back into the bosom of France. It is true that a few years later, when the French Revolution broke out and the ecclesiastical refugees (who had miraculously saved their heads from the Paris guillotine) immigrated and flocked to Canada, the Canadian Clergy could only congratulate themselves for having spared the Canadian people the follies of revolutionary sectarianism and anti-clerical fanaticism. This satisfaction lasted until the end of the First French Empire celebrated in the Province of Quebec by numerous *Te Deums*. And when an Englishman, refugee from the United States driven out by the independence of the Thirteen Colonies, named a village in Quebec *Waterloo* in 1822, out of spite against the French

¹⁴⁵ ●Trudel, Marcel, *La Révolution américaine (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p.227.

who had been the source of his personal misfortunes, the French-Canadian Clergy, who also hated the *antichrist Napoleon*¹⁴⁶, did not oppose it.

The opposition of some French Canadians to the American annexation of Canada was reinforced when the Illinois was conquered by the American army. Kaskaskia, the capital of French Illinois, as well as Vincennes (which the *Quebec Act* had annexed to the Province of Quebec), were conquered on July 6th, 1778, by the Americans, to the great joy of the French-speaking population which strutted with fervor. Illinois changed hands twice before finally remaining in American hands. However, in spite of the promises of the latter, the French of Illinois do not seem to have obtained full satisfaction, for in 1780, the French ambassador to Philadelphia, La Luzerne, received a bitter-sweet petition laced with wry humor, regret and even despair:

The State of Virginia, "driven by a zeal too ardent towards us –a zeal that can also be called indiscreet–, has sent us about 200 men dressed as the Graces, half naked. The warriors thus equipped marched under the orders of Colonel Clark, who came to free us and to remove some officers supported by a very small division of English soldiers. Your Excellency will see hereafter the result of this unofficial step. These troops came, they said, on behalf of the French, from the Continental Congress. From then on, no one to resist. On the contrary, one joined them, one went to the front, we enlisted under their banners. They helped them to capture the English. We restrained the Indians who could not stand them. We finally stripped ourselves in favor of a nation that claimed to be an ally of

¹⁴⁶ •Napoleon had Pope Pius VII arrested

France. The gratitude is always a virtue. Your Excellency will judge how much the Virginians honored it. They had nothing more urgent than to infect this country with their paper money—which they claimed was equivalent in value to the metal species— paper money which we have had the good grace to accept as such.

"They bought all our goods, our horses, our provisions, with their so-called money, and when we were no longer able to provide them, they had the audacity to invade, armed, the public mills and the granaries of the houses, and to remove by force the flour or grain destined to feed us. Not satisfied with this violence, they thought they had to allow themselves another kind; spreading in our meadows, they killed our horned animals with muskets, our pigs in the streets, in the barnyards... Oh! these Virginians! If this is the way you act with the ancient and faithful subjects of a powerful King [Louis XVI], your ally, if this is how you want to enrich us, to free us, to make us happy, please abandon us to the rigors of our fate! If this is the way you treat your friends, what treatment do you intend for your enemies¹⁴⁷?" The American soldiery was thus behaving as badly in Illinois as they had in Laurentian Canada, and the Canadians were not at all attracted to their company, so that most of them no longer felt any desire to see them in their country.



One wonders what the reception of the Canadians would have been when they saw such a man as La Fayette in 1776 or Rochambeau's French Expeditionary Force

¹⁴⁷ ●Memorial of the Inhabitants of Vincennes to the French Minister Luzerne , 22 août 1780, dans George Rogers Clark Papers 1771-1781, édité with Introduction and Notes by James Alton James, Illinois State Historical Library, Springfield Illinois, 1912. pp.439-447.

after 1778. Would they have welcomed them as liberators, or would they have remained prisoners of the threat of excommunication launched by their Clergy against the strong heads? The famous historian Marcel Trudel who asked this question, thought that there was "no doubt that Bishop Briand would have demanded of his people the same fidelity to the oath of allegiance [to the King of England, of course]" with the same obedience as the Iranians to their Ayatollahs.

But this Canadian people, who, on the whole, had not transgressed the bishop's defenses during the American invasion, but had not acceded to the bishop's invitation to enlist in Carleton's Militia, this people, neutral in 1775 because they were hesitant or apathetic, what would they have done in front of La Fayette¹⁴⁸? Trudel is careful not to give any answer; but it seems obvious that this people would have fallen into the arms of the French. The apprehension of the Americans in this field was relevant. La Fayette could have shouted, vociferated, and stormed, the Canadians would never have let the French regiments and their *fleurdelisé* flags leave. And assuming that the French soldiers had gone south, England *could not have retaliated immediately for these hesitations*, because of the American threat, England which by the *Quebec Act* had momentarily granted the Canadian people much more than it had granted in England itself to the enslaved and dehumanized Papist minority.

Thereafter, as soon as the American danger had been removed, the English colonial Government tightened its grip¹⁴⁹ on French-speaking Canadians, and some day-

¹⁴⁸ •Trudel, Marcel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976.

¹⁴⁹ •By trying to cheat on electoral representation and assimilate Canadians...

dreaming English soldiers even spoke of *flat-bottomed cannon boats and gunships to pulverize French-Canadian villages* traditionally built along the rivers. England showed no appreciation for the Catholic clergy. Pragmatic and utilitarian minds see nothing but opportunism to be grabbed. It remains unquestionable that the most determining cause of the American failure in the conquest of Canada was the iron hand of the French-Canadian clergy who shamelessly punished the few recalcitrant priests, who threw *Te Deum* to the wind to celebrate the American failures, and various excommunications dreaded by the masses to discredit the strong heads. The French Canadians who, against all odds, chose rebellion, had to follow the Americans in their retreat into exile, like the Spanish "*afrancesados*"¹⁵⁰ of the First Empire and the French "*kol-labos*" at the end of World War II. For the Americans, leaving Canada to France was not a better choice than abandoning it to England, because the size of the Province of Quebec closed the *Pays d'en Haut* to them, i.e. *all the fur zones*. The *French Communist Party* which collaborated with the Nazis from 1939 to 1941 and helped the Germans to invade half of France, was never punished for this crime which allowed Hitler to martyr the jews, because the Communists redeemed themselves by fighting well from 1941 to 1945



¹⁵⁰ • Los *afrancesados* = the Frenchized; the Spaniards who had collaborated with the French until 1813-1814 and who withdrew to France following the French Army in full retreat.

CHAPTER 6

The Battle of Saratoga, the so-called turning point. Importance of the Battle of Saratoga. Decision of the French to intervene. Various causes of the French intervention. Reception of the French soldiers in America.

The revolt of the Americans against their King raised in France a great enthusiasm within the French population tired of seeing the Court of France, the Nobility as well as the Clergy, squander without shame the fruit of their sweat and labor. Faced with the abuses of these privileged castes, France was then worked by the heavy propaganda of *the Enlightenment* with its ideals of *liberty*, *equality* and *fraternity* that a jealous, greedy and egoistic Bourgeoisie tried to exacerbate. Its objective was to push "les Misérables" on the barricades, so that they, the bourgeois, could put on the comfortable slippers of this vain and disgraced Nobility. Only six years after having upset the Thirteen Colonies, this liberal bubbling was going to overthrow the French society. Thus, "the liberal line of force triumphed with the ideas of Voltaire and the guillotine of Robespierre, two commoners animated by resentment¹".

From the beginning of the American agitation, the French had brought their help to the Thirteen Colonies, some by ideal of Liberty, others to return to England the torment this country had inflicted on the French by stirring up insurrections in several regions of France: Huguenot agitation in Southern and Western provinces and later

¹ ● Onfray, Michel, *Les Ultras des Lumières*, Contre-histoire de la philosophie, t.4, Grasset & Fasquelle, Paris, 2007. p. 305.

Catholic uprising in southern Brittany (Vendée), Aristocrats's treason in Toulon, etc... The religion did not matter much in this rivalry of jealousy, the essential was to create obstacles to the well-being of the country and its trade.

Curiously, *the ideal of the Enlightenment* was so compelling, so bewitching, so charismatic, that even the young nobility was hypnotized and infected. Like gnats on a summer's evening, they went to burn their wings to these incandescent *lights*. The son of a Minister, Monsieur de Ségur, wrote on May 19th, 1782, the following incredible letter (*incredible* under the pen of an aristocrat): "In the bosom of an absolute monarchy, one sacrifices everything to vanity, to the desire of fame which one names love of the Glory, and that one cannot call love of the Fatherland in a country where a small number of people, precariously raised to Great Employments by the will of a master, have the only parts in the Legislation and the Administration in a country where the public thing is only the private thing, where the Royal Court is everything, and the Nation nothing... It is not because of talent but because of favors that one advances. It is more profitable to make oneself pleasant to the Power than useful to the Country... Although young, I have already passed through many trials, and I have come back from many mistakes. The arbitrary power weighs on me. The Liberty, for which I am going to fight, inspires me a strong enthusiasm. And I would like that my country could enjoy that [Freedom] which is compatible with our monarchy, our position and our morals... I do not feel any other passion than that to deserve the suffrages of public opinion, not as it is, but as it should be, opinion, for

example, of a free people of which a wise man would be the legislator²."

Beautiful, generous and lucid thoughts of a young nobleman full of ideal who had not yet been withered by the selfishness of his environment languishing of privileges. But most of the aristocrats of France, like the brother of Louis XVI—future Louis XVIII—, were reluctant to encourage the people to revolt against their King, and this same prince even made a disparaging remark to the famous privateer John Paul Jones, a Scottish officer in the *Marine Royale* but future founder of the *US Navy*, comparing Jones to the rebel George Washington: "Don't go raising trophies for Cartouche Washington³," he once said. How could one allow oneself to encourage the beggars to revolt? he also added.

King Louis XVI himself was opposed to this American-style *jacquerie-revolt*. It was only reluctantly —by weakness more than by conviction— that he let aid pass to the Americans and that he allowed the American privateers to take shelter in French ports. He consoled himself by thinking that it was only retaliation since the English privateers were attacking French merchantmen. But when Franklin moved to Passy, in the suburbs of Paris, the last dykes of resistance of Louis XVI were swept away, more by irresolution than by intellectual adherence to the official aid. Silas Deane, agent of the Continental Congress in Paris, was active passing money, arms, and then volunteers. The King literally gave in to public opinion out of weakness... as he will do down to the guillotine.

² •Comte de Ségur, *Memoirs or Memories and anecdotes*, Book 1, Alexis Eymery, Libraire-Éditeur, Paris, 181824. p.323 The letter of Louis-Philippe, Count of Ségur was written in the harbour of Brest, aboard LA GLOIRE, on May 19, 1782.

³ •Louis Dominique Cartouche (1693-1721) was a Parisian who became a legendary highwayman.

Other French aristocrats who adhered totally to the ideas of revolution of subjects against their King, realized their mistake when it was too late. The duke of Castries, who fought for the independence of the United States, understood afterwards that he had fought in favor of the French Revolution: "Nothing could open our eyes in this disastrous war. We never saw —at least the young men— all that was immoral about it⁴." Among the French officers who fought for the ideal of Liberty on the side of the Americans, "a very large number of them, to tell the truth, were later hostile to any idea of reform in France and were not even ashamed to take up arms against their Homeland to fight the French Revolution. They had not foreseen at first the consequences of their acts, and this contradiction in their conduct is a new proof of *the power of the ideas* spread in France and under the impulse which they had taken up arms, fifteen years before, in favor of Liberty⁵."

Given the indecision of the King of France and of a part of the Nobility, the conduct of France remained equivocal until 1778. The French gave millions in loans, and tolerated the actions of the commercial company of Beaumarchais which armed the Insurgents by smuggling weapons. But at the same time French authorities were unloading smuggled ships, and refused to officially declare themselves in favor of the Americans. This gave a strong impression of hypocrisy.

The young French and European Nobility, preoccupied only with leisure and war, wept with idleness and inaction in the hope of battles and glory. If the English Nobility, enriched by trade, was fighting for the good of the

⁴ •De Castries, Scipion, *Maritime memories*, presented and annotated by Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, p.146. 1

⁵ •Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-83*, Philadelphia, 2 books, 1891-1895.

English economy and thus for their own wealth, in contrast, the French Nobility—forbidden to trade under penalty of falling from its rank⁶—had to be satisfied with glory and laurels. Louis Philippe de Ségur recounted that he was then in the small town of Spa⁷, a spa resort so popular then with European youth that it was nicknamed "*Le Café de l'Europe*", and that it gave the English language a neologism still used today. But let's listen to him:

"In this small town of Spa where so many travelers stayed,... I was singularly struck to see bursting out unanimously such a lively and general interest for the revolt of a people against their King. The American insurrection took everywhere like a fashion: the English clever game, *whist*⁸, was suddenly supplanted in all the salons by a no less serious game called *boston*⁹. This movement, although it seems very light, was a notable omen of the great convulsions to which the whole world was soon to be subjected, and I was far from being the only one whose heart was throbbing at the sound of Liberty's incipient awakening, seeking to shake off the yoke of arbitrary power. Those who have since blamed us should remember that they shared our enthusiasm at the time¹⁰."



To resist England, the United States needed money, arms and alliances. The Continental Congress thought that France, which had just signed *the Treaty of Paris* in 1763 to the sole benefit of England under military pressure from

⁶ Under penalty of being disqualified from Nobility and stripped of all privileges.

⁷ ●Near Verviers, today in Belgium, 25 km from the German border, but at the time in the Holy Roman Empire. It was also an Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire (Joseph II of Lorraine, son of Maria Theresa of Austria and brother of Marie-Antoinette, Queen of France) who nicknamed Spa *Le Café de l'Europe*.

⁸ ●Whist was a variant of the French game « L'écarté. »

⁹ ●The Insurgents were then called in Europe *Les Insurgents* or *les Bostoniens*.

¹⁰ ●De Ségur, Louis-Philippe, [1753-1830] *Memoirs or memories and anecdotes by M. le comte de Ségur*, Alexis Eymery, Libraire-Éditeur, Paris, 1824. Tome Premier, p. 87.

Prussia, would not lose such a good opportunity to humiliate her old English enemy now that England was alone to face France. "By a majority of one vote, we decided to ask for the help of France, by the grace of God¹¹!"

This tiny majority showed two things; first, that there was still among Americans a great deal of suspicion of Papist France because the American political class was essentially English¹² and had been lulled with anti-French propaganda since the very beginning of the sixteenth century. The politicians also knew that French intervention would mark *a point of no return* in the Anglo-American dispute. The mother-daughter dispute would become a rupture between two nations. One cannot help but think that many of these politicians were not openly expressing their deepest feelings (opposed to any breakup) for fear of retaliation from those who really wanted this breakup (the colonists of Scottish, Irish, German origin, including French Huguenot, of which Laurens was a part).

Benjamin Franklin was naturally designated to negotiate aid from France. He spoke French and had many admirers in France among those Frenchmen whose sciences would invent the modern world¹³. Franklin returned to France on October 27th, 1776, to the land he would soon call: *the Country I love*. He was 70 years old. He joined Silas Deane, who was already in France to buy weapons and ammunition. The American scientist, well known in

¹¹ • Letter from Henry Laurens to John Lewis Gervais dated 5th of September 1777. Letters of Members of the Continental Congress, II. Burnett Edition, Published by the Carnegie Institution, Washington, 1923. II 478-483

¹² • Even though the population was only 50% English, the English were still usually richer, thanks to the colonial privileges they had cleverly granted themselves; as a result, the wealthy English had reserved for themselves almost all the reins of power in the colonies.

¹³ • In this world built on the image, the cinema, the automobile and the plane, it was Nicéphore Niepce who invented photography in 1826; Auguste and Louis Lumière the cinema ; Nicolas-Joseph Cugnot the first motor car in 1769, and Clément Ader made the first take-off of an aircraft in 1890.

France for his work on lightning rods, traveled aboard the sloop of war *The REPRISAL* (16 guns) under the American flag. On the way, the sloop seized two English brigan-tines that were leaving Bordeaux and Rochefort. Deane had already obtained from France two hundred cannons, 30,000 rifles and other military supplies.

London then made an official demand to France to extradite Deane to England. But the French refused¹⁴.

Ah! How some Englishmen must have regretted not having collaborated with the French to settle the disputes of the Newfoundland fishermen systematically provoked by the English authorities, the petty squabbles in the French trading posts in the Indies, and the illegal seizures of French merchant ships in the middle of the peace before the opening of the Seven Years War! A misdeed is never forgotten!

Franklin arrived in Paris on December 21st, 1776 and stayed in a private *hôtel particulier* in Passy called the *Hôtel de Valentinois* that a Frenchman graciously lent him. Opportunistic merchants sold his portrait with the motto *Eripuit coelo fulmen sceptrumque tyrannis*.

The French were enthusiastic and greeted the advent of Liberty. Although France did not yet officially recognize the United States, the French government advanced one million pounds to Beaumarchais to buy ammunition and weapons, and Louis XVI granted the Commissioners (Franklin) 500,000 livres per quarter¹⁵ to defray their operating expenses.

In Paris the idle French and European aristocrats immediately began to crowd together in the antechamber of the American representatives in office, Benjamin Franklin

¹⁴ •Letter from Franklin to John Hancock, President of the American Congress, written at Nantes, December 8th, 1776.

¹⁵ •Laboulaye, p.27.

or Silas Deane (a more or less secret agent), in order to volunteer to fight. The peace in Europe had lasted 15 endless years and all these ambitious, glory-hungry men were dying to ride over the Appalachians and strike down the English, as today many adventurers convert to any sect of Islam only to be able to feel the adrenalin by going to war under other skies and die as heroes with Captagon (fenetylline) as courage. The *Ḥaššāšīn*, (الحشّاشين) *hashish Islamists* of the Middle Ages used to do the same killings after taking hashish.

Germanic and Eastern European princes even came to Paris to hasten their departure. Some saw themselves as generalissimos by the sole virtue of their noble birth and dreamed of seeing the commoner George Washington standing at attention six steps in front of them. Thus were Prince Ferdinand, Duke de Brunswick¹⁶, the Comte de Broglie¹⁷ and the Marshal de Maillebois¹⁸ who each wanted to serve the United States on the condition that they occupy the post of generalissimo, that is to say to supplant the roturier George Washington, Trudel tells us with an ironic smile¹⁹.

The agent of the American Congress in Paris, Silas Deane, out of weakness, even had the temerity or weakness to support the ambitions of these presumptuous men to the Continental Congress. Without any complex, Broglie... dreamed of becoming the *William of Orange* of the

¹⁶ ●Charles-Guillaume-Ferdinand (1735, Wolfenbüttel - 1806, Ottensen) was a general and prince of the Holy Roman Germanic Empire. He was Duke of Brunswick-Lüneburg and Prince of Wolfenbüttel from 1780 until his death.

¹⁷ ●Charles Louis Victor de Broglie, born in 1756 in Paris where he died in 1794.

¹⁸ ●Yves-Marie Desmarests, Marquis de Maillebois, hero of the Seven Years' War, was a French soldier born in 1715 in Paris and died in 1791 in Liège.

¹⁹ ●Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution* (1775-1783), Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p.133

new republic²⁰. The young La Fayette for his part demanded the rank but refused the pay. George Washington liked him at once. Both of them were cold, brave to the point of sacrifice, and above all *freemasons*, Washington since 1752 and La Fayette since 1778²¹. Washington the Warrior, 45 years old, immediately took this teenager under his wing and made him obtain from the Continental Congress the rank of major-general and the command of a division. Those who know the military can imagine the anger that the old American officers felt when they were placed under the command of a foreign teenager, even if it was for political reasons!

The American Archives mention that, as early as 1775, two French officers, had come from Cap-Français-de-Saint-Domingue, to offer military aid to the Continental Congress. The Congress had accepted "their offers for supplies of gunpowder, arms and other munitions of war²². As a result, the first 15,000 rifles were delivered at that time; 15,000 "Charleville" war rifles, the *Kalashnikov* of the time. The American Militias lacked engineers. Barbue-Dubourg, friend of Silas Deane, found some in France in 1776. Benjamin Franklin hired these four engineers in France²³ in 1777. A whole host of young French noble officers followed La Fayette and joined the Americans.

²⁰ ●Charles J. Stillé, Comte de Broglie, *The Proposed Stadtholder of America*, article dans *Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography*, XI (1887), 4, pp. 369-405.

²¹ ●Selon Stillson et Hughan, *History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders*, 1890. p.226.

²² ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-1783. p. 69 de la version française.

²³ ●Jean-Baptiste Gouvion, (1747-1792); major, plus tard colonel, Engineer Corps, Continental Army ; Louis Le Bègue de Presle du Portail (1743-1802) ; Brigadier General (Major-General after Yorktown), commander of the Corps of Engineers of the Continental Army; Louis des Hayes de La Radière; French engineer. Jean Baptiste Joseph, chevalier de Laumoy: (1750-1832); Colonel, later Brigadier General, Corps of Engineers in the Continental Army.

Among all these candidates, often too vain, who wished to command the American troops and lead them on the Path of Glory, the Continental Congress accepted a certain number of volunteers but paid for the return journey of all those who were rejected. These young men came from the highest families of the Nobility, and the American Government feared to offend the French, and, consequently, to lose the military aid from France. Today the Americans prefer to forget that the French helped them to liberate themselves²⁴. They feel that they are tarnishing their glory by admitting that they begged for foreign help.

Unlike the fine qualities of La Fayette, a prince of high lineage, Philippe Charles Jean-Baptiste Tronson du Coudray²⁵ (an artillery officer whose ambition was as long as the name), demanded to be named major-general of the American army, commander of all the Artillery, and to be accountable only to George Washington in person and to the Continental Congress. He demanded a large salary and sowed indignation and a lot of blasphemies in the hearts and mouths of all American soldiers. On the other hand, his knowledge was immense, and he was able to sell it at the best price to those who needed his enlightenment according to the good old capitalistic rules who were then fermenting in England since the economic crisis of 1720 created by the famous slave company *South Sea Co.*

²⁴ ● This can be verified at every official or unofficial commemoration of this American Revolution, a Louisiana told me. "The French troops have arrived at the end of the war!" opposed the most patriotic Americans. "Like us Americans in World War I! always answers the author of this anecdote. They did not fight until the spring of 1918." What ingratitude! completed the Louisiana man.

²⁵ ● Philippe Charles Jean-Baptiste Tronson du Coudray, 1738-1777, was an authentic scientist who wrote at length on the use of artillery [Artillerie nouvelle, ou Examen des changements faits dans l'artillerie française depuis 1765, Amsterdam, 1772]. He volunteered with a force of twenty-nine French officers and twelve sergeants and two hundred guns to join George Washington's army. On September 17, 1777, he was crossing the Schuylkill River on a flat boat, when the horse he was riding began to reverse and threw his rider into the river, where he drowned..



On July 24th, 1778, General Washington wrote to Governor Morris in Philadelphia: "The prodigality with which ranks have been distributed to foreigners will certainly bring about one of two disadvantages: to render our military advancement insignificant, or to increase our present burdens by encouraging foreigners to overwhelm us like torrents, to the extent that the officers of our Nation will withdraw from the service. *No!* Our officers will not see unjustly placed above them, foreigners who have no other titles than unbridled pride and ambition, and who solicit so insistently that it takes an uncommon firmness to resist their claims²⁶." The letter was essentially referring to General Conway who had obtained the rank of general in the American Continental Army.

At this volatile and critical time, the young Continental Congress of the United States feared a possible betrayal by a military leader who had become too powerful. To limit George Washington's power, Congress appointed a *War Office* President (Gates) with some military powers. This compartmentalization had a perverse effect, it created division in the high command, in accordance with the precept that in such cases personality conflicts almost automatically arise. Feeling that he was not well rewarded for his qualities, he put himself at the head of a group of factious people. Finally, he resigned from the Continental Army, thinking that they would beg him to stay, then seeing that they were rather pleased with his departure, he contested his resignation (he had not intended to resign!... It was the pure truth!) which was nevertheless retained by George Washington. Then Conway's friends tried to get him reinstated by the Continental Congress.

²⁶ ●Governor Morris Memorial, I, Jules Renouard et Cie, Paris, 1842. P. 135 et suiv.

All those French volunteers who anticipated the Treaty of Alliance concluded later between France and America, undoubtedly provided great moral support to the American army²⁷. They were certainly less numerous than the regular British army whose troops were essentially German, but "the skill of their leaders and the obstinacy of their soldiers made up for this numerical inferiority²⁸." And then later landed the professional French troops.

The French Aid also included warships, and one can say that some of the first ships of the nascent *US Navy* were French. Thus, the Scotsman John Paul Jones gave "of himself so high an opinion to the French Minister of the Navy that the latter wished to employ him by giving this man the command of a particular interprise. Captain Jones came at this moment at the head of a warship of fifty guns and some frigates, armed at the expense of the King of France, and flying the American flag. It is said that he will set sail about June 1st, 1779²⁹."

●

Every war is marked by a climax and a turning point. Napoleon's Russian Campaign marked the turning point of the French Napoleonic Empire and during the German Third Empire³⁰, the battle of Stalingrad was the turning point of World War II and Hitler. The Russians were without context the stumbling block for the two despots. In America, it was the Battle of Saratoga that marked the

²⁷ ●Although their role is minimized today in order to give more importance to that of the Insurgents. Critics say the French army arrived late in the war. In fact, the American army, which fought on the battlefields of the First World War, could be accused of the same weakness, since it fought only from the spring of 1918, that is, during the last months of the war..

²⁸ ●Mark M. Boatner, *Encyclopaedia of the American Revolution*, p. 264 et 663

²⁹ ●Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye of the Institute of France and Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790); p. 82 Letter from B. Franklin to David Hartley, written at Passy on March 21, 1779.

³⁰ ●Reich can be translated as empire or republic.

turning point of the War of Independence of the Thirteen American Colonies.

In spite of its desire for general *peace*, on the one hand, and on the other hand its own willingness to help a people eager for *freedom* to obtain it, France had a thousand reasons for dissatisfaction with England, which, as we have seen, did not respect the treaties it signed³¹. This country was so envious and arrogant at sea and in the colonies that the desire to fight back tickled the minds of most of the military of France.

On this subject, the *Memorandum* given by the Comte de Floride Blanche³² to the Marquis d'Ossun, on October 17th, 1777, points out that, if each of the two powers—France or Spain—opens the book of their grievances against England, "they will find there violence committed in the bosom of peace; outrageous denials of Justice; frauds, vexations, usurpations, and finally all the species of injustice that human depravity can produce. Is their flag respected? Is their trade free? Are not French and Spanish

³¹ •One could add, in bulk, the refusal to award Malta to the Order of the Knights of Malta. "By the Peace of Amiens, Great Britain promised to hand over the island of Malta to the Grand Master... A body of 2,000 Neapolitans had landed on the island in October 1802; the English not prevented, but they had not put them in possession of the island." Thus began the Napoleonic Wars. Refusal to hand over the Cape to the Dutch, even if the Cape of Good Hope was to be returned to the Batavian Government. [Loch, Christophe, Samson, Maximilian, Schoell, Friedrich, Abridged History of Peace Treaties between the Powers of Europe, since the Peace of Westphalia, 2 volumes, Librairie Méline, Cans & Compagnie, Bruxelles, 1837. Volume 1. p. 342]

³² •Don José Moniño, comte de Florida-Blanca was born in Murcia, he went to Madrid and became a lawyer. He was noticed and was appointed fiscal of the Council of Castile. Reserved and methodical, he gained the confidence of Charles III who sent him to Rome as ambassador in 1772. It was he who imposed on Clement XIV the suppression of the Jesuits in 1773. On his return in 1777, he became Secretary of State and remained so until the death of the king who had made him Count of Florida Blanca. He took advantage of the resumption of the French-English conflict to recover Minorca and Florida in 1782, but he did not want Spanish policy to be subject to that of Versailles. He drew closer to Portugal, dealt with England and (temporarily) won the respect of the Barbans. The death of Charles III meant his disgrace and he had a difficult time before being released from his internment when Spain had to face a French invasion. But he died soon after.

ships subjected, even at the entrance to their ports, to humiliating searches, to odious seizures and then condemned by greedy courts to confiscations on the most frivolous and arbitrary grounds? arbitrary reasons? The vast sea is no longer even a common heritage. The English imperiously exercise a universal dictatorship, which they will soon claim to have recognized as their right, as they arrogate it to themselves *de facto*. When the insult and the outrage are carried to their height, that there is no longer access to reparation and to Justice, will resentment be silent? Will one take the side of concealing what one would be in a position to avenge³³? It is not that the two powers [France and Spain] have not referred numerous complaints to England; that they should deign to consult the answers: cold disavowals; vague promises to inquire and redress; formal denials of the best ascertained facts; vain exceptions, frivolous recriminations. Never a reparation, not even an honest apology. Such is the English character: he believes he can demand everything and give nothing back³⁴."

The times were thus full of hope for the French military who saw the opportunity to find themselves —militarily speaking— face to face with the English military, to come to blows. But the Government of Louis XVI wanted an act, a pretext, that showed that the Americans were serious in their desire for independence, that it was not a simple *family quarrel*, and that the two quarrelsome ones would not turn against the French at the first French intervention.

³³ ●Henri Doniol, History of France's involvement in the establishment of the United States of America, diplomatic correspondence and documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Tome II, p. 601, Spain's responses to the requests of the American Commissioners. Translation of the Memoir given by the Count of Florida Blanche to the Marquis d'Ossun, October 17, 1777. Annex to Chapter IX.

³⁴ ●Henri Doniol, History of France's involvement in the establishment of the United States of America, diplomatic correspondence and documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Tome II, p. 465

Certainly, the sequence of events was strategically auspicious in favor of the Americans. The hostilities, begun in 1775 under the command of George Washington, had led the following year the Continental Congress to meet in Philadelphia and unilaterally proclaim, on July 4th, 1776, the Independence of the Thirteen Colonies. The beginnings of the conflict had been fortunate for the independentists. The English had been inflicted a crushing defeat at Lexington, on April 19th, 1775. They, who had occupied Boston *manu militari*, found themselves in a besieged position. The Americans had rushed to attack Canada. *Montreal* had been occupied but, as mentioned above, the American assault had come to break against the fortifications of *Quebec City*, which were solidly defended by French-Canadians (December 1775).

A year later, during the night of December 25th, 1776, the Continental Army crossed the river on the ice, surprised at *Trenton* an English Corps of a thousand men blockading Philadelphia, and took them prisoner. On January 3rd, 1777, Washington's army won another success over the English at the Battle of Princeton. In June 1777, Sir William Howe left New York, landing his 16,000 men in Maryland. George Washington advanced to meet him with 11,000 men. The armies met on the banks of the *Brandywine*, and fought a battle on September 11th. Howe defeated Washington. Philadelphia, the capital city of the Country, was occupied by the English and the Continental Congress had to move as soon as possible to Lancaster. On September 19th, the English general Burgoyne³⁵ was defeated at the *Battle of Bemis Heights* (Vermont).

³⁵ •The English general Burgoyne was not a Huguenot. His ancestor was a French settler, who came to England to occupy the best places which, for centuries after the invasion of the French Duke of Normandy William the Bastard, were reserved for opportunists from the Doulce France. These "colonists" came to reinforce the aristocracy, trade and French administration that framed the country. The family of Anne Boleyn

On their way to Albany, Burgoyne's English army met the American army of Horatio Gates on October 7th. This army was waiting on the shore near Saratoga. The objective of the Battle of Saratoga was the following: renouncing to deal for the moment with the six rebel colonies known as *New England*³⁶, the English had decided to cut the Thirteen Colonies in two zones in order to isolate the 6 New England colonies from the 7 southern colonies that the English believed to be more loyal to England. In a sense, they wanted to sort out their fruit in order to destroy the rotten apples.

The English Government therefore developed a strategy to *isolate the colonies infected by the virus of revolt and independence*, by means of a synchronized three-jawed pincer movement, which began³⁷ on August 16th, 1777. The English "**west Jaw**", commanded by Barrymore-St. Leger³⁸, was to advance from the western part of the Province of Quebec (present-day Ontario) and follow the Mohawk River. The **southern jaw** was to move up the Hudson River from New York City. The **northern jaw** would descend from Montreal, along the North-South axis of the Richelieu River. The three simultaneous offensives

(Boulogne) was in the same situation, as was Thomas Becket (Béquet). At the time of the creation of the Anglican Church, the ancestor of General Burgoyne had been appointed by Henry VIII Royal Commissioner for the Dissolution of the Estates of the Catholic Clergy. He had served himself first, had enriched himself, and had thus been able to be ennobled to the level of Baronet.

³⁶ • New England includes only 6 states: Massachusetts of course, Connecticut, Rhode Island, Vermont, New Hampshire and Maine.

³⁷ • Mintz, Max M., John Burgoyne & Horatio Gates: The Generals of Saratoga. Yale University Press, New Haven, Connecticut, 1990.

³⁸ • Barrymore Matthew *aka* Barry St. Léger (1733-1789) was an Anglo-Irish officer of Huguenot descent. His main fault, during the only campaign which he led himself, was – according to military historian James Stokesbury, professor of history at Acadia University, Wolfville, Nova Scotia, in the *Dictionary of Canadian Biography* – "to underestimate his American adversary, but the whole British army and government made the same mistake." » *A Short History of the American Revolution*, Harper-Collins Publishers, Toronto, Canada.

had to make their junction and combine their forces in the vicinity of Albany (NY) in order to cut New England off from the other seven colonies." Unfortunately, the English were caught in their own trap. A succession of battles led to the final surrender of the English general-in-chief, Burgoyne.

This victory, known as *Saratoga*, marked a turning point in the Revolutionary War. It was the greatest success of the Americans since the beginning of the Independence War. They seized a large artillery, mass of weapons and ten thousand prisoners mostly German. From that moment on, the European royal courts realized that the war could be concluded in favor of the Insurgents, who, obviously, were not a simple band of disgruntled Celts.

The official news of this victory, exaggeratedly qualified by the Americans as "*one of the 15 most decisive battles of the Humanity*", to which Sir Edward Shepherd Creasy devoted a treatise³⁹. The piece of news was brought to France by Jonathan Loring Austin, Secretary of War of Massachusetts. Leaving on October 30th, 1777, Austin disembarked in Nantes after a 31-day journey. He immediately went to Passy where he met Franklin, Arthur Lee, William Lee⁴⁰, Izard, Beaumarchais and Bancroft. "The visitors as well as the Envoys immediately works to prepare the transmission of the news to the French and the

³⁹ ●Not a treatise but one of the chapters of a treatise: Sir Edward Shepherd Creasy (1812-1878) was a British historian, *The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World : From Marathon to Waterloo*, Humphrey Milford Oxford University Press, Toronto, 1915. Evidently, Sir Edward inflated the merit of this battle to enable the Americans to display at least one victory in his Treaty. When Creasy died, in 1878, the Americans could not yet boast of the great American victories of World War II against Japan and Germany (although, against Germany, it was mainly Soviet Russia that defeated Hitler, and the Americans ultimately intervened only to prevent the Communists from conquering Western Europe), or of the near victories against Iraq or Afghanistan. As for Japan, it was only the use of atomic bombs that overcame it..

⁴⁰ ●Arthur Lee (1740-1792) was the brother of William Lee (1739-1795)

other royal courts of Europe⁴¹." The news reached Versailles at the beginning of December 1777.



The historian Doniol assures that the American representatives in France tried to precipitate the French intervention "by exaggerating the probability of a compromise between Great Britain and the Thirteen Colonies. There is no doubt that Franklin sought in every way to instill in the French the idea that *if adequate French aid (an army and a squadron) was not offered to the Thirteen-Colonies, they would necessarily succumb* [to submission and peace with England]. There is no doubt, too, that Lord Stormont, in his communication with Vergennes, greatly exaggerated the strength of the loyalist element in the Colonies and the shared desire for reconciliation⁴²." The strategy of the English ambassador to France (Stormont) was so excessive that it became counterproductive and worked against the interests of his Government as the French rushed to war. He thought to alarm the French to the point of intimidation. He worried them to the point of launching them in the action without further delay!

The victory of Saratoga thus struck all the spirits in France because during the entire Seven Years' War, "not once had an entire army been captured in this way, by unknown or almost unknown generals, at the outmost, at the head of an army which was despised a little because it composed mostly of (Celtic) militiamen and led by officers who were horse traders, wood merchants, blacksmiths, booksellers or even lawyers in civilian life, while General Burgoyne was regarded as the most able general" in England.

⁴¹ ● Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States, Government Printing Office, Washington, 1889. 6 tomes. t.1, p.342.

⁴² ● Ibidem. p. 343.

America had shown its determination and the French decided to help Americans "*openly*" and no longer "*secretly*", even though the Intelligence Services of all countries knew exactly what was going on in the various chancelleries. As mentioned above, Benjamin Franklin's residence was riddled with spies on the payroll of British Intelligence who could follow all the discussions on a daily basis and get the gist of them even before the Continental Congress. The French Intelligence Services even warned Franklin on several occasions about the names of the English moles established in his own house in Passy.

Vergennes, for his part, sent his congratulations to Benjamin Franklin and Sileas Deane for this decisive victory. Then the two commissioners took advantage of it to submit to France the famous *Treaty of Franco-American Alliance*⁴³ in due form.

It was from this victory that Franklin was able to negotiate a set of "treaties with France, which, according to the will of the signatories, *would bind the two countries in eternal friendship*. A French participant expressed the hope that "the Americans would not inherit the pretensions, and the rapacious and stubborn character of their English mother country, which had made them hate it"⁴⁴. As a resulting arrangements, the French supplied the bulk of the arms to the Americans, almost all of its gunpowder, and nearly as many fighting men as the Americans themselves to win the decisive battles of Yorktown⁴⁵. The French provided experienced professional soldiers while

⁴³ • Letter of September 18, 1777, from the Commissioners to the Foreign Affairs Committee of France, Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States 4 vol. Vol.II, pp. 452-454.

⁴⁴ • The expression of this wish was not very diplomatic, but the plaintiff position held by the Americans forced them to hide their pride under a complacent smile. This did not prevent them from being so much worse, that they were despised by the whole world in the 21st century.

⁴⁵ • Isaacson, Walter, The New York Times, 3 avril 2005.

the Americans fielded Scottish or Irish militiamen, brave and enthusiastic but with little experience in open country warfare.



The success of Saratoga is thus considered by the French as *the blow of hammer which blew the last hold for the launching of the American ship*. From that moment on, the French were ready to intervene directly. The French Council of Ministers sent Jean-Baptiste Donatien de Vimeur, Comte de "Rochambeau, the order to embark immediately a part of his troops and equipment, and to leave at the first favorable wind⁴⁶. The lack of ships meant that two regiments had to be left behind, as well as a good part of the artillery. In July, this French Army of 8,000 men, under the command of Comte de Rochambeau, landed at Newport.

Losing its composure in the face of this danger, England made a notable error. It allowed itself to board the ships of the neutrals to control them. In reaction, Catherine II of Russia proposed a plan of *armed neutrality against England*, to which Sweden, Denmark, Prussia, the Kingdom of the Two Sicilies⁴⁷, Holland, and even Portugal, although the latter had been a faithful follower of England since the distant One Hundred Years' War⁴⁸. The Dutch even began to shelter American privateers. When the English saw this, they declared war on them as an opportunity to seize the Dutch island of St. Eustatius in February of 1781. But the French took back from them shortly

⁴⁶ ● Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-1783. pp. 89-90 de la version fr.

⁴⁷ ● The Kingdom of the Two Sicilies included insular Sicily and the Kingdom of Naples, the southern part of the Italian peninsula. The capital of this political entity was Naples.

⁴⁸ ● Since the famous Battle of Aljubarrota, 1385.

after (in 1784) this same island that the English hastened to plunder before fleeing.

●

Yet, we have to insist on the fact that there are indications that tend to suggest that Saratoga was not the initial and essential motivation for the direct and open intervention of France. By the end of 1776, it can be said that it was time for France to intervene directly in this war, with an additional reason which was undoubtedly only a justification, an *a posteriori* excuse, to prevent the foreseeable, the predictable revenge from the English Merchant Lobbies as soon as the American insurrection would be appeased, *for before long, the Marine Royale would be ready for action, since it needed only a few months "to put the finishing touches" to the preparations... The return of the fishermen in France assured*⁴⁹; (in Spain that of the fleet of Mexico). Nothing can then be an obstacle to the execution of the action that they will estimate to take."

The following text dates from October 3rd, 1776, that is to say a whole year before the Saratoga victory⁵⁰ which led to the surrender of an English army. It was signed at Versailles under the title of "*Memorandum to be used as instruction to the marquis de Noailles, going to London as ambassador of the King of France to His British Majesty.*" In these diplomatic directives, the French Minister of Foreign Affairs asks himself the question and weighs the pros and cons of whether France should embark in a new war against England, or let the Thirteen-Colonies form a huge and formidable ensemble with the British Isles. According to the Minister of Foreign Affairs, faced with the danger of an economic and military superpower, France **must**

⁴⁹ ●Not only to ensure that the fishing industry is safe, but above all to complete the crews of the Marine Royale.

⁵⁰ ●The campaign lasted from June 14 to October 17, 1777.

"neglect nothing, omit nothing and spare nothing to prevent it"⁵¹. The situation was critical for the freedom of Europe and the world. It was a matter of preventing the formation of a superpower which, thanks to the corrupt democratic system of England—that is to say a Parliament inexorably controlled by the Merchant Lobbies, like a fly by the silk threads of a spider⁵²—, would treat the rest of the world as it treated its own colonies: industrialization forbidden so as not to compete with England⁵³, freedom of religion disputed... This task of prevention, only France, then the most powerful country of Europe⁵⁴, could do it.

●

But why not have acted openly earlier by offering official military aid to the American rebels? Because, replied Vergennes (French Minister of Foreign Affairs), "*the Americans, filled with that blind distrust (so familiar to the English whose descendants they are), against all other nations that aspire to the sharing of commerce, might have imagined that the French were only interested in drawing them out of the yoke of England only in order to bring them under their owns*"⁵⁵. And then finally, the clandestine nature of French Aid, likely to be disavowed, had a very

⁵¹ ●Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the king to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. in *Recueil des Instructions donné aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis le Traité de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française*, XXV 2 ANGLETERRE, Tome 3 (1698-1791) avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique Paris, 1965. pp. 501 et seq.

⁵² ●This type of pseudo-democracy in the service of high finance has now become the norm in the United States, the European Union and everywhere else.

⁵³ ●We can say England rather than Great Britain since Scotland and Ireland were treated in the same way as the overseas colonies.

⁵⁴ ●Since England herself could only overcome France by coalitions. In this war, England was alone in front of France.

⁵⁵ ●Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, Mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the king to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. in *Recueil....* p. 501. The segment in italics was not highlighted in the original text.

perverse strategic consequence on England: "by playing on the unlimited confidence that this nation artificially nourishes on itself, infatuation that wealth usually gives to the individual⁵⁶", this dissimulation gave to the English the false impression that France was afraid of the English military power, consequently persuading, convincing England, through blind immodesty, to go too far. Thus, according to Charles Gravier comte de Vergennes, French Minister of Foreign Affairs, *this military and financial help, falsely clandestine, maintained England "in the vain confidence that France would not dare to break peace with this country*⁵⁷. This conceited imprudence made it an avalanche —as the Acts of the London Parliament attest— to drag this nation into a precipice from which it is well worth not to let it pull itself out⁵⁸."

From now on, France was to provide unlimited military and financial aid to the Americans, in a direct and open way, for example by sending an army and a fleet to America, for otherwise "it would be to give credence to the misinformation —which the English carefully propagate⁵⁹— that the policy of France is nothing else but to have England destroyed by America and America by England, in order to more easily drag them both down⁶⁰."

⁵⁶ • Thus, it is known that during the English Industrial Revolution, the wealthy propertied class considered that if the proletarians remained poor it was for reasons of mental degeneration. Some colonial societies held the same opinion about the colonized. This artificial self-justification allowed the possessing and domineering layer not to feel too repugnant – and therefore blameworthy – by attributing its wealth to its own rapacity.

⁵⁷ • Breaking with it: breaking diplomatic relations, i.e. declaring war.

⁵⁸ • Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the king to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. p.501.

⁵⁹ • The British spread this rumor in order to incite the Americans to total submission.

⁶⁰ • Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the king to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776.. p. 501.

And Vergennes went on to prophesy that the direct and open aid from France to America would necessarily lead to war with England. Certainly, the French could legitimize their intervention by putting forward the very principles of the English "when Elizabeth *patament*⁶¹ provided aid to the United Provinces⁶² in a state of insurrection against the King of Spain. Elizabeth Ist put English garrisons in their fortresses as a guarantee of their fidelity as well as of her advances⁶³, Elizabeth held in their midst an ambassador who was at the same time a general of the army and a head of the Council⁶⁴.

For Vergennes, at this point in the American Revolution, a year before the English humiliation at Saratoga⁶⁵, *now that the Marine Royale was reconstituted to match the Royal Navy*, France could not delay any longer in intervening directly; time was running out because "there was a general cry in England that if this campaign⁶⁶ did not defeat and overcome the Americans, it is necessary to make the least bad composition possible with them; to make them our allies if we cannot keep them as subjects, and using their power, fall back with more force on the

⁶¹ ● *Patament* = *patement* = openly = *ouvertement*. Vergennes refers to the Eighty Years' War or Revolt of the Protestant United Provinces against Catholic Spain. In 1568, several Protestant provinces of this region, led by William the Taciturn, revolted against the governor of the King of Spain, Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire, because Ferdinand Alvarez of Toledo, persecuted Protestants in the United Provinces (the current Netherlands). On this occasion, Queen Elizabeth I of England had lent a hand to the Dutch to harm Spain... On the same principle the French could help the Americans.

⁶² ● United Provinces, the Netherlands of today.

⁶³ ● Cash advances, grants repayable with interest.

⁶⁴ ● Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, Mestres de camp de Cavalerie, going to London to reside as ambassador of the King of France to His Britannic Majesty. Versailles on October 3, 1776. in *Recueil des Instructions*. p.501.

⁶⁵ ● It will not escape the vigilance of the reader that this *Mémoire* de Vergennes dates from October 1776, while the very important battle of Saratoga, which is usually considered as the trigger for the direct intervention of the French Army and Navy, dates from September-October 1777; it is therefore one year later.

⁶⁶ ● The Campaign of 1777 with the English General Burgoyne, who was to destroy the American army and finally crush the insurrection.

French and Spain, to take revenge for the help they have given to rebels, and perhaps even for the wishes they could make in secret" for them⁶⁷.

Thus, it was the moment or never for France to engage openly in the war for two crucial reasons: the Marine Royale was finally ready, and the English were beginning to get tired of not being able to subdue the Thirteen Colonies. Therefore they talked about forgetting the war and re-establishing an alliance with the United States that we would today call a *Commonwealth*, with privileges and exclusions of third parties. *If you can't beat them, join them!*

●

It was hard to imagine the London Merchant Lobbies accepting that their former colonies could be infatuated with others than themselves—even if it were only for commerce. The jealousy of these islanders was as keen as that of a scorned husband. The freedom of trade that would come in the case of American independence could not in any way suit England. Even if that country succeeded in remaining friends with the new United States. "There is a still more pressing motive for England's Government to want war. Not to mention the interest Ministers and English politicians may have in provoking it *to save their heads* from public indignation and vindictiveness, it is that of Commerce. This commerce, if it is *unrestricted*, escapes England. Convenience will naturally bring it to France and Spain⁶⁸." This idea was unbearable for the jealous greed of the London Merchant Lobbies, and for the envious patriotism of the other citizens of His Majesty, manipulated in

⁶⁷ ● Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, Volume 3 (1698-1791). p.501.

⁶⁸ ● «To save their heads from indignation" This comment was particularly true in this English government of Lord Frederick North, 2nd Earl of Guildford, who showed the zeal of the great culprits. Mémoire pour servir d'instruction au sieur marquis de Noailles...

one way or the other, according to the needs, by the famous London magazines, property of those same Lobbies⁶⁹.

The anger and jealousy of the English were aroused by letters such as those from Franklin to his English friend, David Hartley, a member of the British Parliament. Franklin ironically compared the trio *France-America-England* to a *ménage-à-trois*, a *love trio*: The Americans "are received and treated in France with a cordial respect, an affection that they have never encountered in England, even though they thought they deserved better, and that today they would find less after so many pains taken to exasperate the English against them and make them as odious as they are contemptible... America was driven out and pushed into the arms of France. This country [America] was an obedient and virtuous daughter. A cruel stepmother [England] threw her out, slandered her, tried to kill her. Everyone recognizes her innocence and takes her side; *her friends hope that she will soon be honorably married*. They will never advise her to return to the domination of such a barbarous enemy. I believe she will be as good a wife as she has been a good daughter, that her husband will love and honor her, and that the family which has so wickedly cast her out will long regret having lost her⁷⁰." It is certain that this sad letter of reproach must have tortured the heart and spirit of Hartley and of all Londoners who

⁶⁹ • Especially the monthly *Gentleman's Magazine*, the London Magazine that was going to die with the independence of the United States. As mentioned above, the role of magazines was to convert the population of London to the point of view of the lobbies. In fact, today's American press holds the same function.

⁷⁰ • Letter from Benjamin Franklin to the English politician David Hartley, Member of Parliament, written at Passy on February 12, 1778, in *Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin*, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp.47-48.

could drink in the bitterness of it and spit to France the hatred of the cuckold.

Morally, how could this collection of Christian Kings⁷¹ who played war like chess, who shamelessly used and abused the blood of their fellow citizens, were they going to find the excuses and the necessary moral justifications to attack another Christian King, these British bourgeois, who periodically stirred up bloodbath coalitions against commercial rivals? Precisely, this British King whose powers were held by Merchants' Associations, was accused of having committed the infamy, a few years earlier, of attacking French merchant vessels without even declaring war on them⁷². Vergennes was at least trying to analyze this moral problem and to find justifications for it, when he said: "One feels that it can be repugnant to the magnanimity and religion of the two monarchs to take the most unfortunate circumstance in which England can find itself to strike a blow, if not physically fatal at least to its influence and its consideration⁷³. This obscure statement by the French Minister sought nothing more than a

⁷¹ •These are the Most Christian King (France), the Catholic King (Spain), and, for England, the Defender of the Faith. The Anglican king persisted in bearing the nickname of Defender of the Faith granted by Pope Leo X. Indeed, at the beginning of the reformist ferment, Henry VIII angrily invectivated the Protestant Reformation. In 1521, he even sent the pope a treatise entitled *Assertio septem sacramentorum*, written with the help of (or rather "by") Thomas More (whom he had assassinated a few years later, by the way) This treatise earned him the title of "Defender of the Faith" (*Defensor Fidei*) which was awarded to him by Pope Leo X. He also took the title of *illustrissimus*, which he also retained after his break with Rome and to the present day. Thus Prince Charles will become the Defender of the Faith (Anglican) when he is crowned King of England.

⁷² •In 1755, while England was deporting the Acadian people to settle English settlers in Acadia, Vice-Admiral Boscawen stationed himself peacefully in the Cabot Strait and the Gulf of St Lawrence. His squadron captured some "partially disarmed" French troop transports carrying 1,500 French infantrymen as well as the pay (£80,000 French). The next day an epidemic broke out in its crews which lost 2,000 sailors. During the English naval defeat at Port-Mahon or Menorca in 1756, Charles Boscawen voted for the execution of the English admiral Byng who was defeated by the French Navy.

⁷³ •Memoir to serve as an instruction to the Sieur Marquis de Noailles, Tome 3 (1698-1791), Paris, 1965. Ibid.

moral justification for attacking the English. In fact it could be translated into plain English as: *I ask God's forgiveness for attacking England at a time when this country is alone to face us and therefore vulnerable; I do not want to destroy it but to bring it down a little.*

And the Head of French diplomacy thus made up his justification because "it is a question here of a major interest. One can't doubt that England wishes to end the civil war [with the Thirteen Colonies] in order to start a new one against the *Two Crowns* (France and Spain). Its conduct, which will soon be analyzed, is a proof which it would be difficult to deny. It is obvious that England nourishes the design of war and that it prepares the means of it. Will we wait until it has taken all its advantages to begin it *where and when* it wishes? [Will we wait] until, strengthened by the forces it employs against America and those it will be able to obtain there, it tripled its maritime power to defy and insult that of the *Two Crowns*? It is an axiom received in politics as in war, that it is better to prevent than to be prevented⁷⁴.

So the French intervention was imminent in October 1776, well before the Battle of Saratoga.

At the end of 1776, everything was ready to strike England openly. But winter arrived, and it was necessary to wait for the return of the right season to attack, and so the American victory at Saratoga occurred in the following autumn and decided Vergennes to take the pretext of this victory to make the French battalions go up to the front line. The causes of the direct and official intervention of France were of several orders (moral, material and military). Some historians who, for one reason or another, seek to diminish the merit of the French, emphasize extremely

⁷⁴ • Ibidem.

interested motivations and tend to minimize the moral causes that were sweeping France at that time, at the culmination of the *Century of Enlightenment*.



In keeping with the view that France was determined to intervene even if Saratoga had not been a victory for the Insurgents, the English historian Dull confirms this same presumption. For, in his opinion, Saratoga was a mere pretext that occurred at a time when the French fleet was in a position to defeat the Royal Navy. According to Dull, the battle of Saratoga was given "a function it never deserved, *that of having demonstrated the capacity of the American Army, with which France wanted to enter the war as an ally*⁷⁵." The real reasons for France's entry into the war were, according to him (and Vergennes), that France had finished rebuilding its Navy to compete and even defeat the Royal Navy; which it did, moreover, at the *Battle of the Chesapeake Bay* and during several other sea battles detailed in Book II of the French version of this work. According to Dull, the tensions made it inevitable that France would become directly involved in this war. The French Council of State, he adds, "was faced with the eventual necessity of abandoning the *policy of partial involvement* made obsolete by the almost uncontrollable increase in tension with England⁷⁶," for the latter, duped by its own successes in the Seven Years' War (essentially due to the Prussian Armies and to the strategic and tactical genius of Frederick the Great) had ended up, through vanity, by convincing herself that she was capable of facing, alone, the French Armies.

⁷⁵ ●Dull, Jonathan R., *The French Navy, and American Independence; A Study of Arms and Diplomacy*, Princeton University Press, Princeton (New Jersey), 1975. p.90.

⁷⁶ ●Ibid

England had moreover committed the same error of estimation by making war on Spain a few years earlier and being humiliated⁷⁷. But what is certain is that, in this American Revolution, the French intervention was made possible only by "the work of the [French] naval shipyards rather than by American successes on American battle-fields"⁷⁸."

●

The second reason for French intervention was, again according to Dull, the inability of the Americans to defeat the bulk of the English army that was fighting in America: "I suspect that the French decision to enter the war openly was reinforced less by the battle of Saratoga than by the defeats of General Washington, which showed that, *although the Americans were able to overcome large detachments, they were still unable to destroy the main British Army without more direct assistance*"⁷⁹" from the French Army.

Jonathan Dull thus goes off the beaten track of *Official History* to provide his original explanation that it was the end of the French naval rearmament that determined direct French intervention⁸⁰. He wrote that it seemed likely to him that "the preliminary decision to initiate open warfare was made towards the end"⁸¹ of July 1777." More than

⁷⁷ ● This is of course the Guerra del Asiento des Negros, described by English historians with the ridiculous name of *Jenkin's Ear War* to sweeten its humiliation, and *Guerre de l'Esclavage* by the French, because, if the initial pretexts were some abuses of Spanish customs against English traffickers, the real objective of the English was to force Spain to extend English's monopoly on Slavery over the Spanish Empire. On this subject read the Prolegomena of the Dictionary of Franco-English Battles of the War of the Austrian Succession, by the same author.

⁷⁸ ● Dull, Jonathan R., *The French Navy and American Independence ; A Study of Arms and Diplomacy*., Princeton University Press, Princeton (New Jersey), 1975. p.90.

⁷⁹ ● Dull, Jonathan R., *The French Navy and American Independence ; A Study of Arms and Diplomacy*., Princeton University Press, Princeton (New Jersey), 1975. p.90.

⁸⁰ ● Ibidem.

⁸¹ ● Ibid. p.84.

that, in his opinion, the final decision of the French to go to war *alone* [without the Spaniards] against England, was due to the procrastination of the Spanish Bourbon who certainly wished to "keep the American revolution alive while dreading the dangers of the thirteen independent states facing the Spanish colonies⁸²," because the latter were in danger of following their example by aspiring to that famous liberty which incubated in France of the Enlightenment, and was spreading to the other peoples of Europe.

The American historian Kaplan estimates, for his part, that "the Americans committed the error to believe that they had succeeded in convincing the French to enter the war directly. Vergennes was *already* convinced. His decision was reinforced, not so much by the victory at Saratoga than by *George Washington's obvious inability to face up to the largest English army without more direct assistance from the French*⁸³." As far as the French were concerned, it was *imperative* to prevent the Americans from becoming discouraged and giving up on complete independence. Kaplan agreed with Dull in this.

In fact, as noted above, one need only to check the dates of the battle of Saratoga, shall we say (September 19th and October 7th, 1777), to see that French diplomacy had *already* [on July 23rd of the same year 1777] decided on the direct intervention of the French: "The moment has come when it is of any necessity to take a resolution: *it is necessary or to abandon America to itself, or to rescue it courageously and effectively*. Dithering can only

⁸² •Ibid. p.88

⁸³ •Kaplan, Lawrence S. "The Diplomacy of the American Revolution: the Perspective from France." *Reviews in American History*, The Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore (Maryland), 1976. Vol.4. No.3 (september 1976), p.387. "The Americans were mistaken in believing that they had already succeeded with the French; Vergennes was already convinced. His decision was reinforced less by Saratoga than by Washington's demonstrated incapacity to cope with the main British army without more direct French assistance."

compromise and weaken the consideration by showing weakness... January or February of 1778 is the time after which the Two Crowns will only have to regret the opportunity that they will have neglected. America must be warned from now on if we want to cooperate with this country. If, on the contrary, one does not believe to do anything effective for them, humanity and honesty demand that we tell them so... [France and Spain] will put themselves back in their place and will make England return to the place from which this country should never have come out of⁸⁴."

Despite this undeniable reality, it was the victory at Saratoga which gave the illusion of being the starting point of the French intervention and which determined the cautious and indecisive Louis XVI to yield to pressure of the French public opinion, of the Ministers of the Government and especially, of course, the pressure of the Americans represented in France by the eminent Benjamin Franklin.

In spite of everything and by simplification, the Battle of Saratoga is considered today by most historians as the turning point that convinced the King of France that this rebellion was not just a simple quarrel between mother and daughter that would end in tears of reconciliation, between the Thirteen Colonies and England.

●

According to the historian Doniol, "the hesitations of the French Minister in 1777, can be explained by the possibility that Great Britain would suddenly offer independence to the Thirteen Colonies, and then turning against France and Spain all her forces that their reconciliation

⁸⁴ ● Henri Doniol, *History of France's involvement in the establishment of the United States of America*, diplomatic correspondence and documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. *Mémoire communiqué au Roi le 23 juillet 1777*, et approuvé le même jour par Sa Majesté, Tome II, p. 466 et suiv. The Two Crowns are France and Spain.

would release, while the English Government, on its side, was inclined to suggest to France that such a possibility was not impossible⁸⁵." But it is totally impossible that the London Council of Trade and Foreign Plantation (in other words the *London Merchant Lobbies*) could have envisaged defeating France and Spain together, without any European coalition, even if Spain was making its presence felt more for diplomatic than military reasons.

The crushing defeat of the British by the Spanish alone in the *War of the Asiento de Negros* [or *War of Jenkins's Ear*] was too recent to be forgotten by the English leaders, even if the London people, deceived by the London magazines, had never known the truth, the harsh reality of the defeat.

A real motivation for the French, in any case, was based on the fear that the English and Americans would be reconciled in tears of joy, and that the Thirteen Colonies, with their unlimited potential for economic and military power, would continue to belong to London. Sooner or later, the whole world would have been the docile plaything of the sordid London Merchant Lobbies who did not hesitate to organize war after war up to the last German mercenaries, to the last Scottish Highlanders, who paid the blood price, while the poor English proletarian would make up for the enormous deficit with their sweat.

Whatever the most skeptical historians may suppose, a text from the French Secretary of State gives us the true motivations of the French authorities. In short, "England is a country that respects nothing and wants everything for herself. But if this country keeps the United States under her control, nothing and no one could slow her down in her ambitions because the Thirteen Colonies will quickly

⁸⁵ •Ibidem, pp.393, 691

become a superpower. It is therefore necessary to push for independence and to keep these two countries opposed to each other so that they neutralize each other⁸⁶." In 1777, time is pressing. What is striking in the tone of the official text that follows is the certainty of France's ability to overpower an England bereft of allies.

The French took their time to make the process of independence to become irreversible. Saratoga showed the Americans serious and truly determined to fight to the end. Their desire for independence was not an ideal of unrepentant dreamers or Celtic vindictiveness to take revenge on a mother country that was seen as a bad stepmother. If the French had openly and massively helped the insurgents from the beginning of the war, the English would have risked to back down, to reconcile and to grant the tax exemption that the Americans demanded. Under these conditions, the Thirteen Colonies would have remained united with England. It was therefore worthwhile for France to appear hesitant at first.

Marcel Trudel (1917-2011) tried to analyze all the possibilities of action, in order to imagine what would have been the consequences of this American Revolution, for France and for the rest of Europe, in each of the hypotheses in perspective. His very interesting analysis deserves to be known. According to this Canadian historian, in the alternative where *France would have remained neutral*, "England would probably *submit* its colonies, and, at the height of its power, would turn all its resources [Thirteen-Colonies and England] against its French hereditary enemy and take away the last shreds of the French empire⁸⁷" including the French commercial independence. In

⁸⁶ Mémoire pour servir d'instruction au sieur marquis de Noailles...

⁸⁷ ● Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éd. du Boréal Express, Sil-lery, 1976. pp. 151-152.

the alternative where France would help England to subdue its Thirteen-Colonies" to prevent the revolt from spreading to France's own Empire, England would own colonies, it would thereby further strengthen the power of the victor⁸⁸ of 1763."

If—as was to be the case—France openly granted its aid to the "American colonies, it could be certain that England would declare war on France⁸⁹," carried away by an unyielding vanity which, without any coalition to balance the forces, would lead this country inexorably to defeat. So, whether France collaborated or not, "whether or not this country stayed out of the conflict that was breaking out, France could be sure to have the war.



It was the Earl de Vergennes, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs who would solve the problem. He decided to do as much harm as possible to England, *but taking great care not to destroy this country, because England was necessary to the European balance*. At the same time, Vergennes was going to prevent the new power which was being formed in America from becoming another threat to that European equilibrium, stability and tranquillity⁹⁰.

As early as 1775, in London, the opinion of the Comte de Guînes had added one more color to this prism of opinions and strategies. He had written to the French Minister of Foreign Affairs, the Comte de Vergennes, on July 28th, 1775, that some Englishmen thought that a war declared by England against France would frighten the Americans and force them to cautiously return to the English fold, especially if England risk losing the war and have to return Canada to France: "Lord Rocheford confided to

⁸⁸ •Ibid.

⁸⁹ •Ibid.

⁹⁰ •Ibid. oo. 151-152.

me yesterday that many people *on both sides of the London Parliament*, were intimately persuaded that the way to put an end to war in America was to open hostilities with France, and that he saw with difficulty this opinion being accredited... The partisans of this plan are not stopped by the alliance of Spain. They say that England successfully fought this power and France together at the end of the last war... [Prussia was already swept under the carpet and forgotten by English politicians]. They argue that *the fear of an unfortunate war for England that would eventually put France back in possession of Canada, would be the most effective scarecrow for America* where the proximity of our religion and our Government is extremely apprehensive. They finally say that the Americans, forced by a war to renounce the project of freedom and to decide between us and them, would certainly give them the preference⁹¹."

This opinion had been known for a long time in French and foreign diplomatic, and strategic circles. This is why, *the French diplomats had already planned to give up recovering New France and its valiant people with the sole purpose of facilitating American independence*. It was thus necessary from now on that the French reassure the American rebels by committing themselves in writing to this effect, in the Franco-American Treaty of Alliance, by definitively renouncing Canada and abandoning the Canadian people who had fought so well for France, but who, for petty politician reasons, were to suffer the fate of the Harkis, the Acadians and the Indian tribes of Chief Pontiac.



⁹¹ ●Lettre du comte de Guînes au comte de Vergennes, London, 28 July 1775 Cornelis De Witt, Thomas Jefferson, *Étude historique sur la démocratie américain*, Didier, Paris, 1861. pp. 465 ff. "The two parties" in question in this letter are, of course, the Whigs [the Independentists] and the Tories [the Royalists].

As for certain hypotheses raised by Marcel Trudel, the prospect that the English might consider going to war against France, alone, *without any ally*, seemed rather extravagant to the French diplomats of the time: "We find it difficult to conceive that there are people unenlightened enough among them to consider, in the present circumstances, war against France as a *door of salvation*." In the eyes of the French, such a declaration seemed either a simple boast naively intended to try to frighten the enemy like a cat with a big back to look more formidable, or rather the fruit of an overwhelming vanity generated by a blind patriotism and deceptive nationalism. Never since the distant Middle Ages⁹², England had ever faced France *alone*. And this country had just been defeated by Spain in the War of the *Asiento de Negros*. But the English historians always succeeded in concealing the setbacks, because as Michel Onfray writes: "*The writing of the History makes the History: it creates the major event, then simultaneously decrees the anecdote minor anecdote*"⁹³." The English defeat that was to close this war would give the French diplomats right.



The English went to great lengths to weaken the French confidence in their new American allies. Franklin wrote on this subject that the enemy (*i.e.* the English): "presented our [American] people as *tired of war* and of Congress's way of governing. They represented that elected

⁹² ●At the Battle of Crecy, Edward's English army had 4,000 men-at-arms including 1,000 knights, 10,000 archers, 12,000 Welsh foot spearmen and 4,000 foot soldiers of continental origin. At the Battle of Poitiers, the Anglo-Gascon army totalled 12,000 men; of which 8,000 were Gascons and about 1,000 were English men-at-arms and 3,000 were Welsh [2,000 archers and 1,000 footmen]. At the Battle of Azincourt, the English totalled 6,000 men, of which 5,000 were archers and 1,000 were knights and men-at-arms, many of whom were continental.

⁹³ ●Onfray, Michel, *Les Ultras des Lumières*, Contre-histoire de la philosophie, t.4, Grasset, Paris, 2007. p.301.

body as torn by *dissensions*, etc.; but all this had little effect... And it is my firm opinion that, in spite of the considerable losses which the commerce of France has suffered since the beginning of hostilities, the Court of Versailles is still determined to continue the war until it has established our independence, and that its esteem for us has not diminished⁹⁴."

If the French had done nothing, it might have discouraged the Americans and lead to reconciliation, and, consequently, to the formation of a superpower, overwhelming in its desire for domination and greed. If the French had taken on too large a share of the action, had provided an excessive war effort, the Americans would have contributed less. In support of the first assertion, Vergennes wrote: "It is probably the party they would take⁹⁵ [to give up independence], if, deprived of the hope of a better relief than anything that has been done for them up to now, they were abandoned to the temptation of the more or less satisfactory offers which the English would infallibly make them if the success of the arms did not meet their hopes. It is good to observe here that the prejudice would be as unfortunate if the Americans succumbed to the seduction or to the terror instigated by the English... American final submission to British domination would be a formidable weapon in the hands of the English. France and Spain would regret for centuries that they had allowed the

⁹⁴ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 81; Letter of May 26, 1779, written in Passy, by B. Franklin, for the Foreign Affairs Committee of France, written in Passy on March 21, 1779.

⁹⁵ •De Witt, Cornelis, Thomas Jefferson, Étude historique sur la démocratie américaine, Didier, Paris, 1861. pp. 465 et seq. The Count of Vergennes to the Count of Guînes, from 7 August 1775 to Versailles.

English to recover⁹⁶". Today, it is easy to imagine the gigantic power of an England that would have at its disposal America's incalculable strength; it would be *Jupiter Fulgurator* brandishing the American thunderbolt to destroy mercilessly all the economic competitors of Great Britain. And Franklin's famous lightning rod could do nothing about it.



Vergennes also feared that the Americans would draw the French into a war and then let them wage war alone or almost alone: It is necessary to "*make sure above all of the perseverance and cooperation of the Americans. It would be inconsistent to arm ourselves for them and let them disarm*"⁹⁷." The words of the French Minister of Foreign Affairs will be confirmed in this by a dispatch from Conrad A. Gérard, French Ambassador in Philadelphia, dated July 25th, 1778, who quickly noted that "the zeal of the Eastern States for the recruitment of the US Army had already slowed down"⁹⁸."

Believing that France was ready to offer them everything they could wish, the insatiable Americans (to the point that they always refused to raise their own taxes, preferring to continue the war with French money) insisted until the end of the war for the French to help them *with their blood and money* to conquer Canada and Nova Scotia." In this the Americans were strangely similar to their

⁹⁶●De Witt, Cornelis, Thomas Jefferson, *Étude historique sur la démocratie américain*, Didier, Paris, 1861. pp. 465 et seq. The Count of Vergennes to the Count of Guines, from 7 August 1775 to Versailles.

⁹⁷●Ibidem. p. 465 et seq. Same letter from Vergennes to the Count of Guines, dated 7 August 1775 at Versailles.

⁹⁸●Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. p. 870 Dispatch from Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassador of France) to M. de Vergennes (Minister of Foreign Affairs), in Philadelphia on July 25, 1778.

unloved cousins from England who did not miss a single European war, but refused to fight on the battlefields and to pay back their national debt, inventing extravagant systems to reimburse (like the "*sinking fund*" or a *lottery* so that it was the poor who would repaid). This role of *patsy* or *pigeon* displeased Vergennes, so much so that he himself began to find the potion undrinkable: "*Thus, if one speaks to you about help for the next year, you will limit yourself to answering that you still ignore the intentions of the King in this respect. However, you will not conceal from Mr. Morris that we are astonished at the requests that are constantly being made to us, while the Americans stubbornly refuse to pay any taxes. It seems to us however much more natural to raise on them rather than on the subjects of the King of France, the funds required for the defense of their cause. As for the payment of interest, you can peremptorily declare that the King will not take care of it, and that the discontent which will result from this determination will only testify to the gratitude and attachment of the Americans to France*"⁹⁹."

Caught as children in the divorce between France and England and cynically anxious as cunning adolescents, to make the most of each other, the Americans were thus described in 1779 by the French Ambassador Conrad A. Gérard: "Some applaud themselves—as I have already had the honor of mandating—that they have not made any offer to His Majesty the King [of France]. They flatter themselves to profit of the success of the War without making any new commitment, and without making any new effort, to secure not only the Newfoundland fisheries,

⁹⁹ •Bancroft, George, translated and annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, self-published, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. Letter from the Comte de Vergennes to the Chevalier de La Luzerne (new ambassador), dated 14 October 1782, at Versailles. p. 289

but also Newfoundland, Nova Scotia and even Canada. Their secret dilemma is that America will receive these advantages either from the hands of France and Spain as a portion of the fruit of their success, or from England as the price of their resistance¹⁰⁰."

In the face of this faction of Congress —led by Lee and Adams— who were adamant that the French should help the Americans to conquer Canada and who promised in return to simply increase the fishing facilities for the French at the expense of England, the French replied that the *Treaty of Alliance* only implied independence, and not additional conquests. Moreover this same John Adams, who would become the first Vice-President of the United States and second President, took off his mask immediately after independence to become the worst enemy of France and to arrive at the "*quasi-war*" [a "near war"] with the Nation that had reached out to him: "*Canis manum hominis pascentis mordet*"¹⁰¹.

Numerous were in France and everywhere in Europe the speculative minds who, "carrying their views beyond the possible, wanted to envision America as a formidable power one day, even against its benefactors. That by a *gradual succession* (Sic!) of years, America could become quite considerable, one will not deny it, but that it could become formidable¹⁰² is a terror against which one will be safeguarded by taking care of the *form of constitution* that this group will be adopting for himself... when constituting

¹⁰⁰ •Instead of "resistance", some copies write "reconciliation" (reconciliation with England after the war, of course.) Henri Doniol, *Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique, correspondance diplomatique et documents*, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Memorandum communicated to the King on July 23, 1777, and approved the same day by His Majesty, Volume II, p. 466 et seq.

¹⁰¹ •Jacques Vinerbi, Tahiti and La Réunion.

¹⁰² •No doubt they were already considering the bite of the famous dog!

a great Confederation, because this nation can take a rapid rise and make itself hateful to all its neighbors¹⁰³."



As a result, the power—and therefore the dangerousness— of England being neutralized by the loss of her American Thirteen-Colonies, all that remained was to invent a way to counteract the dangerousness¹⁰⁴ of these new United States, truly perilous for all. The French diplomats decided that, in the first instance, France should not encourage the annexation of Canada and Nova Scotia by the Americans or else they will multiply their potential power and thus their dangerousness. This was to be absolutely avoided while remaining *strictly secret* in order not to disappoint the Americans.

In a second step, *the French diplomats judged that Canada and Nova Scotia should remain in England's hands so that the northern border of the United States remained a permanent threat from the English, who were jealous and angry about American independence. This enemy presence would not only occupy the minds of the Americans and calm their ambitions, but at the same time would force England to maintain ruinous garrisons on Canadian territory. Thus, the two powers would be neutralized by each other for the greater benefit of the other European powers.* "Canada remaining in the power of England, this frontier alone would suffice to fill with anxiety the southern colonies which could never be perfectly calm and reassured about the views of this neighbor¹⁰⁵."

¹⁰³ ●In the etymological sense of the word formidable, from Latin *formidābilis* = redoubtable, fearsome terrible, that instills fear.

¹⁰⁴ ●Henri Doniol, *History of France's involvement in the establishment of the United States of America*, diplomatic correspondence and documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Memorandum communicated to the King on July 23, 1777, and approved the same day by His Majesty, Volume II, p. 466 et seq..

¹⁰⁵ ●Henri Doniol, *History of France's involvement in the establishment of the United States of America*, diplomatic correspondence and documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur

The French diplomats thus wanted, for once, to adopt a strategy close to that of England, whose "*Balance of Powers*" technique consisted in launching one or several nations against France on the European continent¹⁰⁶, while England itself was taking advantage of the melee in Europe by seizing French colonies in the distance.

In its "colonial" wars, too, England knew how to oppose with genius—to neutralize them without any loss for her—the Scots versus the Irish, the Scots versus the French Métis of the Red River, the Scots versus the French Canadians¹⁰⁷.

But if the English knew perfectly how to take advantage of these fruitful antagonisms, French diplomats completely missed their strategic opposition of Canada versus the United States, for the latter quickly became gigantic, while Canada remained, as for its population, struck of chronic dwarfism, for climatic reasons¹⁰⁸. As a result, our Canada as well as England are now obediently lining up at the feet of the American giant, taking great care not to step on its toes.

In July 1777, therefore, the head of French Diplomacy was pursuing his chimerical reveries: "Canada in the

de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Memorandum communicated to the King on July 23, 1777, and approved the same day by His Majesty, Volume II, p. 466 et seq..

¹⁰⁶ • The English called this strategy *Balance of Powers*. During the War of the Spanish Succession and the War of the Austrian Succession, it launched, among others, Austria, the United Provinces and several states of the Holy Roman Empire. During the Seven Years' War it was powerful Prussia and the United Provinces.

¹⁰⁷ • During the insurrection of 1837 in Quebec; most of the regiments that subdued the Quebec population were made up of Scots expelled from Upper Scotland under pseudo-economic pretexts following the destruction of recalcitrant clans by the English Government. These Scots then received boundary lands in Ontario along Quebec's southern border in the Loch Garry area, where they finally mixed their blood with that of Quebecers.

¹⁰⁸ • 90% of our population clumps within 100 km of the US border; the rest of Canada remains desperately empty.

hands of England will be the *security*¹⁰⁹ that they will not wish to break entirely with two powers [France and Spain, the *Two-Crowns*] which have so gratuitously obliged them, and pay back for their generosity with the blackest ingratitude. They will make peace because it will probably no longer be in the power of their Governments to continue the war but they will observe an absolute neutrality; will offer the vessels of the Two Crowns the asylum of their ports where they will find safety and protection¹¹⁰."

It is so good to dream of a different world in which one would have the illusion of pulling the strings at will, as the Machiavellian Albion did act with great intelligence; especially when this last country, precisely took the place that France traditionally held. And Vergennes did not deprive himself of ranting and raving: "Could one not even by behaving skillfully, by not opposing the inclination for peace if we recognized it as inevitable, make them feel that this same peace can only be assured and lasting as long as it is guaranteed by the *Two Crowns*, and that this condition is indispensable. It would form in peace and serenity a bond that it would be very possible to make indissoluble¹¹¹."

¹⁰⁹ •This obscure phrase—in its obsolete style—could be translated into modern French: "The threatening presence of England in Canada will be the security key that will prevent the Americans from breaking their alliance of friendship with the French and the Spanish, who have helped them so selflessly, and [will also] prevent them from repaying them for this aid by the most vile ingratitude." The two powers are the Two Crowns, France and Spain. Henri Doniol, *Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique, correspondance diplomatique et documents*, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Memorandum communicated to the King on July 23, 1777, and approved the same day by His Majesty, Volume II, p.

¹¹⁰ •Ibidem. p. 466 and following.

¹¹¹ •There was in Paris, a kind of rivalry between Franklin and Adams. The latter refused to communicate with Franklin who was the head of the American mission. Vergennes tended to regard Franklin as the principal representative of the Thirteen Colonies, which inflamed Adams' anger. Very undiplomatic and very angry, Adams developed a real hatred against Vergennes and against France. The head of French diplomacy then refused to consider Adams as the representative of the Thirteen Colonies, and

But, the Two-Crowns who believed they were *obliging* the Americans in an *indissoluble* way, will be "paid for their generosity by the blackest of ingratitude" since, as soon as the Independence War was over, President John Adams, will become the worst enemy of the French¹¹².

As for Spain (who had hardly participated in this war), the United States, pushed by the *US Sugar Lobbies* that had invested in the plantations in Cuba, declared war on Spain a century later (in 1898) and dismantled the last Spanish colonies. The Merchant Lobbies who corrupt the Members of Congress and thus debase Democracy, do not mind Democracy, care little for gratitude to previous benefactors, for their only motivation is to increase their wealth, and add a few extra dollars on top of the symbolic mountain that embodies their wealth.

Massive were the efforts of the English intended to sabotage the insistent requests of the Americans who wished the direct an intervention by the French. London knew very well what was being planned between the French and the Americans, because the British Secret Service had moles in Passy itself, in the residence of Benjamin Franklin, who centralized all the information. The French Secret Service, which also kept a close eye on all these comings and goings, had warned Franklin on several occasions *that* the mail from the Hôtel de Valentinois residence in Passy, was being carefully scrutinized by

contented himself with discussing with Franklin who was effectively the accredited representative of his country. Details of these antagonisms and personality conflicts afflicted Passy's American Delegation can be found in, *A Great Improvisation. : Franklin, France and the Birth of America d'après Stacy Schiff*, Owl Books ; Henry Holt Books, New York, NY 2005. p. 247

¹¹² Out of jealousy for Benjamin Franklin, who was favoured by France, John Adams became so anti-French that as soon as he was elected President of the United States, he maintained a state of hostility towards France (Quasi-War) in retaliation for the abolition of slavery decreed by the French Revolution in the West Indies. His francophobia cost him his second term as he was replaced by the francophile Thomas Jefferson.

English moles, *and that* summaries sent to London informed the English government even before the American Congress: "How is it that what happens at Versailles is always so well known in London?" asked Beaumarchais. The French Secret Service even warned Franklin that the traitor was none other than the young secretary of Representative Arthur Lee. We know today that this man was a mole, but Arthur Lee stubbornly defended the innocence of his spy-secretary, for reasons that could cast a veil of suspicion over Arthur Lee himself.

The Lee brothers, who were themselves part of the immense enclosed field of the American Legation in Passy, in which jealousies and slanders were directed against Benjamin Franklin, wrote numerous letters to the Continental Congress to whine and weep about Franklin's supposed faults (indolence, softness, meanness, arrogance...)

In the end, all these leaks meant that Franklin kept the Lee brothers away from confidential information. The Lee brothers, furious that sensitive information was being kept from them, and devoured by an all-consuming paranoia, became truly enraged. Presumably bought by the English spy services, they perhaps sought to throw the confusion in the Hôtel de Valentinois in order to paralyze the functioning of the American Legation.

Commissioner Silas Deane, sided with Franklin and could no longer bear to have anything to do with the Lee brothers... and didn't know who could. Deane was tired of the aggressiveness, the suspicions, the "vulgar and disgusting way Lee constantly talked about the French nation." He ridiculed the French and insulted them constantly in front of the household staff, each of whom was

a spy¹¹³", each lackey a snitch, each coachman a snoop, each postilion a mole in the service of one of the principal royal Courts of Europe. And all this beautiful world was carefully watched by the Secret Police of Vergennes who spied on spies without any inhibition.



In January 1779, England tried one last time to derail the Franco-American Alliance. The Englishman David Hartley, a great friend of Franklin in England, member of the British Parliament and appointed by George III: *Plenipotentiary for American Affairs*, advised Benjamin Franklin [without any other form of finessing] to *break the Alliance of America with France in order to facilitate the coming of peace between England and America*. The trap was crude; the British (who knew they were being spied on by all the Secret Services of Europe) assumed that some simple hesitation on Franklin's part to fulfill his obligations to the French, would likely to have caused a lot of wavering on the French side and thrown a cold between the Allies.

Benjamin Franklin did not fall into the traps. He knew his own English people too well not to see the death trap set by his friend. He answered him from Passy, on February 3rd, 1779: "You tell me that "the alliance which exists between France and America is the great stumbling block which prevents peace from being made;" you add "Whatever commitments America has made [with France], can at least be renounced, with the consent of both parties" [presumably America and... England?], to remove

¹¹³ •Schiff, Stacy, *A Great Improvisation : Franklin, France, and the Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York, 2005. p.147.

such a great obstacle to any general Peace treaty. And if, in order to make peace, the parties could meet on *free and clear* ground, you think that alone would be a great advance to the people of England¹¹⁴."

It was with rather excessive words—which revealed the exasperation at the perfidy of his mother country and his desire to clear himself of suspicion to the vigilant ears of the French Secret Service—that Franklin demonstrated to David Hartley how outrageous his proposal was: "The constant and solid interest you have shown for the happiness of America, your conduct in Parliament, prove to me sufficiently that this proposal does not emanate from you but has been suggested to you. Your extreme humanity, your love of peace, the fear you have of seeing the destruction threatening to fall upon us, have veiled your eyes with a fog that prevents you from discerning the malignity and perfidy of such a proposal. We know that your King... is thirsty for our blood; that his Ministers, weak and unprincipled are ready to carry out his cruelest orders, and his venal Parliament to vote them. What decision could make us break a solid alliance with one of the most amiable as well as the most powerful prince of Europe, against the hope of obtaining conditions of peace which we do not know, and which such a Government will later offer us, a Government which has already shamefully violated all the treaties it has made with us? It is worse than advising us to abandon the prey for the shadow... How [if we accepted your offer,] ever hope that France, or any other nation, would trust from now on to us?... Let me give you some

¹¹⁴ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 68; Secret proposals from the Englishman David Hartley to Benjamin Franklin, mentioned in Franklin's reply-letter to David Hartley, February 3, 1779 (written at his home in Passy, France). The words in italics were already highlighted in the original text.

advice: don't accept to come here to make such a proposal¹¹⁵.



At the American Mission in Passy, dissension was growing. Two clans were clashing with unprecedented violence. On one side Benjamin Franklin and Silas Deane, and on the other the Lee brothers. For obscure reasons of treachery or ambition, and personal rivalry, the Virginians William and Richard Lee hated Franklin the Massachusetts Yankee. These "Southern-Northern" rivalries complicated everything and already foreshadowed the inhuman massacres of the Civil War that was to fall upon the country 80 years later. Both clans wanted Canada to be annexed, but for different reasons. The two Virginians thought that Canada would prevent the six New England states from tyrannizing the seven southern states like Virginia. Lee went so far as to "insinuate that Silas Deane and Carmichael had organized the famous "Hynson Robbery"¹¹⁶ with, of course, Franklin's complicity¹¹⁷" The argument sometimes turned into a true storm in the American Mission's glass of water: "Paranoid by nature, Lee

¹¹⁵ •Reply to the secret proposals of the Englishman David Hartley by Benjamin Franklin, in the latter's letter to David Hartley, written on February 3, 1779 at his home in Passy, France. Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775–1790); p. 69.

¹¹⁶ •Hynson's Robbery or Hynson heist. Hynson was a captain in the U.S. Merchant Navy. He believed he was the victim of the supposed negligence of Deane and Franklin, but the large file he put together to call upon the Continental Congress was stolen by an English spy and sent to London who knew how to add fuel to the fire. Of course, the enemies of my enemies being my friends, the two Lees, Southerners supported Hynson who wished to bring accusations of malfeasance against the two American Northern Commissioners (Franklin and Silas Deane) whom they cordially hated. [The adjectives Southern and Northern are anachronistic here but show the geographical origin of these Americans, which also explains this implacable hatred.]

¹¹⁷ •Schiff, Stacy, *A Great Improvisation : Franklin, France, and the Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York, 2005. p.S148.

made it a point to be aware of the flood of information from which he felt he was kept in the dark¹¹⁸."

By September 1777, "Franklin shared little information with anyone other than Silas Deane. The two met with the Frenchman Gérard at midnight, in order to evade their colleagues¹¹⁹." Accustomed to the inextricable complications of the French Royal Court, Beaumarchais managed to decode "the imbroglio of the state of relations in the American diplomatic Mission in Paris. Lee's jealousy had mutated into a sulphureous hatred at Silas Deane, who was an obstacle to Lee's ambitions¹²⁰."

But it was obvious that the Thirteen Colonies would never be able to wrest *alone* any sort of independence from England. The London Merchant Lobbies were no more concerned with patriotism and Habeas Corpus, than the Aristocrats of the Court of Versailles were worried with the fate of Canadians, Amerindians, Acadians or even the French serfs who made up the majority of the rural population in France¹²¹. The three first groups were abandoned to their implacable enemies with the stroke of a pen. Only the number of zeros in their fortune made the hearts of the lobbyists vibrate, as the hearts of the French aristocrats when they had the honor of being invited to the *King's Sitting*. His Majesty sat on his "*chair of business*" (pierced chair). It became urgent for the American soldiers, generally dressed in rags, and whose only uniform was dishevelment, to drag France and its white-clad regiments to the North American battlefields, to face the Scots in black tartans, the English in red coats, and especially the German mercenaries dressed in blue. What beautiful colors to die

¹¹⁸ •Ibidem. p.146.

¹¹⁹ •Ibid. p.146.

¹²⁰ •Ibid. p.145.

¹²¹ •By the *Edict of August 8th, 1779*, King Louis XVI abolished *serfdom* in France. Peasant serfs were real slaves.

in! This text reported by the son of Patrick Henry (of Scottish family) shows how urgent the French intervention became: "I will be frank with you. I doubt that we will be able, alone, to overcome such a powerful nation. But," he continued (getting up from his chair with great excitement), "Where is France? Where is Spain? Where is Holland? The natural enemies of Great Britain; where will they be at these times? Do you think they will wait, idle and indifferent spectators before this conflict? Will Louis XVI stay asleep all this time? No! Believe me. When Louis XVI will be satisfied with the seriousness of our opposition, our Declaration of Independence, and the impossibility of reconciliation, then and only then will he provide us with arms, ammunition and uniforms; and not only that, he will also send his fleet and his army *to fight our battle for us*; he will draw up with us an offensive and defensive treaty, against our denatured mother¹²²." Although older, this text shows how much the intervention of France was desired, and it seems that Patrick Henry uses ambiguous words; but "*for us*" here does not mean *in our place* but *in our favor*.

On March 18th, 1777, Commissioners Franklin and Deane, at the urging request of the American Congress, insisted that the French Government declare itself openly, declare war on England and participate in the conquest of all the English colonies of North America¹²³. And as a price for these multiple conquests for the benefit of the United States, Congress generously offered France (in addition to commercial advantages), the mediocre enjoyment of a revenge for the misfortunes of the Seven Years' War:

¹²² ● Henry, William Wirth, Patrick Henry, Life, Correspondence and Speeches, Charles Scribner's Sons, New York, 1891. V. I, p. 208

¹²³ ● Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, Saint John Island (Prince Edward Island), Floridas, Bermuda, Bahamas, and of course and most importantly, Canada.

"The object of the war will be to obtain for France the appropriate satisfaction for the aforesaid insults¹²⁴, and for the United States, the establishment of their Independence and the weakening of the British power for the common security of France and America¹²⁵." But the American Congress, which offered this curious reward to a King, added that "in case of success, half of the Newfoundland fisheries and all the sugar islands will belong to France, and the surplus of the conquests would belong to the United States; the trade between the domains of the King of France and the United States, would henceforth be done exclusively by the vessels of the said French domains and of the American States¹²⁶." The Continental Congress offered the French, on condition of their conquest, half the plundering rights of the English islands of the West Indies. It reserved for itself the other half. There was enough to lure and bait an English Government under the irresistible influence of Merchant Lobbies, but without much effect on the French aristocrats who made it a point of honor to play the disinterested, because, in any case, the French nobility was derogating by indulging in commerce.

●

In the last weeks of 1777, the English ambassador at Versailles tried to sound out Vergennes to know what was going on. He gave the result of his inquiry in these words: "[Vergennes] seemed more embarrassed than I remember

¹²⁴ ● The insults inflicted on France by the disastrous Treaty of Paris of 1763. He had put an end to the Seven Years' War of sad memory for the French, who had been defeated on the European continent by Prussia, and whose England had reaped all the fruits in its scarcelle. For once, it was not the French who were fighting for the King of Prussia but the Prussians for the sole benefit of the English.

¹²⁵ ● Henri Doniol, *Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique*, correspondance diplomatique et documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Letter of March 18, 1777, from Silas Deane for himself and on behalf of B. Franklin, Commissioner Plenipotentiary of the United States of North America, addressed to the Comte de Vergennes. Volume II, pp. 319–320.

¹²⁶ ● *Ibidem*.

ever having seen him. He played with his fingers and kept silent... His Excellency, who, I imagine, does not believe himself allowed to confess the truth, and who has too much elevation of soul to stoop, to falsity and support a thing that would not be, did not answer me a single syllable... [He answered, however after thinking twice, that] "it is my rule never to give a serious answer on any important point without having informed myself of the good pleasure of the King's." Leaving him, [continued the English ambassador] I went to M. de Maurepas. Once I was let in, although he was obliged to remain in bed, for he had gout. I promised him that I would be brief, and, without any preface, I entered directly into the matter. He replied: "*There is no armament ordered yet. Your cruisers are doing us great damage, we complain, and cannot obtain justice. Perhaps we will be obliged to do it ourselves, but nothing has been decided yet. The King wishes for peace.*"

Then Maurepas spoke of our great armaments. I repeated to him the motives, and showed him the difference between our situation and that of France, the obligation in which we are to maintain, for our safety a great naval force to guard our coasts and provide the necessities of the war in America... I asked him to observe that I know French well enough to understand the full import of the expression "*There is nothing concluded yet*". He then recovered himself, and said "*Neither concluded nor begun... It is true that the Americans are making us repeated offers, and urge us strongly to accept them*"¹²⁷."

●

¹²⁷ ● Letter from Lord Stormont to the Secretary of State of England, 3rd secret and very confidential letter, written in Paris on January 22, 1778, taken from Bancroft, George, work translated and annotated by Count Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, published at the authors' expense, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. (Volume 3 contains historical documents. t.3, pp. 16 et 17.)

But let us go forward a few days in time to examine this *Franco-American Treaty of Alliance* of February 6th, 1778. As a worthy scion of England, the United States took everything without wanting to give anything, and the French were still going to fight and die not for the King of Prussia (according to the ironic expression) but for the United States, which still today¹²⁸, at each "4th of July" ceremony, carefully hide the role of the French in obtaining their independence, as if honesty could be shameful. The *Preliminary Treaty* even gave more details on the *Renunciations* that France had to accept in order to have the honor of helping the Americans: "Knowing the declarations of goodwill, and happy to take advantage of the fact that the French Government had no intention of taking back Canada, Congress proposed to France, in *Article 9* of the *Plan of the* [preliminary] *Treaty*, to renounce all conquest and possession in the North American continent. It was specified that the King of France would not under any circumstances invade or attempt to secure Labrador, New Britain, Nova Scotia Acadia, Canada, Florida, the islands of the Gulf Saint Lawrence. The Congress demanded for the United States "exclusive, undivided and perpetual possession", the day these regions were united or confederated with the United States¹²⁹." In fact, the only advantage for the French was: the right to trade with the Americans. When one knows the rather average importance that the French Aristocracy gave to trade, one can imagine the indifference that these promises aroused.

¹²⁸ •En ce XXI^e siècle.

¹²⁹ •Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 151. La Nouvelle-Bretagne or New-Britain was then a part of the extreme north of the present-day Province of Quebec and Labrador that the English had renamed as such. The name having disappeared from Canada, the English gave this name to the German island of New Pomerania in the Bismarck Archipelago.

Thus, from this preamble, was concluded, on February 6th, 1778 in Paris, between France and the United States of America, the *Franco-American Treaty of Alliance*¹³⁰: By *Article 6*, the Most Christian King renounced to ever possess Bermuda, nor any part of the Continent of North America. According to *Article 8*, neither Party could conclude either peace or truce with Britain without the prior consent of the other party; and they mutually undertook to lay down their arms only when the independence of the said United States had been formally or tacitly secured by the treaty or treaties which would terminate the war. *Article 9* declared that the parties were resolved to fulfill, each on its own part, the terms and conditions of the present treaty of alliance, according to its power and circumstances, and that they would have no compensation to claim from each other, whatever may be the turn of the war. It was signed by C.A. Gérard on side, and Benjamin Franklin, Silas Deane and Arthur Lee on the American side.

By this treaty, France renounced everything, even to recover all that this country had lost at the end of the Seven Years' War, and even disregarded, for a cause the King considered superior (but which was not), the Canadian people. And France felt obliged to fight until the total independence of the United States even if the United States violated the Article 8 by negotiating with the English behind the back of the French. Finally, France could not expect any compensation from the United States, which also allowed the Americans to avoid paying for all the supplied they received from Beaumarchais, claiming as a pretext

¹³⁰ ●Recueil des Traités de la France, publié sous les auspices du Ministère des Affaires étrangères par M. de Clercq, ancien ministre plenipotentiaire, Consul de France, Tome 15, supplément 1713-1885, A. Durand et Pedone-Lauriel, Éditeurs, Paris, 1888. p. 113 ff.

that some of the equipment was of inferior quality. France was still going to fight *for the King of Prussia*, as this country had done during the eighteenth century and as it will still do it during the XIXth century¹³¹.

With a Commerce Treaty on February 6th, a treaty was signed: *The Treaty of offensive and defensive Alliance*. It was intended to counteract the reactions of England to the Treaty of Commerce, because the Royal Courts of Europe foresaw England unable to control its jealousy because of these treaty of commerce. Under the effect of hatred, England would necessarily lose her head, declare war on France, and be inevitably defeated. "The news of this reached the Congress on May 3rd. It was greeted with public rejoicings and provoked enthusiasm¹³²." For most Americans, the direct intervention of France marked the tipping point to total independence. No one imagined for a single moment, and in the dreamiest fantasies that England, alone and without the support of a solid coalition, could defeat France.

The Alliance was not proclaimed until March 20th, one week after England's Declaration of War on France. During the celebration at Versailles, Franklin made an excellent impression on the Court as a handsome old man, founder of his nation, and scientist who discovered many things on electricity. He had the virtue of not being French, therefore of not belonging to any social class in France, in a country strongly subjected to the contempt which descended the social hierarchy like a waterfall of disdain. Therefore, he did not have to suffer any contempt from the Aristocracy and the Court, usually so venomous.

¹³¹ ●Out of friendship and gratitude of Napoleon III for Queen Victoria who still lacked English volunteers, the French died *en masse* during the Second Opium War in China as well as during the Crimean War, in the name of insignificant pretexts.

¹³² ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Chap. 8.

The continuation was less positive. Anxious to forget its fiscal debt on independence and its moral debts towards the French, the Continental Congress *unilaterally* cancelled the Franco-American Alliance on July 7th, 1798, as soon as all danger from England had been removed¹³³. In spite of all the promises made by the Americans, the treaty of alliance of 1778, which promised the French the defense of French territories on the American continent, was not respected by the United States in 1793, when revolutionary France entered into conflict with England in the Caribbean¹³⁴. The United States could have remained perfectly neutral, *but the opposition of the American Merchant Lobbies to the abolition of slavery decreed by the French* made this American neutrality very negative. They forbade the French Revolutionaries the right to arm and equip privateer ships in American ports, denied American ports, and refused them the right to sell French catches in the United States. All of this will led to the end of the alliance and the "eternal gratitude" of the Americans towards France¹³⁵. It was felt that this great country of Liberty had also fallen into the clutches of the American Merchant Lobbies, which were no less greedy than those in London.



But let's go back in time. As soon as the Franco-American Treaty of Alliance was announced, which recognized the Independence of the United States, England

¹³³ ●A Century of Lawmaking for a New Nation: U.S. Congressional Documents and Debates, 1774-1975, The Library of Congress. Available on line.

¹³⁴ ●This was the *Slave War*. The revolutionary France having abolished slavery in 1793, the English, who feared that their own slaves would be contaminated in the West Indies by these anti-economic ideas, attacked the French islands to re-establish slavery; without success. Finally, at the end of the century, Napoleon Bonaparte re-established slavery on French territory, *for the sake of social peace* (Sic! Incredible villainy!), and abolished it again at the end of the Napoleonic Empire... without effect.

¹³⁵ ●Kaplan, Lawrence S., *Entangling Alliances with None: American Foreign Policy in the Age of Jefferson*, The Kent State University Press, Kent (Ohio), 1992. pp.27-28.

fell into the most intense despondency. The speech of Britain's Whig Prime Minister, Lord Chatham¹³⁶, betrayed both the anguish of the economic lobbies whose greed had brought about this revolution, as well as the renewed pride of the English people: "I thank God that I have been able to come here today to do my duty (chanted Lord Chatham, pointing an index finger deformed but threatening like a dagger, in the direction of the abhorred France), and to speak on a subject which is so deeply impressed upon my mind. I am old and infirm. I have one foot—even more than one foot—in the grave. I have left my bed to defend my country; perhaps for the last time here." The House of Commons was so hung up on his lips "that you could hear a handkerchief fall", said a witness to the scene. He spoke of the affairs of America, punctuating every mistake he had predicted with a "*I told you so! I told you so!*"¹³⁷ in his London intonation, which was also punctuated by the tonic accent of each word as by the rhythmic marching of a regiment of German mercenaries.

Old Pitt, who was thus hammering out the last speech of his life and living his last minutes on earth, scrutinized the affairs of America with the clear, inquisitive eyes for which he had been so much admired in his best years for his stubbornness (all Thatcherite!) in making wars for the benefit of the English Lobbyists (of which he was a part), won with German and Scottish blood. Pitt

¹³⁶ ● William Pitt, 1^{er} comte de Chatham, the Great Commoner (1708-1778), also known as William Pitt the Old by historians, was an English statesman. The nickname The Old One distinguished him from his son William Pitt the Younger (today we would say Junior and Senior) He was also known as the Great Commoner, (the Great Commoner and also the Great Member of the House of Commons). The American city of Pittsburgh (Fort Dusquesne under the French) is named after him. Pitt was the grandson of Thomas Pitt, Governor of Madras, nicknamed the Diamond because he had found and sold an extraordinary cut diamond (141 carats) called The Duke of Orleans, which he sold for the extraordinary sum of £135,000 of the time..

¹³⁷ ● "And so it proved! And so it proved!"

could not help but give a *zero point* to Lord Mansfield who had recommended the *over taxation* of the Thirteen Colonies, which had precipitated the country into the present collapse.

With his *legendary modesty*, rightly born of his supreme glory during his career as Prime Minister, he came to present himself simply as the *tutelary redeemer*: "*My Lords, I rejoice that my grave has not yet closed upon me!*" he said, raising his deformed index finger to the sky, not knowing that his tombstone was in the process of falling and closing his superb life as a plutocrat. "I rise against the dismemberment of our ancient and most noble monarchy! "Handicapped as I am by the inaction of disability, I am not the most suitable to come to the aid of my motherland in so perilous a conjecture; but, my Lords! as long as I have my mind and memory at my disposal, I will never consent to deprive the descendants of the Royal House of Brunswick, the heirs of Princess Sophie, of their just inheritance... Shall we tarnish the brilliance of this nation by an ignominious renunciation of its rights and possessions? This great nation that has survived the depredations of the Danes, the incursions of the Scots, the conquest of the Normans, which resisted the threatening invasion of the Spanish Armada, is now prostrate before the House of Bourbon? It is obvious, my Lords, that our nation is no longer what it once was! Can a people who, seventeen years ago, were considered the *Terror of the World*, bow their heads so low as to say to their inveterate old enemy [France, of course!]: "*Take all we have, we ask only for peace*"¹³⁸." This is impossible!...

If it is absolutely necessary to declare oneself for peace or for war, and that the former cannot be achieved

¹³⁸ • to tell its ancient inveterate enemy : Take all we have, only give us peace?

in honor, why don't we launch ourselves without delay into the latter? I am not, I confess, very informed about the resources of the Kingdom, but I trust that it possesses enough to maintain its just rights... My Lords, any feeling is more desirable than despair. Let us at least make an attempt, and if we fail let us fail like men¹³⁹!"

It was a courageous speech, similar to the one Sir Winston Churchill made when he welcomed the British Army which, in 1940, had fled before the Wehrmacht, and deserted the French Army in open country, abandoning its 4,000 cannons and all its equipment on the the beaches of Dunkirk.

When his speech was over, so was his life. William Pitt-the-Old, 1st Earl of Chatham, suddenly opened his mouth, fell unconscious, and began his agony without delay to die within the day. His motion to pursue a desperate war against the French —despairing because for the very first time in its History, England found itself alone to face France, having had no time to stir up a coalition to tie the hands of the French— was adopted, and the British ambassador at Versailles was immediately recalled.

●

Many saw the French intervention in America as a reprehensible intrusion into the affairs of England. But curiously the opinion of the Anglo-Irish historian William Edward Hartpole Lecky transgressed the general convictions of his countrymen: "*Men of English blood*, he wrote, *think that France is as much in its right as Hesse in interfering in their domestic quarrels*"¹⁴⁰ between Americans and English.

¹³⁹ ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Chapitre 8

¹⁴⁰ ●Lecky, William Edward Hartpole, *History of England in the Eighteenth Century*, Longmans, Green & Co. Londres, Bombay et Calcutta, 1909. Vol. III. pp. 453 et seq. England recruited its mercenaries in Germany (mainly in Hesse)..)

Lord North wanted to avert the peril of war with France by offering the Thirteen Colonies what they had been asking for since 1774, as well as a total and absolute amnesty for the rebels; on the only condition that their inhabitants were willing to remain as subjects of the London decisions. Unfortunately, these same rebels were no longer satisfied with half measures. The direct intervention of France gave them the prospect of much more benefits than they had hoped for until then. "They therefore rejected any arrangement which did not have as its basis the recognition of their total independence¹⁴¹", condemning, by the same token, England to drink the chalice to the dregs.

As soon as the declaration of war was announced, most enlightened Europeans bet on the victory of the French. "England has never been in such a perilous situation," warned one ambassador, predicting that if France made no mistake, England was lost¹⁴²." The enthusiasm of the nations and the bets were as fiery as the chess championship between Karpov and Kasparov in Seville in 1987.

When Lord Stormont left Paris, the scientist Le Roy recalled: "*I have never seen a man so happy, so jubilant as Mr. Franklin was on the day Lord Stormont, the British ambassador, left Paris on the occasion of our break with his Court. We dined together, and he, who was usually so calm, so serene, seemed to me that day a different man, transformed by the joy he radiated*¹⁴³." As one man's happiness always makes another's misfortune, Lord Stormont, for his part, put his furniture up for sale when he left Paris. *Le Tout-Paris*, which had nothing better to do, laughed at an article in the press that read: "A large quantity of table

¹⁴¹ ● Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Chapitre 8

¹⁴² ● Schiff, Stacy, *A Great Improvisation : Franklin, France, and the Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York, 2005. p.144 4.

¹⁴³ ● Ibid. p.144

linen that was never used. "No wonder said the malicious tongues, he never gave food¹⁴⁴!" Although good ambassador, he suffered, in spite of his wealth, from a solid reputation of stinginess.

The eternal Franco-English war, which had actually lasted since 1066 (interspersed with more or less brief truces), was reignited all at once suddenly with England's declaration of war. It was especially at this moment that "France could appreciate the good effects of the administration of Choiseul: Its Navy was able to fight with advantage against that of England. A fleet of twelve ships and four frigates left Toulon for America, under the orders of the Comte d'Estaing. Another one was assembled in Brest to fight in the seas of Europe¹⁴⁵" with the aim to threaten *one of these eternal descents which basically had for strategic goal only to prevent the English fleet from sending too many naval forces to the colonies*. The lieutenant-general Louis Guillouet, Comte d'Orvilliers¹⁴⁶, left Brest with thirty-two ships, and drove back the Royal Navy "in the *Battle of Ouessant*, against Admiral Keppel (July 27th, 1778). England, frightened to see France reappearing on the sea on equal terms, had its admiral brought before a War Council¹⁴⁷." The strategic dreams of Choiseul had had, at least, one real advantage for France.

●

¹⁴⁴ ●Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, traduite de l'anglais et annotée par Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachussets, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790); p. 47 ; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to David Hartley, written at Passy on February 12, 1778. p. 65.

¹⁴⁵ ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Chap. 9.

¹⁴⁶ ●Louis Guillouet d'Orvilliers was appointed Lieutenant General of the Naval Armies (Vice-Admiral) on 6 February 1777. He was 67. [Vergé-Franceschi, Michel, *The General Officers of the French, English and Dutch Navies from 1643 to 1715.*]

¹⁴⁷ ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. Chapitre 9, p. 76.

It was, to be sure, a very great day for the Americans that led to the enthusiastic support of the last hesitant ones. When the French intervention was announced to the crews of the French War Fleet, "the American minister and the officers of this nation who were on board burst out their joy with expressions of perfect cordiality. They shook our hands and called us their liberators"¹⁴⁸.

In the Thirteen-Colonies, as soon as France's active participation spread, if there was euphoria among the Whigs (the supporters of independence), there was immense exasperation among the others, the Tories, those who secretly opposed it, the same ones in the circle of John Adams who, after the end of the war, will retaliate by being the cause of the "quasi-war" against France. The reception in the Thirteen-Colonies of the French squadron and of the French Expeditionary Corps was most grandiose; the Americans were very happy to welcome their liberators.

These Whig and Tory Americans were the sons and daughters of those who, just 24 years earlier, had perpetrated a terrible ethnic cleansing in Acadia, by order of the British High Command, by deporting the French populations from the Acadian lands to the Thirteen Colonies¹⁴⁹. Afflicted and painful were undoubtedly the Acadians deported in 1755 to these thirteen American colonies by seeing 28,000 French soldiers and sailors come ashore to

¹⁴⁸ ●De Castries, Scipion, Maritime memorabilia, presented and annotated by Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, p. 89.

¹⁴⁹ ●The former Acadia corresponds to the Canadian provinces of Nova Scotia and Prince Edward Island (formerly Île Saint-Jean). The French populations were deported to the Thirteen Colonies. From there, the Acadians (Catholics), very badly received by the populations (Protestants) fled to Louisiana where they were called Cajuns, to Canada, to the Magdalen Islands, to Gaspésie, Newfoundland, and to the Île de Ré in France. Others returned to the virgin territories of what is now New Brunswick and created what is now New Acadia. The land that the Acadians had cleared in former Acadia had been immediately distributed to English settlers and Tories in the Thirteen Colonies..

liberate the Americans, while the same France had sent only 3,500 infantrymen to defend the gigantic New France, which was 16 times the size of France¹⁵⁰.

Although Philadelphia was a predominantly Quaker city, and since the members of this sect had courageously¹⁵¹ opted to keep the status as an English colony, this city had become the capital of the new country and the seat of the Continental Congress. On July 10th, 1780, the French War Fleet appeared in front of Newport's facilities. Two days later, Rochambeau landed, without any English opposition, with a first contingent of 5,100 men escorted by a small squadron of only 7 ships-of-the-line (and 2 frigates).

On August 23rd, 1779, the birthday of the King of France was celebrated in Philadelphia and in all the major American cities with much pomp and circumstance. "From the morning, the great flag of the United States¹⁵² was unfurled on the main wharf, and the artillery of the city and [French] vessels made several Salutes which were repeated at noon and at sunset. The City bells rang alternately throughout the day. The Militia companies paraded. A Congressional Committee composed of one member

¹⁵⁰ •New France included Canada, Acadia and Louisiana. France had sent a few additional small battalions, but with insufficient escort, the troop transports had been captured by a strong English squadron stationed at the mouth of the St Lawrence. But no replacement reinforcement had arrived to help the Canadians who had provided ten thousand soldiers (for a population of 60,000 people, of which 16% of the population was mobilized), while the Thirteen Colonies then had 1,300,000 inhabitants, and could thus recruit more soldiers than there were inhabitants in Canada, but in fact they only took volunteers (about 1% of the population). Fortunately, fearlessness and bravery of Canadians had no equal; They had thus won great victories over forces that were many times superior to them.

¹⁵¹ •Courageously because they suffered greatly, and eventually disappeared from the religious map of the United States.

¹⁵² •It was the current flag (with 13 red and white stripes and 13 white stars on a blue background in canton), adopted two years earlier by the Continental Congress. Until then the rebellious Thirteen Colonies used the flag of the British East India Co., which featured the same 13 stripes with the union-jack in the canton.

from each State went to the Minister Plenipotentiary of the King of France, to congratulate him on this occasion... The President of the State, and that of the City Committee and a large number of citizens also complimented this Minister. The day was concluded with a fireworks display ordered by the Executive Council of Pennsylvania and executed to the loud and repeated cheers of the people of Philadelphia¹⁵³."

At the Boston celebration, "everyone was a fervent Francophile"; many were secretly pro-English, but anxious not to be accused of treason, or worse, beaten up, stripped naked, "*tarred and feathered*", humiliated and even expelled, stripped of all their real and personal property. During this celebration for welcoming the French, the "most remarkable toast were carried, first to the King of France then to the Continental Congress, then to *la Marine Royale* and its illustrious admiral. I shall dispense with saying all the nice things that were said when these different toasts were given."

In the evening, there were "illuminations and a magnificent ball was given to us by Governor General Encook. All the ladies of Boston came to display their grace [wrote Scipion de Castries]; their finery seemed to us elegant in its simplicity. The ladies from all the surrounding areas had been ordered to attend and the number was prodigious. Each of us had already made some acquaintance, and the ball gave us an opportunity to cement them. The English, before our arrival, had portrayed us to the *fair sex* under the most ridiculous colors and had forgotten nothing to throw on us the greatest disfavor..."

¹⁵³ • Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. p.871 Dispatch from Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassador of France) to Mr. de Vergennes (Minister for Foreign Affairs), Philadelphia.

General Encook's ball "was particularly remarkable by the quantity of beautiful and pretty women that one admired there¹⁵⁴." All the participants had been ordered to attend and did not dare to decline the invitation. The watchwords, recommended by the Government and especially by Benjamin Franklin, who was well aware of the Francophobic feelings of his fellow citizens, were *good reception* and *affability*. Henceforth those who called themselves Tories were under threat by the supporters of Independence and especially by the lukewarms ones, the hesitant ones, suspected of royalism, who *redoubled their zeal* to distance themselves from their dangerous ideas: "One looks upon the attachment to the French alliance as the touchstone of Whiggism. The most suspicious people, carried away by the "Francophilic" torrent, try to make themselves popular by outdoing, by bidding against others. A suspicion would lose them at this moment. The Alliance is in a way the rallying cry uniting the factions that divide the State of Pennsylvania.

In the Continental Congress, there is no longer any room for sarcasm, dangerous insinuations, suspicions of our views, and expressions of confidence in the England's readiness to receive the Americans with open arms. All the Deputies are inclined, *as if in envy*¹⁵⁵, to do what may be agreeable to the King of France. The leaders of the factions are distinguished by their eagerness¹⁵⁶."

¹⁵⁴ •De Castries, Scipion, *Maritime memorabilia*, presented and annotated by Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, pp. 140 et suiv.

¹⁵⁵ •As much as possible. Not highlighted in the original text.

¹⁵⁶ •Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, *Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington*, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. p. 865. Dépêche cryptée de Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassadeur de France) à M. de Vergennes (Ministre des Affaires Étrangères), écrite à Philadelphie le 5 septembre 1779.

Scipion de Castries, then an officer in the Marine Royale, gave a remarkable description of the reception that the various parties reserved for the newly landed *French Expeditionary Corps*. The Americans "gave us all the marks of friendship possible. The leaders were very eager to see us and politics demanded such eagerness. But the people had not yet forgotten that they were English and the national hatred had not had time to die out. Another class of citizens added to the little taste which they had for us, the contempt they had for our cause: the *Tories* or *Royalists*."

And Scipion, his mind gangrenous with a thousand class prejudices, dissected American society with the scalpel of a French aristocrat. The Royalists, "*the Tories*"¹⁵⁷ were in general the best element in this nation. Most of them were gentlemen and had held professions, either in the civil or the military. Most of them had received their education either in England or in France. Their manners in general were very good: in a word, they alone formed the good company of the country." It was clear that Scipion would have preferred to fight for the latter, but he had come to fight for the beggars.

The Independents, *the Whigs*, on the other hand, "were in this society an inferior class. They were not very polite, and though they cajoled us a great deal, their cajoling had nevertheless something harsh and hard which sought to imitate republican frankness and which was only the coarseness that was natural to them. Tory women were remarkable, either for their beauty or for the excellence of their manners: Mrs. Temple, Mrs. Bell, Mrs. Schmit, Mrs.

¹⁵⁷ • Tories or royalists, often called traitors by Americans and loyalists by English. Like what we can be both at the same time ! Thanks to colonial privileges that favored Protestant Englishmen, and discrimination against Germans, Celts, Catholics, the wealthy generally were among the English in America, who had risen to middle-class status.

Carteret, Mrs. MacCarthy and Mrs. Macnemara. These ladies had the best possible tone and we could have enjoyed their company, but politics prevented us from seeing them often¹⁵⁸, and the habit of looking upon the Tories as enemies had given us a wild air which extended to their amiable wives¹⁵⁹."

The young Scipion de Castries, was a high-flying naval officer, aristocrat, marinated in a pre-revolutionary French society undermined by contempt and class prejudice. Ten years later, those who were despised would take the Bastille and overthrow the established order. But the American Tories had little to do with the French aristocracy. In America, some families were rich because they created jobs for others, and ultimately wealth for all. In France, the Aristocracy lived as parasites off the work of the despised mass of serfs and labourers.

This caste snobbery can also be read in this exchange between two officers, one French and the other American, who were very surprised to see that local officers could be commoners, whereas in France this was one of the many privileges of the Nobility. This exchange took place a little later, in 1781: "Our innkeeper was a captain. There were cobblers who were colonels. "An American asked a senior French officer what he was doing in France. "*I do nothing!*" the latter replied without the slightest complex. "*But your father?*" "*He doesn't do anything either!*" or "*He is a minister!*" "*But I have an uncle who is a marshal!*" "*Ah! That's a very good profession*"¹⁶⁰." The anecdote is perhaps

¹⁵⁸ •The confusion between the imperfect subjunctive of the verb to see and the present subjunctive of the verb to screw leaves a strange impression to an English-speaking reader, and one wonders if the writer was not aware of it.

¹⁵⁹ •De Castries, Scipion, *Maritime memorabilia, présentés et annotés par Gérard de Colbert-Turgis*, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, pp. 145 et suiv.

¹⁶⁰ •In the United States, a marshal is an official of the judicial system, or a police officer; in England an officer of the Court; In France, a farrier.

attributed to Lauzun by some others to Ségur or Broglie. But it paints a good picture of the habits here¹⁶¹." For Americans, work was a positive and desirable activity. For French aristocrats, work was an inferior activity of the so-called "working classes."

The two societies (French and American) were at *light years* from each other. In France, officers (always an aristocrat) did not have the right to exercise commerce to earn money under penalty of being stripped of their Nobility. Work was considered a degradation for this privileged caste¹⁶². In America, the one who did not earn his living by his work was considered abject and vile. In England, at the same time, army ranks [called *officers' commissions*] were bought at a high price. The bourgeoisie were putting up their boys who had no talent for commerce or for anything else. As for the aristocrats, they could afford the higher ranks.

All these dashing French officers, rich, handsome and well-bred did not fail to arouse fantasies in the ladies of New England; especially since, as today, the English want to imagine that the libertinage which fascinates their senses comes necessarily from elsewhere. "We found the easiest access to women, that is to say with the young ladies, because those who wanted to push a little far the galantry with ladies were excluded without mercy from their house. One cannot do a greater insult to a married woman than to give the impression that she can *love talk* or flirt... We would be wrong to think that the ease that we find with young ladies is a sign of bad morals. Married women know that they are no longer the mistresses to dispose of their

¹⁶¹ • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 125 de la vers. fr..

¹⁶² • The etymology of the word work in French is revealing: from the Latin tri-pallium – three stakes. An instrument of torture. The work is still used today to castrate bulls.

hearts and their persons¹⁶³". The top of the colonial society thus gave an appearance which pleased the French aristocrats. But could they afford to scratch the virtuous veneer of this rich bourgeois society? No more than it was allowed to criticize or denounce the excesses of the French Royal Court¹⁶⁴!

And Scipion continues: "We were undoubtedly very well received by the sex¹⁶⁵, and there was not a young lady in Newport who did not think herself destined to marry a French officer. We have used and unfortunately too many of us have abused of the ease with which we were admitted into the bosom of the families and of the hospitality that was cordially offered to us. It was not possible to go several times in a row in a house without choosing a sweetheart¹⁶⁶. Indifference on this point denoted a coldness that inspired contempt to Americans and especially to their families¹⁶⁷."



But if the American Whigs (mostly Scottish, Irish, Germans, Huguenots, and others) were happy to see the French come in to help them get rid of the English, the Tories —English by birth— would not calm their anger, secretly or half-heartedly.

¹⁶³ ●De Castries, Scipion, *Maritime memories*, presented and annotated by Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, p. 271. Le prince évoque ici le stationnement des troupes à Newport.

¹⁶⁴ ●Nicolas Gabriel de La Reynie (mort en 1709), lieutenant général de police de Paris, could have confirmed this, he who, responsible for investigating the Poisons Affair, was forbidden to incriminate the high nobility. Only the small fry was punished.

¹⁶⁵ ●Words do not always mean what appearances seem to make them say nowadays. *Sex* then meant women. The etymology is indecisive; Some relate it to the Latin *secare*, to cut (therefore "*the cut*"), others to the Sanskrit *sacate*, to follow, that is to say the following, the descent.

¹⁶⁶ ●In English in the original text.

¹⁶⁷ ●De Castries, Scipion, *Maritime openings*, presented and annotated by Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, p. 274. Le prince évoque ici le stationnement des troupes à Newport.

In Boston, the day after the welcoming celebration organized by Governor-General Encook of Massachusetts, "a terrible and bloody riot took place between the American Tories and the French. The Tories were quite numerous. In cabarets, the populace attacked French sailors and soldiers of the French Army. They began by insulting them without reason. The French were not patient. Insults were soon followed by assaults. The officers who were at the General Staff were quickly informed. It was then 10 o'clock in the evening; the disorder had begun at 9:00.

Messieurs le Comte de Saint-Sauveur and Pléville Le Pelley rushed to the principal place of the riot. They were first insulted and then threatened. These two officers put their swords in their hands. Monsieur de Pléville was very seriously wounded. The number of Tories was several thousand men of all kinds [which leads us to believe that it was an organized trap, an ambush]. Le Comte de Saint-Sauveur fell dead in the midst of the small number of Frenchmen who were selling their lives dearly. The assassins wanted to take his body away, but a grenadier of the Infanterie de Marine¹⁶⁸ who was part of the garrison of the warship LANGUEDOC, a man of prodigious strength and great valor, defended the corpse with such courage that he succeeded in preventing it from falling into the hands of these madmen. He killed three men with his own hands, and, assisted by two of his comrades, who were making their way with their swords, he took the remains of Monsieur de Saint-Sauveur to the major office. This brave man was named Deschamps. *We had 15 men killed, soldiers or sailors. The Americans lost more than a hundred...* Monsieur de Pléville also, a lieutenant-de-vaisseau

¹⁶⁸ • The same Corps whose name was borrowed by the US Marines and later by the British Royal Marines..

*parvenu*¹⁶⁹, and a man of merit, was cruelly wounded in the head by a blow with a shod stick. He owed not being killed to the presence of mind that he had to play perfectly dead."

Such was the Boston riot that "Governor Encook could not have stopped if he had not proclaimed that the Comte d'Estaing had just ordered a raid, a descent of his troops, and that, if the disorder did not cease immediately, the city would be set on fire. The governor had only a few [insecure] poorly armed Militia men at his disposal, who did not impose themselves on anyone. On the declaration Encook had just made, the burghers, the merchants, all those who in a word had something to lose, spontaneously armed themselves and came to restore order. Precautions were taken the next day so that similar scenes would not be repeated, and this was indeed the only one that took place.

The English Tories were numerous everywhere (probably almost 50% of the population which is the pure English part). They were the most relentless against the Insurgents and saw in their [French] allies just perfidious auxiliaries¹⁷⁰."

Even before the arrival of the *French Expeditionary Corps*, Benjamin Franklin, who knew his people well and the centuries of anti-French and anti-Catholic propaganda in which the minds of his countrymen had marinated,

¹⁶⁹ • *Un parvenu* (pejorative Gallicism) is an *upstart* or a *social climber* who wants to reach nobility without being part of this aristocratic social stratum. In this specific case he is a *commoner* officer, the offices of officer being one of the privileges of the Nobility. Late in his life, Louis XV had allowed commoners to reach the ranks of officer, but the nobility had pressured Louis XVI to take away this privilege of commerce. Some roturier or commoners' officers had retained their rank; it was the officers *who were "parvenus" had arrived* whom the nobles did not fail to stigmatize with their contempt. This stupid ban was definitively removed by Napoléon Bonaparte.

¹⁷⁰ • De Castries, Scipion, *Maritime Memorabilia*, présentés et annotés par Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, pp. 140 et suiv.

wrote to his friends and prominent Americans to incite them to counterbalance the immense malice which was re-awakened as soon as Independence was achieved. The American government was fearful because it knew that a few recommendations would not extinguish almost two centuries of hostility aggravated by the intrinsic and unavoidable differences between the two nations: "It must not be concealed that the character and manners of the two nations do not agree much, and the multiplied occasions of small unavoidable differences could embitter reciprocal prejudices instead of erasing them¹⁷¹," explained the Ambassador (or rather the Representative) of France in Philadelphia in July 1778. As soon as the French troops "set sail, Franklin wrote many letters to his friends in Massachusetts and Pennsylvania, to introduce the officers and commend the troops to their friendly attention¹⁷²."

As for those enormous and sometimes unbridgeable differences which separated the French from the English, Franklin described the character of the French people: "I am very charmed by what you tell me about the French politeness and urbanity, which we have noticed among the officers and sailors of the Fleet. It is certain that in this the French are several degrees ahead of the English. I find them the most pleasant nation to live with. Common opinion assumes that the Spaniards are cruel, the English proud, the Scots insolent, the Dutch stingy, etc.; but I do not believe that there is any national vice attributed to the

¹⁷¹ • Letter from Gérard to Vergennes dated 20 September 1778. In Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents by the French Institute of Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. p. 178
Dépêche from Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassadeur de France) to M. de Vergennes (Minister of Foreign Affairs), in Philadelphia on July 25th, 1778. p. 302

¹⁷² • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895.

French. They are a little frivolous, but this frivolity does no harm to anyone¹⁷³."

All these clichés (which would be quite different today) are obviously specious, but Franklin, who knew that his mail was carefully read by the secret services of all nations and who was not unaware that the English would immediately publish in their London Magazines any criticism against the French to try to sow discord between the Allies, did not take the least risk. But, don't we find in the irreconcilable opinions of the French and in their antagonistic behaviors the usual imbroglio of the French people always divided in several factions which confront each other weapons in hand, and counteract each other, systematically destroying the next day what the others had built the day before. Wasn't it curious to see Royalists fighting for the Republic? The French are proud of their divisions, but this self-destructive flaw was the main cause of their downfall.

●

In that autumn-winter of the year 1778-1779, the French troops newly landed wintered at Newport. In garrison or on the battlefields, the behavior of the French soldiers and sailors was particularly praised by all American observers. Castries noted that "during the eight or nine months that the French Army remained in wintering quarters at Newport, not a single complaint was made by the inhabitants; not a chicken was stolen. The camp was surrounded by orchards, the fields were full of fruit trees; not a fruit was stolen. The peasants brought fruits abundantly and as a pure gift to all the soldiers whom they knew more particularly; and the communicative French soldier soon made friends. During the harvest, which is very late in

¹⁷³ ●Letter from Franklin to his Bostonian friend Josiah Quincy, written at Passy on April 22, 1779. p. 73.

these countries, they were happy to go and work for free as a pleasure for their acquaintance. In winter they threshed the barn with them and the peasants were very grateful...

As for the officers of Land and Sea, nothing equaled the happiness they enjoyed at Newport. "The society there was extremely numerous and although there were a few families a little more distinguished, they were only distinguished by fortune... There was no nobility in that country. Equality was adopted there but not by revolutionary spirit¹⁷⁴."

The American Thomas Balch wrote that, in Rhode Island, "the French discipline is such that the chickens and pigs walk around the tents and in the middle of the tents without being disturbed. There is a cornfield in the camp, cornfield of which not a leaf has been touched¹⁷⁵." Franklin added: "In all their long and weary marches through the country, [the French soldiers] scrupulously respected the rights and property of the people. Not a barn, not a hen-house, not an orchard was plundered. These "hereditary enemies", whom the population feared, showed themselves as generous and respectful allies. The biographer of James Otis mentioned that Franklin's old friend, Dr. Cooper, a Boston clergyman, to whom he had written especially in favor of the French officers, was excessively charmed by the newcomers, "papists" as they were," who, no less than himself, a courteous old Puritan, were versed in languages, sciences and humanism¹⁷⁶."

●

¹⁷⁴ ●De Castries, Scipion, *Maritime memorabilia*, annotés par Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, *Mercure de France*, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV, p.270.

¹⁷⁵ ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p.101 de la version fr.

¹⁷⁶ ●Parton, James, *Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin*, Vol.II, Mason Brothers, New York, 1864. p.393

At that time and until the final expulsion of the English, the Americans as well as the English tried to attract to their side the Indian tribes. Different deputations of natives came to the French camp. The chiefs especially expressed their astonishment to see the apple trees laden with fruit above the tents which the soldiers had occupied for three months. This fact proves the extent of discipline in the French Army, and also shows how scrupulously the property of the Americans was respected¹⁷⁷. Yes, French soldiers were worthy of dying for the freedom of the Americans.

History does not say whether French soldiers were condemned to death and shot for stealing a chicken, as often happened in Portugal during the First French Empire, when the "*scorched earth*", systematically organized by the English Army, had starved the French Army.

On July 8th, 1781, General Washington reviewed the two allied armies. The American Army present—which he honored first by saluting it first to avoid criticism—, lined up "4,500 men at most, among whom were very young men and many negroes.. They had no uniforms and seemed rather poorly equipped. In this respect, they made a great contrast with the French Army, with which General George Washington seemed very satisfied¹⁷⁸.

In the same year (1781), the Duc de Lauzun¹⁷⁹ himself gave some details about the American Army whose

¹⁷⁷ • This visit of the Indians to Rochambeau took place at Newport from 29 Aug. to 2 Sept. 1780. Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 111 of the fr version.

¹⁷⁸ • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 139 de la v. fr.

¹⁷⁹ • Armand-Louis de Gontaut Biron, comte de Biron à sa naissance, marquis de Gontaut (1758), puis duc de Lauzun (1766), puis en 1788 duc de Biron et Pair de France, marquis de Châtel et de Caraman, baron de Lesquelen, was born in Paris in 1747 and died by guillotine in 1793.

description contrasted violently with the beautiful rows in uniform according to the current Hollywood representations, or even the local historical re-enactments that Americans are so fond of on the 4th of July: "I can't believe," Lauzun said too often, how surprised I was by the American Army. It is unimaginable that these almost naked troops, poorly paid, composed of old men, negroes, and children, should do so well both on the road and on the battlefield... I do not care to speak of the coolness of General Washington ; but this great man is a thousand times more noble and more beautiful at the head of his army than at any other time... The speed of the march of the French troops and their discipline had a great success with the Americans."

This destitution of the American troops was due to the fact that most of the aid granted by the French to the American Government to equip and feed its army was diverted by the politicians of the Thirteen Colonies to their almost exclusive benefit. By his criticism, Lauzun gave himself some consolation, for the Americans were very stingy with their praise, as they still are 225 years later, absolutely forgetting any French participation in their official celebrations of *the 4th of July*, to the point that the average American is completely unaware that Frenchmen died for their freedom. In fact, it is safe to say that the U.S. Army could not have sustained such a long war without, first, French military aid, which covered absolutely all the essential needs [even if much of the aid was diverted to crooked politicians], and despite that they could not have won this war without the direct intervention of the French Expeditionary Corps.

Despite the millions of French money that France gave, the American Army appeared most pitiful, in its outward appearance and not in its fighting spirit, similar to

that of the French Revolutionary troops, a decade later. All these Celts, these Blacks, fought with the energy of vengeance against this English army which persecuted their families in Ireland and in the Scottish Highlands. General George Washington, wrote to the President of the Continental Congress, in 1780: "Besides the embarrassments already mentioned above and on other occasions, there is another one of a very difficult and humiliating nature. According to my best information *we have no shirts to distribute to the troops*; the whole troop is in great need, and a large proportion of them are absolutely destitute of everything. Their situation also, concerning summer dress, is not likely to be much better, I fear. There are many outfits available in the Springfield arsenal, it is said, but of such quality so doubtful that they are scarcely worth the expense and trouble of bringing them in and distributing them." The concussionists, prevaricators, and other war-profiteers of the US Army were already well at work, sowing despair that drives veterans to suicide.

For the troops, "to be out of uniform is highly humiliating for the service, and disgraceful to our feelings, but this need will be particularly mortifying when we have to fight alongside our French allies. If it is possible, I have no doubt that immediate measures will be taken to alleviate this distress. It is also to be hoped that there may be uniforms for the officers. Many of them are in really distressing situations, and somehow this is the case in all the States. It would be satisfactory to them and for the public satisfaction that they could be equipped. When our [French] friends come to cooperate in operations with us, [our soldiers] will not be able to perform their services with them, and if they are forced, their appearance will

cause them to be regarded in very low esteem¹⁸⁰." It is quite obvious that the English bourgeoisie, who still controlled the political, economic and administrative machinery of each of the Thirteen Colonies and who secretly opposed independence, managed to sabotage and to disadvantage those who took up arms against Albion.

Among the Americans, the uniform was not the only deficiency. The funds provided by the French to pay the soldiers' salaries thus seemed, on the American side, not to have taken the virtuous path for which they had been intended. And the frustrated soldiers —and not in the least prisoners of a rigorous discipline— would not hear it that way. On January 11th, recounted Thomas Balch, "General Knox¹⁸¹, commander of the American Artillery, came on behalf of General Washington to inform Lauzun (one of the French generals) that the Pennsylvania and New Jersey brigades, tired of serving without pay, had mutinied, killed their officers and chosen new leaders from among their own ranks. It was feared that they would either march on Philadelphia to get paid by force, or that they would join the English army, which was not far away. This last fear was exaggerated, for when an emissary of [English] General Clinton came to propose the rebels to pay their back pay on condition that they would place themselves under his orders:

—He thinks we're traitors, protested a militia sergeant, but we are brave soldiers who only ask for justice. We will never betray our country's interests.

¹⁸⁰ • Letter of June 20, 1780, from George Washington to the President of Congress, written at Springfield HQ, from The Writings of George Washington, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, G.P. Putnam's Sons, The Knickerbocker Press, New-York, 1890. Vol. 8, 1778-1780. Vol. 8, p. 317-318.

¹⁸¹ • The same Henry Knox who gave his name to Fort Knox (Kentucky), the Federal Gold Reserve.

And the envoys of the English general were treated as spies¹⁸². The mutiny spread to the New Jersey Militia, and threatened to infect the entire army. Washington found some money in some pockets to pay them a portion of their back pay. The Congressmen, on the other hand, never complained! Their pay was always paid on time. The American Government used the same dryness of behavior towards its soldiers, that the British Government had with its national troops and particularly its mercenary soldiers: salaries were paid with a considerable delay of several months in order to deduct the dead and maimed from the soldiers' numbers¹⁸³.



The aristocratic officers of the British Army¹⁸⁴ could not help but feel a certain disdain for the non-noble officers and their rebellious subordinates. An aide-de-camp to General George Washington, Colonel Hamilton, related the manner in which the Lieutenant-General had received a dispatch from Sir Henry Clinton, which was addressed to "Mr." Washington. *"This letter, replied Washington, is addressed to a planter in the State of Virginia; I will have it delivered to him at the close of this war. Until then it will not be opened."* A second dispatch was then addressed to

¹⁸² • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 115 from the French version.

¹⁸³ • It should be noted that, even today, American soldiers are the object of chafouin maneuvers that victimize them as soon as they are wounded in combat. The pay of the troop is low but the battlefield bounty is enormous. As soon as the soldier is in the hospital (or killed, prisoner or on leave), he (his family) loses the famous bounty.

¹⁸⁴ • The French Army required officers to be from the Nobility Corps. An attempt to democratize the army was made at the end of the reign of Louis XV, but the nobility opposed it and demoted the Government. In the English army, ranks were bought, and at very high prices, so that only the rich (bourgeois or aristocrats) could afford them.

*His Excellency General Washington*¹⁸⁵." The American general thus opened it¹⁸⁶.

This contempt of an English officer for an American officer would have been inadequate, for Washington had earned his stripes on the battlefields against the French during the Seven Years' War¹⁸⁷, while General Clinton, like all English officers, aristocratic or bourgeois, had just bought their ranks with a great deal of guineas. Around 1782, "the British army was the only army in Europe where the buying and selling of ranks was based on regular and fixed principles. Advancement in the Army was facilitated for those for whom the course of life was softened by fortune. Ranks were bought and sold more or less like shares on a stock exchange. Prudent parents helped their children by buying them ranks in the Army. There were few limitations on this practice; the talents or inclinations of the young men themselves were of no importance. There was no question of their serving a required period in the *ranks and files* before being promoted to the next rank¹⁸⁸." This has been the Achilles'heel of the British

¹⁸⁵ ● Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 116 de la version fr.

¹⁸⁶ ● Cette attitude méprisante des Anglais de Métropole vis-à-vis des habitants des colonies, confirme bien l'opinion de l'historien israélien Shlomo Sand, exposée à la page 72 de son ouvrage intitulé *Comment le peuple juif fut inventé*, Librairie Arthème Fayard, Paris, 2008.

¹⁸⁷ ● He fought at the Battle of Fort Necessity and the Battle of Monongahela. In both cases, the English Army was defeated by French Canadians. See the details of these battles in the *Dictionnaire des batailles terrestres franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Sept Ans*, by Jean-Claude Castex, Les Presses de l'Université Laval, Québec, 2006

¹⁸⁸ ● Purchase and Promotion in the British Army in the Eighteenth Century, in *History, The Journal of the Historical Association*, Volume 36, Issue 126-127, page 57-72, de février 1951. The Historical Association & Blackwell Publishing Ltd. "By 1782, the British army was the only one in Europe where the purchase and sale of commissions was founded on regular and fixed principles. Advancement in the Army was made easy for those whose way was smoothed by wealth. Commissions were bought and sold much like shares on the exchange; prudent parents provided for their children by purchasing them commissions in the army. There are few limitations on the practice – the talents or inclinations of the young men themselves were unimportant; there no question

Army for centuries. *Fortunately for them, no crime is paid for more lightly and carelessly than the slaughter of soldiers through the fault of an incompetent or cowardly officer, especially when those soldiers were only cannon fodder (Scottish or German mercenaries).*

The contempt of General Cornwallis for General La Fayette, who was barely out of his teens in 1781 (he was 24 years old), was of a different order. This disdain was undoubtedly the fruit of old age¹⁸⁹ which prejudged that the age and the experience brought all the wisdom in the world. Consequently, youth was deprived of it. That year (1781), Lord Cornwallis retreated from Williamsburgh on Portsmouth, near the mouth of the James River and the Bay of Chesapeake. The sea indicated no suspicious activity and this succession of retrograde movements seemed to reveal an English project to evacuate Virginia. La Fayette, whom Cornwallis called "*The Kid*" with some hauteur, had shown great skill in these marches and countermarches. With only fifteen hundred American Militiamen alone, "*The Kid*" had been able to force to retreat the General Cornwallis, who was at the head of more than 4,000 mercenaries. He carefully avoided a general action, constantly deceived the English about the real size of his force, launched skillful maneuvers with daring and prudence.

Thanks to his intelligence, La Fayette obtained this unexpected result. "*The kid could not escape me,*" Cornwallis had written at the beginning of the campaign, speaking of this general whose youth he despised and whose skill he disregarded. In fact, Cornwallis was about to fall into the trap where La Fayette was gradually leading

of serving a specified period in one rank before being promoted to the next highest rank."

¹⁸⁹ • 43 years was then more than the average longevity of the French or English people.

him¹⁹⁰. It is quite true that the contempt of the enemy is the most dangerous trap. Death must be despised, but especially not the enemy. "Negligence, which has as its source the contempt which one feels for the enemy, is not only dangerous, but often fatal¹⁹¹." Thus, the Americans would never have had to demand their independence, had the English not despised them. Prime Minister North and his government were totally convinced that the Americans would pose no danger in the event of civil war. They had no professional army, no navy, and only a handful of officers trained in the Militia, with England still reserving for itself the commanding positions while leaving to the others the places of combatants, of *cannon fodder*. England had an army—certainly of mercenaries, but of good quality—and a Navy of great value. Moreover, the American had no tradition of cooperating between states, even in the face of danger.

Worst of all, English military leaders had spread the idea in England that the Americans were cowards; as if cowardice could be generalized to a whole population when it is an individual defect. Brigadier-General James Wolfe—the same one who had been killed by the Canadians on the Plains of Abraham—had stigmatized the American soldiers with the slur of "*cowardly dogs*"¹⁹². More nuanced, Henry Ellis, English Governor of the colony of Georgia, described American soldiers at almost the same

¹⁹⁰ • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 146 de la v. fr

¹⁹¹ • Turpin de Crissé, Caius Julius Caesar : *Caesar's commentaries, with critical and military historical notes*, D.J. Changuion, Amsterdam, 1887. Volume 2, p. 117.

¹⁹² • Fearful dogs. It was the same in 1940 when the British Army deserted the battlefield in the face of the Germans despite orders from the French Command. The British Government deflected attention from this cowardice by suggesting that it was the French who had been cowards.

time as "*poor species of fighting men*"¹⁹³ because, he said, of "*a lack of courage, a want of bravery.*"

Angered by the fact that the Americans constitute their own legislative assembly (the Continental Congress), King George III of England vociferated to his ministers that, from now on, "*violence must decide whether the Americans will submit or triumph.*" This hatred and contempt were accentuated by the very constitution of the American troops, whose two-thirds of were Celts (Scots and Irish) strongly despised by the English¹⁹⁴, and, as a result, eager for revenge for the exactions suffered by their people in the British Isles. This contempt for the Americans blocked the British sense of compromise and led to the separation of the two countries.



Paradoxically, the American willingness to offer the most obliging hospitality to the French Army who came to liberate them, increased the jealousy and aggressiveness of the American officers towards the French. The latter had barely disembarked when General Washington "authorized Rochambeau to request the state Militias of Boston and Rhode Island to assist his army in earthworks for the defense of the island." The American general officers gave preference to the French troops "for food and for all the care which depended on them."

During and after the siege of Yorktown, "when the troops of the Marquis de Saint-Simon joined with those of

¹⁹³ •Poor (in the sense of low, miserable) species of fighters.

¹⁹⁴ •As the Israeli historian Shlomo Sand recalls on page 72 of his book entitled: *Comment le peuple juif fut inventé*, Librairie Arthème Fayard, Paris, 2008. "Although the British have always been proud of their composite origins (French-Normand, Scandinavian, etc,...), intellectuals and political leaders, at the height of the power of the liberal British Empire, saw native English character as the source of its superiority, and a good number of Britons clung to their Anglo-Saxon ancestry, and the Welsh and Irish [and Scots] 'of pure Celtic origin' were considered inferior and not belonging to the *chosen Christian people*.»

La Fayette¹⁹⁵, the young general ordered that no flour be delivered to the American troops except when the French had received a three days' provision. Consequently, the American soldiers almost never received anything but *Indian meals*¹⁹⁶. They requisitioned the horses of local *gentlemen* for the French hussars, and the senior officers themselves gave up their own horses for the same purpose.

Despite all this, "there was not the slightest complaint about these preferences which the American soldiers recognized should be given to foreigners who came from far away to fight for their cause¹⁹⁷ and "in their place." Not a single complaint out loud... at first! A certain annoyance, in front of these privileges and favors, similar (in the *Grande Armée*) to that of the *Imperial Guard*; as well as the jealousy of the Wehrmacht in front of the complaisance granted to the paramilitary regiments of the *Schutzstaffel*.

Seen from London, these privileges granted to the French on the backs of American soldiers, constituted the best possible breeding ground for jealousy. It was to be expected that the British, who dreamed of creating discord and zizania between the French and the Americans, would try to plant the poisonous flowers of jealousy and disunity through *disinformation*. The British were brilliant artists in the art of *disinformation*. Many of the comments in the London press stated that: "*The French and Americans don't like each other at all. The French officers have told us so many times*¹⁹⁸." This seems implausible, given the reception given to the French, at least at first; so much so that Franklin was able to write, "The constant harmony

¹⁹⁵ ● La Fayette commanded American units.

¹⁹⁶ ● i.e. corn flour (India Corn or blé d'Inde, maize)

¹⁹⁷ ● Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 187 de la v. fr.

¹⁹⁸ ● Letters from America, p.145

which reigns between the armies of the two nations [France and the United States] in America has given me infinite pleasure. It must be carefully maintained. I hope that nothing will happen to disturb it. The French officers who have returned here [to France where Benjamin Franklin resided] this winter, speak of us in the most noble and amiable manner; there is among the young French nobility a keen desire to go and fight for us¹⁹⁹."



Faced with such an influx of foreign fighters, it was necessary in fact to put some order into the ranks of the two armies. In this purpose, General *Washington* was appointed Marshal of France and the American officers took precedence over the French officers, who were equal in rank and seniority²⁰⁰. Knowing that the French officers were aristocrats, and the Americans were *commoners*, one can imagine the strange feelings that the proud *battlefield-runner hobereaux* must have had to obey them. They must have felt that their world was inexorably ending, just as, in this 21st century, the West feels that its Christian civilization melts ineluctably in the Nothingness, into the Void, victim of the absolute Freedom to exterminate its offspring.

Despite the infinite precautions taken by the American authorities to maintain peace between the French and American leaders, there were occasional outbursts. One can never prevent a defeated chief from blaming his ally for his misfortunes. It is enough to read the epic of the

¹⁹⁹ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p.157. ; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Robert R. Livingston, U.S. Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs from 1781 to 1783. The letter was written in Passy on March 4, 1782..

²⁰⁰ •Trudel, Marcel, *La Révolution américaine (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 218. In 1792, the French Government granted French citizenship to George Washington, first American president.

Duke of Wellington in the Iberian Peninsula at the time of Napoleonic Empire to understand that all the failures of Wellington's allied armies were caused by the fault of the Spanish or Portuguese armies. It is sometimes more gratifying to be the enemy of a nation than its ally²⁰¹.

The famous Sullivan-d'Estaing affair is just one example of a defeated general who blames his failures on his allies. The American general Sullivan "was to work in co-operation with a French squadron to besiege and storm the British-held town of Newport, considered extremely vulnerable since France entered the war. The attempt was thwarted when Admiral d'Estaing's French squadron was scattered and damaged by a storm. Because of the damage inflicted on his ships by the storm and the announcement of a larger English squadron under the command of Lord Howe, d'Estaing went to Boston for repairs. Then the English garrison of Newport made a surprise attack in August 1778, forcing Sullivan to retreat after fighting without conviction in Rhode Island²⁰². Sullivan's inability to defeat that vulnerable garrison, and the failure of the campaign caused a deep rift in Franco-American relations. Sullivan

²⁰¹ ●English historians are indeed not kind to their Spanish allies such as this one (Fitchett): "The Spaniards were ill-disciplined, ill-officered, and in a condition of semi-starvation. As the battle proved [this was the Battle of Albuera on 16 May 1811, which was a defeat at Wellington], they could stand in patient ranks and die, but they could not manoeuvre." As for the Spanish chef named Blake, the critics turn downright to insult encompassing the whole of Spain: "Blake was ignorant, proud and fiercely jealous of the British commander-in-chief. He was of Irish blood, but kept nothing of the Irishman except the name. Blake had lost, in a word, all the virtues proper to the Irish character, and had acquired all the vices peculiar to the Spanish temper." [from the very modest and highly patriotic fort *How England saved Europe*, The Story of the Great War (1793-1815), by William Henry Fitchett, Smith, Elder & Co., London, 1900. Vol. III. (The War in the Peninsula), p. 245.] "As an example of the benefits of victory, let us mention the Battle of Albuera and especially that of Waterloo, whose numbers were German at 72%, and English at 8% (Dutch 11%; Scottish 9%. And yet the English nation knew how to derive all the prestige from it, to the detriment of others..

²⁰² ●The fighting cost Sullivan 38 killed, 210 wounded, and 12 missing or deserters. Pigot's "English" forces suffered 38 killed, 210 wounded, and 12 missing or deserters. So it was a very modest fight.

wrote a [highly insulting] letter to d'Estaing to stigmatize what he wished to consider²⁰³ as treason and treachery. He described the affair as "unworthy of the honor of France²⁰⁴", refusing to take upon himself the responsibility of its humiliating failure²⁰⁵.

The mix of French soldiers and American militiamen was not conducive to cooperation, said Pierre Landais, the captain of the USS ALLIANCE: "French and Americans mixed together, without understanding each other, so different in their discipline, their ways of life, etc. They will never be able to act together and will never agree." Yet these same two armies —"*these three armies*," we should say, since the English Army was of the number— fought in World War I (in 1918) under the single command of French Marshal Ferdinand Foch, appointed generalissimo to coordinate the efforts of all!



²⁰³ •Or wanted to consider in order to insult d'Estaing.

²⁰⁴ •Golway, Terry. *Washington's General: Nathanael Greene and the Triumph of the American Revolution*. Owl Books, 2006. p. 189. The original term was "derogatory to the honor of France", derogatory or humiliating for the honor of France.

²⁰⁵ •Letter from Heath to the Council of Massachusetts, September 9, 1778. In *The Heath Papers*, in *Collection of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, Published by the Society, Boston, 1878. vol.II, p.267; and also Bonsal, Stephen, *When the French were here: a narrative of the sojourn of the French forces in America, and their contribution to the Yorktown campaign*, drawn from unpublished reports and letters of participants in the national archives of France and the Ms. Division of the Library of Congress, Doubleday, New York, 1945. p.47. Heath was later a member of Congress but had to resign over a dark case of personal borrowing from Ambassador de France.

CHAPTER 7

Prisoners of war and hellish pontoons.

It is said that the greatness of a nation can be measured by the generosity with which this people treats the prisoners of war of its enemies, especially when the people who are opposed to it treat their own prisoners of war well and there is no question of reprisals, retaliatory measures or well-thought-out tactics, as was the case between Hitler and Stalin. Napoleon, who was the cause of millions of deaths and great misfortunes in Europe, treated his prisoners very well. He rightly said that "prisoners of war no longer belong to the Nation for which they fought; they are under the protection of the honor and generosity of the nation that disarmed them¹." In saying this, he had probably forgotten the 3,000 Albanian soldiers of the Ottoman Army who had surrendered to the French under promise of life², and that he had executed,

¹ •Napoleon, his opinions and judgments on men and things, collected by M. Damas, Ginard, Volume 2, Dufey Lib.-Éditeur, Paris, 1838. Napoleon I in his 23rd Imperial Bulletin, June 28, 1809. p. 353

² •On March 3, 1799, Bonaparte's French Army arrived in front of Yafa (Jaffa, now in Israel). The city resisted the French for two days. The 2,000 Turkish defenders were killed on the spot. 3,000 Albanians of the Ottoman Army (who had been forcibly incorporated) took refuge in the citadel and asked to be allowed to be spared. Two French officers promised them. But Bonaparte, who could not feed them for lack of food, nor release them for fear that they should swell the Turkish garrison of Acre, gave, after several days of hesitation and despite the protests of many French officers, the inhuman order to massacre them; except for 500 Egyptians and Turkish artillerymen who could be incorporated into the French Army. "Sooner or later, the blood of these 3,000 victims will fall on us!" wrote a French General Staff officer the same day. It was "sooner" than expected. The next day, an epidemic of plague broke out among the French troops; 7 or 800 French soldiers died. [From Franco-English Battles

in the Near East, for strategic reasons. We know that Hitler let Russian prisoners of war starve to death, simply because the Soviets had refused to sign the Geneva Convention concerning the respect due to prisoners of war³.

The advantage of the Americans, held in English jails throughout the Revolutionary War was that England, whose citizens were reluctant to fight in the military, always had an urgent need for soldiers to wage its colonial and economic wars. Buying German mercenary regiments required fabulous sums, not only to pay the mercenaries' salaries but specially to pay the costs to the princes of the Holy Roman Empire. The English government hoped that the POW (American soldiers or sailors) would consider themselves fortunate to be able to redeem their pseudo-transgression⁴ by immediately enlisting in the English Army to offer their lives to King George III. Benjamin Franklin tells us that the English authorities even refused or delayed the prisoner exchanges in order to give themselves time to force them to join the English Army. He asserts that "it is now evident that these delays were calculated to give us more time to seduce our sailors and bring them by promises or sufferings to win their freedom by enlisting against their own country, by betraying their Nation. Those who escaped tell us that there were people continually busy cajoling and threatening the POW⁵." As a result, the prisoners of war

of the War of Slavery (1791-1804) and the French Revolutionary Wars, by Jean C. Castex, Les Éditions P-O, Vancouver, 2013. pp. 270-271.]

³ ● Stalin considered all Soviet prisoners of war as traitors because they had surrendered to the Germans rather than fight to the death. As a result, Russians who survived Nazi camps were immediately deported to Siberia and incarcerated in Soviet gulags..

⁴ ● They had fought against their king, it was a crime of lèse-majesté.

⁵ ● Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 72, Letter from B. Franklin to David Hartley on the exchange of American and English prisoners of war, written at Passy on March 21, 1779.

designated to equipollate (equalize) these *au pair* exchanges, and who were in the custody of the French, had to wait until all this dithering⁶ was over.

Franklin, residing in Paris, was at the forefront of these permutations of prisoners: "While waiting for their exchange, a great part of your prisoners [Scottish, Irish or German mercenaries] remained six months on a ship in harbor, where I fear they have not been as comfortably treated as they would have been in a French prison on land. They were therefore ordered to be landed."

The Americans, prisoners of war of the British, had thus the choice of betraying the cause of independence for their freedom, thus putting their lives in danger since the English wanted to turn them into soldiers. But few were those who accepted this vileness; most preferred death. "All they had to do was to sign a document of allegiance to the Crown of England in order to receive a full pardon by enlisting in the Army or Navy⁷". The story does not say whether or not they were harassed by English soldiers or sailors in whose company they had to fight.

Even if the following text —by Napoleon—, does not correspond to the period we are currently describing, it at least allows us to note that the English authorities have always been and will show themselves to be perfectly expert in extracting from others what they did not do themselves: the release of prisoners. "The prisoners' article," wrote Napoleon in his *Memorial of St. Helena*, was one of the points on which the usual bad faith of the English Ministers, with that Machiavellianism which

⁶ •Subterfuge: the cajoling and threats exerted by the British on American prisoners in order to induce them to enlist in the British army.

⁷ •Fish, Hamilton, New York State, The battleground of the Revolutionary War, Vantage Press, New York, 1976.

characterizes so well the present school. Absolutely *determined to reject any exchange and not wanting to be accused of refusing it*, they multiplied and distorted the pretexts... I knew my adversaries and read their true intentions: they had infinitely more Frenchmen than I had Englishmen⁸; once they had obtained theirs, they would have found any reason to stop the exchange; and the rest of my poor Frenchmen would have remained in the pontoons for eternity. I declared that I did not want a partial exchange, but a total exchange. I agreed to have far fewer Englishmen than they had Frenchmen⁹; but I also had Spaniards, Portuguese and other allies of the English taken under their banners... This proposal... was rejected.... It was obvious that, if one began at first by simply exchanging French against English, once they felt they had enough, they would not lack pretexts to remain there... I offered then, to avoid any mutual misunderstanding [or trickery], to exchange by transports of 3,000 only at a time. They would give me back 3,000 Frenchmen, for which I would give 1,000 English and 2,000 Hanoverians, Spaniards, Portuguese and others... I promised to return the rest on top of that¹⁰." But the British government refused to allow their German, Spanish and Portuguese allies to be used as bargaining chips. *They would then have to pay their released mercenaries with their*

⁸ • In the English army, English-born soldiers represented on average only 7 to 8% of the total, the Scots and Irish about 16% together despite the small population, and German mercenaries 75%. As a result, English prisoners represented only 7 to 8% of the number held in French prisoner-of-war camps. In the Grande Armée, in general, the proportions of French were inverse.

⁹ • Since the English army consisted mainly of German mercenaries, Scots, Irish, Spanish, Portuguese...

¹⁰ • Napoléon, ses opinions et jugements sur les hommes et sur les choses, recueil par M. Damas, Ginard, Tome 2, Dufey Libraire-Éditeur, Paris, 1838. Napoleon in his St. Helena Memorial, pp. 355-356

back pay. They only wanted to free the British, leaving the other nations to rot in French jails.

These famous pontoons in which the English locked up the French or American prisoners of war, were old rotten and dismasted hulls of warships, too riddled by French cannons or too obsolete to remain in the service of the King. The English embossed¹¹ these floating barracks at a certain distance from the coast on two or more anchors, in the ports of New York, Portsmouth or elsewhere. These horrible pontoons were the ancestors of the concentration camps invented 110 years later by themselves¹². Some English authors claim that the sadism and malnutrition that was exercised against the American prisoners was only intended to force Americans to betray their nation and join the British Navy or Army. But it was only a pretext to excuse their sadism since the same sadism and malnutrition was exercised against French prisoners. This excuse was therefore false.

The American Commissioners in Paris, headed by Benjamin Franklin, soon learned that the English were treating American prisoners captured at sea with criminal cruelty: "We forced some to serve in the English navy and to fight against their fellow citizens... The commissioners wrote to the English ambassador of England in Paris, Lord Stormont. They proposed to him to exchange with equal number of English sailors that an American cruiser had brought to France. Lord Stormont did not deign to reply. A second letter obtained from the English lord only got the following reply: "The King's Ambassador receives no communication from the rebels, unless

¹¹ •Embossing: anchor with two or more anchors to secure the vessel.

¹² •During the Boer War. Tens of thousands of men, women and children died in these camps in South Africa when, the Boers having discovered diamond mines, England, stimulated by its lobbies, invaded the two Boer states. It was not the Nazis who invented concentration camps.

they come to implore His Majesty's pardon¹³." Franklin returned this arrogant letter back to the sender with the following words: "In reply to a letter answer to a letter which touches the most visible interests of Mankind, and which concerns two nations, Great Britain and the United States, we have received this unseemly note, which we refer to Your Lordship for a more mature opinion¹⁴."

American prisoners who refused to fight against their own fellow Americans, for the benefit of the English, were systematically expected to suffer torture, martyrdom and even death. In his *History of New York City*, historian Charles Burr Todd states that "no fewer than 10,644 American prisoners perished in the JERSEY pontoon during that war. And what about the other smaller pontoons, also embossed in New York Harbor: the WHITBY, the GOOD-HOPE, the PRINCE-OF-WALES, the FALMOUTH, the SCORPION, the STROMBOLO and the HUNTER? In New York alone, among the 20,000 American POW held by the British, there were no more than 5,000 soldiers: 3,000 had laid down their arms at Fort Washington, 1,000 at the battle of Brooklyn, a few hundred at White-Plains and in the capture of Fort Clinton and Montgomery. The others were captured in various skirmishes in the states of Connecticut, New Jersey, and in the town of Westchester. There were about 9,000 sailors captured on the East Coast. The rest were 6,000 civilian patriots." Lieutenant General William Scrope, Earl of Howe, and Sir Henry Clinton, who succeeded him at the head of this squadron of crucified men, secretly adopted —apparently for strategic reasons, since

¹³ ●Laboulaye, Edward (Édouard René Lefèvre), *Political History of the United States*, The Office of the Boston Daily Advertiser, Boston. 1855-66. p.-28

¹⁴ ●Ibidem. pp. 27-28

they intended to force the unfortunate men to fight for England—a program close to extermination."

Historian Edwin G. Burrows describes the same situation thus: "There were also prisoners of war in the PRINCE-OF-WALES, a decrepit warship anchored in *Wallabout Bay* on the Brooklyn side of the East River, near the hospital-ship KITTY. During that year, the JUDITH and MYRTLE, two troop transports, were anchored in the Hudson River, opposite Trinity Church, and began to receive P.O.W., as did the JERSEY and the GOOD HOPE, two hospital ships previously used for the benefit of British soldiers. American POWs were also confined to at least nine other ships that were not officially intended to serve as prison camps or hospital ships: the EAGLE, the FELICITY, the ISIS, the RICHMOND, the OTTER, the DISPATCH, the YORK, the VIGILANT, and the MERCURY¹⁵."

English authorities had not found a safer place, except in England, to hold all these prisoners of war. Besides, it is probable that the English people would not have accepted them if they had been asked their opinion. New York was to some extent a city under siege and could be attacked at any time. Each "pontoon boat" contained 7 to 800 individuals, languishing without ever seeing the sky, because on the English pontoons [unlike the Spanish pontoons in Cadiz] they were kept at the bottom of the bilge. This cold and systematic cruelty—all the more odious because it was calculated—will make Grivel say about this Nation which claims to descend from the famous *12th lost tribe of Israel*¹⁶: "As long as it perse-

¹⁵ ●Burrows, Edwin G., *Patriots or Terrorists? The Lost Story of Revolutionary War POW's*, American Heritage, Oxford (USA), 2008.

¹⁶ ●Armstrong, Herbert W., *The United States and Britain in Prophecy*. De tout temps, les parvenus ont éprouvé le besoin de se créer des racines qui les glorifient.

veres in its way of piling up prisoners, it will remain adequately to the ban of Humanity¹⁷, unless complacent historians manage to make people forget its misdeeds. This was the case.

Ten thousand American patriots, most of them in their early twenties or thirties, imprisoned [successively] aboard the JERSEY, totally dehumanized, consumed stinking food and literally died of starvation or disease. According to the great American historian Hamilton Fish, this extermination policy now appears to have been a deliberate conspiracy not only among the Prison Commissioners, but also within the British High Command¹⁸. These unfortunate victims of the American Revolution were buried in the sand on the adjacent shores of Wallabout Bay, where the naval shipyards were located and are still located.

Twenty years after this war, in the course of constructing walls and buildings, a vast quantity of bones of these martyrs was exhumed and exposed on the coast. These remains were collected by Captain John Jackson, owner of the surrounding land, and reburied at his own expense. Later, public ceremonies were held over the mass grave. But even to this day, those American patriots who preferred the most ignominious death to disloyalty to their nation, are still the willingly forgotten heroes of the War for Independence. Captain Freneau, who was himself confined aboard both —hospital ship and prison

¹⁷ ●Damamme, Jean-Claude, *Les soldats de la Grande Armée*, Les Éditions Perrin, Paris, 1998. p. 406

¹⁸ ●Conspiracy at the highest levels of military administration as in 1764, when woolen blankets contaminated with smallpox were distributed by the British Army to insurgent Indian tribes (Pontiac's War). The data in this text come directly or indirectly from the book *New York State, The battleground of the Revolutionary War*, par Fish, Hamilton Vantage Press, New York, 1976.

ship or pontoon— survived thanks to an exchange of prisoners...

Naturally, when they surrendered and evacuated New York City, the British used all the tricks of propaganda to disguise their responsibilities in these prisons, dens of iniquity and death, and on the pontoons that exuded abomination and desolation. The same tactic of disguise was attempted by the *Einsatzgruppen* at the end of the Second World War when the Germans tried in vain to conceal the massacres of Jews and Gypsies. But the evidence is written down in *no uncertain terms* in the letters of the prisoners who survived the English pontoons. We can also take into account the revelations of escaped or exchanged prisoners. And for those disbelievers who are not convinced yet, there is the report of the American Elias Boudinot¹⁹, Commissioner appointed by Congress to guarantee the exchange of prisoners, to provide them with clothing and food, and to investigate the situation in some of the New York prisons held by the English.

British Vice Admiral Richard Howe²⁰ had a direct and specific connection with Commissioner Joshua Loring since he was the happy lover of his beautiful Boston Loyalist²¹ wife Elizabeth. As a gratification to the compliant husband, Howe promoted Loring, a character almost as despicable and abject as William Cunningham (English provost-marshal of the floating and land prisons

¹⁹ •Elias Boudinot (May 2, 1740 - October 24, 1821) was lawyer, former President of the Continental Congress, and later of the Confederacy as a delegate from New Jersey. He served as President in 1782 and 1783. He was appointed by President George Washington as Director of the United States Mint from 1795 to 1805. His paternal great-grandfather, Jean Boudinot, came from Marans in Aunis (France) and belonged to a Huguenot family who fled to New York around 1687 to escape the religious persecution of King Louis XIV.

²⁰ •Vice-Admiral Lord Richard Scrope, 1st Earl of Howe was the brother of Lieutenant-General William Howe. They were the illegitimate descendants of a mistress of King George I and happened to be the uncles of the king of that time, George III.

²¹ •She was loyal to the King of England more than to her husband.

of New York), on the scale of greed, corruption and sadism in the special art of torture. These tortures consisted in starving prisoners of war... Later, Loring admitted to having appropriated 2/3 of the funds that were supposed to be used to feed the prisoners, which led to complete starvation of the prisoners, chronic debilitation and, consequently, a multitude of deaths due to the aggression of disease and cold. When the American Commissioner Elias Boudinot asked Cunningham "who was responsible for the execrable conditions of the POW," he arrogantly replied that he was "entirely responsible and that he saw no reason to change it or to apologize for it..." He had a deputy by the name of Sergeant O'Keefe, a cruel scoundrel who treated prisoners of war worse than common criminals. He was undoubtedly the secret executor or at least the responsible for almost 300 murky hangings, unofficially ordered and conducted by Cunningham without any trial. It is inconceivable that, under the control of the English Army, such bestial and lethal treatment of POW was authorized and continued uninterruptedly almost to the end of the War of Independence.

The English authorities then did their utmost to cover up the situation. They denounced Cunningham's confessions as a blatant forgery. In reality, the deadly Cunningham-Loring duo killed directly and by mutual agreement, approximately 2,500 prisoners by starvation, disease and deprivation, in the city's prisons warehouses, churches and in the Provost jail²². They indirectly led to the deaths of 10.500 desperate prisoners who died in these pontoons, from disease, suicide, or from infection transmitted by tainted or contaminated food. The only

²² ●The provost, in English, is the head or supervisor of a university, a cathedral, a city, a prison... The term comes from the Franco-Norman who invaded England in 1066.

lucky ones were those who escaped or were exchanged. Ten thousand were exchanged, 100 managed to escape, and another 200 were allowed to go free through bribes. The death rate in these English POW camps was 75%. In comparison, the "death rate of French or English POWs in Nazi camps during World War II did not reach 15%. The specific death rate on the JERSEY was 85%. The author Hamilton Fish, places the overall level of mortality among American POWs at 13,000 individuals, which is 1,000 less than other estimates²³."

The ill-digested patriotism of the jailers played a large role in these mass Crimes against Humanity. "There was obviously a conspiracy between Provost Marshal William Cunningham, Commissioner Joshua Loring and Naval Commissioner David Spout. This responsibility extended all the way down the hierarchical ladder, that is to say, to the simple guards, all united to decimate the rebel prisoners. "Decimate" is not the right word, because it means *inflicting death on one man out of ten*. The proper word here would be annihilation or extermination, for that is what happened. This is one of the most horrific and tremendous tragedies in American History²⁴," except for the launching of the two nuclear bombs on Hiroshima and Nagasaki, 160 years later, as well as the Civil War massacres and the diabolical Slavery.

On January 18, 1777, George Washington wrote to the Vice Admiral of the English Fleet, Earl Richard Howe, admonishing him about the captured sailors in a

²³ •Fish, Hamilton, New York State, The battleground of the Revolutionary War, Vantage Press, New York, 1976. These pages are inspired, directly or indirectly, by the work of this American historian as well as by Edwin G. Burrows, *Forgotten Patriots : The Untold Story of American Prisoners During the Revolutionary War*, Basic Books, New York 2008, et *Horrors of the prison ships: Dr. West's description of the wallabout floating dungeons, how captive patriots fared.*" West, Charles E. Eagle Book Printing Department, 1895.

²⁴ •Ibidem.

letter in which irony and contempt were used: "I am in the unpleasant necessity of troubling his Lordship with a letter concerning the cruel treatment of our officers and sailors of the Navy Department, unfortunate enough to fall into your hands, when they have been subjected to it on board the prison pontoons of the New York Harbor. Of the opinion which I hold of the humanitarian sense of your Lordship, I would not suppose that you are aware of behavior of such a cruel and unjustifiable nature. I hope that after a proper investigation, you will have this area so regulated that those unfortunate enough to be in captivity, may not, in future, be subjected to the misery of cold, disease and starvation, in addition to their other misfortunes. You may call us "*rebels*" and say that we deserve such treatment, but remember, Monsignor, that we still have feelings as keen and sensitive as Loyalists, and —if forced— we are certainly ready to retaliate against those whom we regard as the unjust invaders of our rights, our freedom and property²⁵." The threat of retribution was not veiled. Yet the English authorities felt so strongly and personally so immune from retribution that the reprimand was scornfully disregarded.

When the English refused to stop the torture, General George Washington inflicted a second letter of reproach and threats to Earl Howe: "I regret to be in the necessity of protesting to you for the treatment which our prisoners continue to be subjected to in New York City. Those who have been recently released give the most shocking descriptions of these barbarous practices, confirmed by their miserable and emaciated appearance.

²⁵ •Fish, Hamilton, New York State, The battleground of the Revolutionary War, Vantage Press, New York, 1976. Aussi West, Charles E.. "Horrors of the prison ships: Dr. West's description of the Wallabout floating dungeons, how captive patriots fared." Eagle Book Printing Department, 1895.

How diverse their appearance is different from that of your soldiers who have been recently returned to you, after a captivity of twelve months; and if this difference in appearance was due to a variance in treatment, I leave it to your judgment or to any impartial person, to decide. I pray that certain rules of conduct towards Prisoners of War may be decided upon; and if you are determined to continue to make the captivity as miserable as possible, let me know so that we may act in a similar manner, for your way of doing things must and will dictate mine." The letter was direct and fulminating.



In spite of these threats, the English admiral never had the greatness to change things. In the first place, the prisoners were not aristocrats, and "caste solidarity" did not apply. And above all, the famous prisoners—at least those of the English army on whom reprisals could be carried out—were not even mostly English; they were only *Celts* and *German* mercenaries, "*cannon fodder*", "*kanonenfutter*", "*chair-à-canon*" of little interest to the English general officers. And besides, the English High Command did not wish to soften the detention of its own mercenary prisoners, Americans or French, because the rate of desertion and surrender was already very high in the English army, and a dream detention would undoubtedly have encouraged untimely desertions²⁶.

Eight years after the prison doors were opened as a result of the Franco-American victory, William Cunningham, the former provost-marshal, made a written confession before he died on the gallows. He was hanged in England in 1791, not for his Crimes against Humanity,

²⁶ ● During the Second World War, Stalin immediately deported to the Siberian gulags the Russian prisoners who, by miracle, had survived Hitler's concentration camps, on the assumption that they had not fought to the death for international socialism.

which he had committed "out of pure patriotism" (because otherwise it would have involved the responsibility of the British Government), but for a simple offence of forgery. Thus, a troublesome witness was suppressed. Fortunately, history had already taken note of the confession of the torturer. In his famous confession in which Cunningham desperately tried to minimize the number of his crimes, he wrote in his own handwriting: "I have been appointed Provost-Marshal in the Army, which placed me in a position to overwhelm the Americans with our vengeance. I shudder to think of all the assassinations of which I was an accomplice *with* and *without* the orders of the Government, especially when I was in New York—when there were over 2,000 starving prisoners in various churches²⁷—by suppressing their food rations that I was selling. There were also 275 American prisoners and people heinously executed; of these, there were only a dozen or so public executions, which consisted mainly of Hessian and British deserters²⁸." He voluntarily forgot most of his crimes.

Some twenty years after the war, "in 1804, the *Columbia Society* (Tammany Hall) undertook to collect the bones of those Patriots buried at *Wallabout Bay* to be transferred to a mass grave in a nearby wooden building. Seventy years later, the people of Brooklyn built a permanent grave in *Fort Greene Park*, and even later, in 1912, it was topped with a 44-meter-high Doric column, made of granite, holding an enormous urn. This was the

²⁷ ●As mentioned above, churches and other public or semi-public buildings in New York, in addition to pontoons, served as prisons.

²⁸ ●The Life Confession and Last Dying Words of William Cunningham, formerly the British provost marshal in the City of New York who was executed in London the 10th of August, 1791, taken from his own mouth by the Ordinary of Newgate. He was executed not for his crimes in the name of the King but for thefts in England a few years later.

Prison Ship Martyrs' Monument, intended to commemorate the first American patriots who preferred to die in these stinking pontoons, to dishonor and disloyalty to their country." It took 124 years for this monument to be erected in honor of all those heroes who died of hunger or torture out of loyalty to their country. And this was not even the generation that benefited directly from their sacrifice who erected this ex-voto; it was their great-grandchildren! What to think of the human ingratitude of the well-nourished towards all these men and women who offered their lives for an ideal of heroism that the poor call patriotism, while the rich and the cowards consider it a rattle to be used without moderation with other people's children²⁹?



New York was not the only city to serve as a concentration camp for American and French prisoners of war. The pontoons anchored in the wartime ports of Plymouth and Portsmouth (UK) were torture and extermination sites, and they would become so again a decade later when the English, finally flanked by powerful and reassuring allies, wanted to make the French pay for their defeat in the American War of Independence and for the loss of their Thirteen-Colonies. As a result, the pontoons of Plymouth became "places of torture, tombs a hundred times more formidable than the floating prisons of Cadiz³⁰."

In Plymouth, therefore, during the American War of Independence, the number of prisoners was much lower than in New York. Franklin, who was concerned about

²⁹ ●And what about the same generation which, as soon as independence was achieved, violated their commitment to eternal peace with the French and narrowly failed to declare war on France?

³⁰ ●Damamme, Jean-Claude, *Les soldats de la Grande Armée*, Les Éditions Perrin, Paris, 1998, p. 410

their welfare from Paris, could write: "You have in England and Ireland 1,200 of our companions who are prisoners. For several years, they have bravely suffered all the miseries of captivity rather than consent to enter your service to fight against their own country³¹."

Continually kept abreast of the mistreatment of American prisoners of war by escapees or freedmen, Benjamin Franklin, based in Paris, was particularly concerned with helping the POW not only through letters to English leaders, trying to stimulate their sense of humanity. He threatened them when the first argument was not followed by any effect. He also brought his help in money to feed the prisoners that England left to starve.

One of these insulting letters was worded as follows: "You Englishmen, if you desire peace, you have an opportunity to prove it to us by the way you treat the prisoners who are in your dungeons. They complain of being mistreated... Winter is coming, they will suffer a lot in the state in which they are left, badly fed, without shelter, without clothes, without fire... I can tell you, with certainty, that your compatriots, prisoners in America, have been treated with great gentleness. They had the same rations as our troops. They have been provided with good housing. They have been assigned, on parole, salubrious villages so that they can walk and get amusement... Some remarkable acts of benevolence towards our people would clear the English nation of inhumanity and place it on the shoulders of the real culprits, on those who conduct the war in America... Perhaps, at your urging, we shall promptly obtain this favor in England³²,

³¹ •The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, Vol. II, pp. 110 et suiv. Letter of Benjamin Franklin to David Hartley, written in Passy on 5th of april 1782.

³² •The favor of letting Americans come and take care of American prisoners themselves in Plymouth and Portsmouth bays.

although we have been inhumanly denied it in New York³³." And Benjamin Franklin continued, imperturbably: "If you had time to visit the prisons where our prisoners are confined, and were curious to ascertain the treatment they receive, I wish you take the trouble to distribute among the most needy, according to their needs, five or six hundred pounds sterling, for which your withdrawals from my bank account will be very exactly honored. You could then pertinently bring up this point in Parliament; and this might produce good effects. If you cannot get permission for us to send a Commissioner, perhaps you will find, at Plymouth and Portsmouth, safe, humane Commissioners who would take upon themselves to send to our unfortunate soldiers, martyrs of Liberty, the help that we will be able to provide them. Certainly, your King will not reward you for this pain, but God will. I do not mention to you of the gratitude of America that you will obtain in your favor, but what is more valuable is the esteem of your conscience. Our captains have set free more than 200 of your people, taken prisoner by our warships and brought into captivity in France, not to mention a large number of others who were landed in order to repatriate them. However, *you have not given us a single man in exchange*. If we had sold your compatriots to the Moors of Salé³⁴, as you sold most of ours to your compatriots in Africa and the East

³³ ●Off the coast of New York had been moored old ships' hulls, the famous pontoons of sad memory, which served as prisons and extermination camps for American prisoners. Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp. 42 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Englishman David Hartley, Member of Parliament, and appointee, by George III, Plenipotentiary for American Affairs.

³⁴ ●Salé in Morocco. Muslims in North Africa kidnapped whites from Europe to enslave them. Those interested in this phenomenon will read with pleasure *Captives in Barbarism*, by Giles Milton, Petite Bibliothèque Payot, Paris, 2006.

Indies, would you have had the right to complain? ... Why should your barbarity merit the eternal hatred, not only of the present inhabitants of a vast country, but of their posterity, which will be much more numerous and which, from century to century, will curse the name of *English*, as today in Holland the children curse the name of *Alba*³⁵ and that of *Spanish*³⁶?" Franklin's solicitude was touching, and his hatred seemed palpable but quite controlled.

The Representative of the American Legation in Paris organized subscriptions in France for which he vouched. *Thus, it would be the French who would feed the American POW in England.* "The subscription in favor of the prisoners produces an excellent effect in favor of England and the English [the London Government did not want to vote credits for the maintenance of American prisoners]. The Scottish subscriptions to raise troops to annihilate us out have amounted to much larger sums, but they will not do half as much... If you had the opportuni-

³⁵ ● Fernando Álvarez de Toledo, duc d'Albe, was a general of Charles V. He became infamous for his cruelty and savagery in the repression against Protestants in the Spanish Netherlands, which became the United Provinces..

³⁶ ● Letter from Benjamin Franklin to David Hartley, Member of Parliament in London, and Plenipotentiary for American Affairs written at Passy (France) on October 14, 1777. Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp. 43-44. This text is certainly to be compared with that of Napoleon, written 40 years later: "Throughout the war, I did not cease to offer the exchange of prisoners, but the English government, judging that it would have been advantageous to me, has constantly refused it under one pretext or another... Then began for our unfortunate compatriots this awful torment of the pontoons... To have prolonged ten or twelve years this torment of each day, is it not enough for the blood to bubble in the hideous picture of such barbarism? And on this point, I strongly reproach myself for not having used reprisals, for not having thrown into such pontoons, not the poor sailors and soldiers, whose voice does not count, but all the milords and the mass of the distinguished class... I owed it to the French who had charged me with protecting and defending them. I lacked character: it was my duty." [Napoléon, ses opinions et jugements sur les hommes et sur les choses, recueil par M. Damas, Ginard, Volume 2, Dufey Libraire-Éditeur, Paris, 1838. Napoleon in his St. Helena Memorial, p. 354]

ty, I beg you to express our respectful gratitude to the Committee and the subscribers. Their benefits will make our poor people as comfortable as their situation allows³⁷."

Thus, in its unceasing humanitarian struggle against mistreatment and for the welfare of American POWs, Franklin was, of course, soliciting *prisoner exchanges*, but, as we have said, the British were very reluctant and parsimonious in this matter because they were aware of losing potential soldiers but also to give some to the "rebels". In addition, to the liberated German mercenaries released, they had to pay at least the arrears of salary: "Why don't you begin your reconciliation measures with the act of releasing these men? I know that this release would provide you with that of an equal number of your fellow citizens, even without any stipulation on your part³⁸."

Finally, in this avalanche of tears and crimes, there was good news. On May 3rd, 1782, David Hartley of London warned Franklin that the English Government, anxious to please the Americans with the unstated aim of recovering its economic privileges, had just announced the release of all American POWs "First step toward

³⁷ •Letter from Benjamin Franklin to the English politician David Hartley, Member of Parliament, written at Passy on February 12, 1778, in *Correspondance of Benjamin Franklin*, translated from English and annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp. 48-49.

³⁸ •The *Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin*, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &c., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, London, 1817. Vol. II, Part III, pp. 112 et seq. Letter from B. Franklin to David Hartley, Member of Parliament for London, written at Passy on 5 April 1782.

sweet reconciliation." But, the Englishman reminds us, "now, as you know, certain conditions depend on you, on your shore of the Channel³⁹." And the holy man ended his letter with some verses from a Gregorian chant to the Most High: "*Da pacem, Domine, in diebus nostris*."⁴⁰ Of course the English Government wanted Franklin to take up the defense of English interests. Without success.



Failing to secure the release of his fellow Americans, Franklin generously distributed French money so that agents in England could provide food for all those unfortunate POWs so mistreated by their jailers. We have seen that the English *gaolers* in New York diverted the money they received to buy food. The situation in England was the same, except that it was not the jailers who stole the money, but the English agents who had to distribute it to the various American prison camps in England. Franklin learned this soon enough. Mr. Thomas Attwood Digges, a wealthy Maryland merchant who resided in England, had himself offered his services to distribute once a week an allowance to every American POW on the English pontoons at Portsmouth and Plymouth. In fact, the merchant received these sums; but he forgot to allocate them to whom it might concern. "I am revolted at what you tell me about Digges. He who steals a single guinea from a rich man is a beggar. But what name should be given to who violates a sacred deposit,

³⁹ ● Letter from Hartley to Franklin, May 3, 1782. Private Correspondence, pp. 177-178. "First step towards a sweet reconciliation." "But now, as you know, some things depend on you on the other side [of the Channel]." "*Da pacem, domine, in diebus nostris*." Grant peace, Lord, in these days that belong to us. But Hartley was careful not to add the following verses: *Quia non est alius / Qui pugnet pro nobis /*. ("Because there is no one else who will fight for us!") This really represented England which, for lack of national volunteering to fight the war, had been forced to buy German regiments.

⁴⁰ ● "Give Peace, o Lord, in our days!"

who robs the poor prisoners by taking from them the eighteen pence that public charity has entrusted to him, he who repeats this crime as many times as there are weeks in a winter, and who multiplies it by stealing 600 poor people every week? There is no word in our language for such felony. *If this scoundrel is not damned, it is useless to have a devil*⁴¹?" Very energetic words of Franklin, who also wrote: "That great scoundrel Digges stole from them three or four hundred pounds sterling which he drew in my name... He has lately written to me to say that he is coming to settle his debt with me, to prove me very much mistaken in his regard, but he never showed up, instead he left for America. Beware of him, he is very clever, and there are more than one he has tricked. Every day I learn of new improper acts committed by him"⁴², in England.



So, after many efforts and repeated failures, a few minor exchanges of prisoners took place; here is one: "The English ship has already brought us a cargo of sailors from Plymouth. We announced 100 persons; there were only 97; the ship left with an equal number of English prisoners exchanged. It is going to bring us a second cargo from the Portsmouth prison... The Americans are almost all engaged with Captain Jones and Captain Landais. This exchange is all the more remarkable because

⁴¹ ●Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, translated from the English and annotated by Laboulaye of the Institute of France and the Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790), p. 133; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to a friend named William Hodgson, English marchand, April 1, 1781, in Passy, France. Of course, Thomas Attwood Digges denied any wrongdoing. This case can be further explored by reading his letters and the comments of William Bell Clark in, Letters of Thomas Attwood Digges, pp. XXIII-LIV; "In Defense of Thomas Digges," Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography, 77 du Oct. 1953, p. 381-438.

⁴² ●Franklin's correspondence p. 271. Letter from Franklin to Robert Livingston, Passy June 25, 1782.

our people had been imprisoned as *guilty of high treason*⁴³", so they were promised to death; but this did not prevent the English authorities from trying to skimp on numbers by giving only 97 Americans to receive 100 Englishmen. For a "boutiquier", there is no such thing as a small profit.

Civil wars are always crueller than conflicts between foreign nations, because brotherly love easily turns into hatred⁴⁴. The treatment of American prisoners was certainly the most infamous of cruelties. According to the French historian Jean-Claude Damamme the English and the Spanish were the worst Europeans in terms of the respect due to the prisoners of war: "The belligerents, whether French, Austrian, Saxon, Prussian, Russian, ... treat their prisoners with a reasonable humanity. In this non-exhaustive list, we note a double absence: that of the Spaniards and the English⁴⁵." Admittedly, Damamme was only referring to the Napoleonic wars, but the example can easily be extended to all conflicts until England signed the Geneva Convention.

This immense insensitivity of the English authorities towards prisoners in a state of vulnerability, (military authorities, but with the blessing of the civilian authorities who covered up these actions or at least did nothing to stop them) could also be directed against civilian populations. Canadians remember how the English Army

⁴³ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 82 Letter from B. Franklin to David Hartley, written to Passy on March 21, 1779.

⁴⁴ •The Civil War is the irrefutable example with its 700,000 killed and 2,000,000 disabled for a total population of 30,000,000 inhabitants. It was the bloodiest U.S. conflict. Americans killed in World War I:116,516. During World War II: 405,399 (War against Japan and War against Germany). Korean War: 36,516. Vietnam War: 58,209.

⁴⁵ •Damamme Jean-Claude, Les soldats de la Grande Armée, Perrin, Paris, 1998. p.372. ISBN 978-2-262-02949.

systematically burned the farms of the Lower-Saint Laurent, at the beginning of the winter of 1759-1760, and again⁴⁶ in 1837. We know, for example, that —at the end of the Seven Years' War, when, at the instigation of the Indian chief Pontiac, who had been a captain in the French Army, the Indian tribes of the Mid-West had risen up to expel the English from Ohio and the Great Lakes, hoping for the return of the French. The English had then arranged to sell *smallpox infected blankets* to friendly tribes, knowing that these friendly tribes were trading with Francophile tribes in a state of insurrection. The epidemic had taken its toll.

The English authorities repeated these bacteriological operations, crimes against humanity, during the American Revolution, not against the Indians, this time⁴⁷, but against the Americans themselves, so fierce was the hatred. It is with these same weapons now forbidden by the Geneva Convention, that General Cornwallis, viscount of Brome, "had previously sought to destroy the small army of La Fayette. He had inoculated [with smallpox] all the Blacks who deserted their plantations or whom he could kidnap, and then forced them to go back and carry the contagion into the American camp. La Fayette's vigilance put a stop to this barbarous ruse⁴⁸." Very imaginative, Lord Cornwallis even developed particular techniques which he found precedents in the *History of Ancient Wars*, to poison the wells. "Desiring to stop the march of the allied troops in front of York, he had ox heads, dead horses, and even human corpses,

⁴⁶ ●Paradoxically, this devastation was perpetrated by Scottish Highlander regiments under English command. These Highlanders themselves had just been driven out of the Highlands of Scotland and their farms burned during the *Clearances*.

⁴⁷ ●During this war, the Amerindians were instead encouraged by the English to destroy American farms and villages. This attracted reprisals at the end of the war.

⁴⁸ ●*Mercure de France*, december 1781, p. 109.

thrown into all the wells. The French Army suffered from a lack of water⁴⁹."

These distorted and perverse tactics were not the result of a rogue military leader. At the very beginning of the war, during the year 1775, when the London Parliament spoke of the need to restore *peace and order* in America to revive the sacro-sanct business, secret orders were simultaneously given by the English authorities to the six recalcitrant Northern colonies in retaliation, in the hope of restoring order through intimidation.

This tactic of overwhelming seditious populations in a state of revolt, burning their property and massacring the recalcitrant ones taken in arms, originated in England from 1066 to 1071, when the French troops of William the Conqueror pacified the English populations who tended to rebel. But, curiously, this strategy of systematic devastation that had pacified the English, when applied to the Americans it only served to anchor them in the obstinacy of the revolt. It must be said that a large percentage of the population of the Thirteen Colonies was of diverse sources: Dutch, French, German, Scottish, Russian... quite resistant to submission.

In Virginia, Lord Punmore devastated the region to the point that the Americans gave this aristocrat the unenviable nickname of *Tyrant of Virginia*. The destruction was not limited to real estate. At the same time, the American economy was being destroyed by counterfeited money, as mentioned above. And the torture was encouraged by the British Army with *hair bounties (scalps) taken by the Indian tribes from the heads of American rebels*.

⁴⁹ •Thomas Balch, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Government Printing Office, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895, p.207

General Gates burned to the ground the town of Esopus on the Hudson River, as well as the surrounding villages, by order of Generals Vaughan and Wallace, to avenge their defeat at Saratoga. In May 1778, during an expedition to the vicinity of Philadelphia, Colonel Mawhood issued the following threat, which sullied his honor and, consequently that of his country: "The colonel will reduce the rebels, their wives and children to beggary and distress; here are annexed the names of those who will be the first objects of his vengeance⁵⁰."

For the American historian Thomas Balch, one should not believe, however, that these Crimes against Humanity were specifically reserved for America and carried out only against the rebel colonists. It seems that at that time they were quite common in British customs, in the East Indies and elsewhere⁵¹. The cruel use of Indians for narrowly selfish purposes was not limited to the American War of Independence. In his State of the Union Address, on November 4th, 1812, thirty years after the Revolutionary War, American President James Madison raised the thorny issue of the agitation of the American Indians that the British continued to provoke during the Anglo-American War of 1812, regardless of the terrible reprisals that these same tribes were going to undergo from the Americans at the end of the war, when the two nations would toast the fraternal return to peace: "These

⁵⁰ ●Ramsay, David, *History of the American Revolution*, R. Aitken & Son, Philadelphia, 1789. Tome. I, p. 335.

⁵¹ ●Moreover, Charles Cornwallis, after his deeds in America, was sent to India as Governor General, since the mid-nineteenth century India had become an English colony after having been for centuries a private property of the famous British East India Co. It was the very commercial company whose rapacity had provoked the revolt of the Americans. As we have seen, this BEIC wanted to force the Americans to buy the huge stocks of Chinese tea that it had accumulated in London and that its London lobby wanted them to consume, with an additional tax.

blessings⁵² are necessarily mingled with the strains and vicissitudes of the state of war in which the United States has been forced by the insistence of a foreign power to indulge in its system of injustice." And, after this succinct introduction, Madison develops his thought, and stigmatizes the use by the English of "ruthless savages"⁵³ placed under their influence. While the benevolent policy of the United States has invariably recommended peace and promoted civilization towards this *pitiful portion of the human race*, and has made efforts to dissuade them from taking sides on one part or the other in this war." The English showed "no scruples in calling to their aid the merciless ferocity [of the Indians], with their horrible instruments of carnage and torture which are known to spare neither children nor women"⁵⁴. In this disgrace which violated the rules of honorable warfare as well as the sacred sentiment of Humanity... [the English] cannot mitigate the significance of their act by pretext of self-defense against armed men. In fact, all these highlights the most shocking massacres of defenseless families. They cannot pretend that they should not be held responsible for the atrocities perpetrated, for the savages were used in full knowledge of the danger that their fury could *no longer* be controlled. Such is the spectacle which a Nation (that prides itself on its religion and morality), did not hesitate to present in an "enlightened" age... Every citizen prepared himself to fly in arms to protect his brothers against these blood-thirsty savages... The Indian

⁵² • These blessings are essentially the favors and wealth that the President has just evoked in exordium: "On the occasion of this meeting," he has just said, "it is my first duty to draw your attention to the providential favors that our country can appreciate, considering the general level of superabundance enjoyed by our inhabitants, and the rich opulence with which the earth has rewarded the efforts devoted to it."

⁵³ • "Thank you savages." The highlighted segment was not italicized in the original text

⁵⁴ • "Neither age nor sex."

tribes that were not under foreign instigation remained at peace and received the civilizing attention which has been so beneficial to them⁵⁵." Those comments are today stricken with total obsolescence and political impertinence, and they must be deciphered through the filter of *historical anachronism*.

Another letter also refers to the atrocities committed against the Indians in retaliation. Franklin refers to the missive written to M. Bertin, Minister of State, "which contains an account of the abominable murders committed by some of the inhabitants of the frontier on the poor Moravian Indians⁵⁶. [This letter] caused me great pain. The dispensations of Providence in this world trouble my feeble reason... I cannot understand how it can be permitted to cruel men to slit the throats of their fellow men. It is well to suppose that some Indians had committed sins; but could little children have committed a fault that deserved death? How did this Providence allow one man in England⁵⁷, because he hates Americans, to satisfy his evil inclinations, by paying German assassins⁵⁸ to massacre, in concert with his own people and for a long series of bloody years, nearly 100,000 human creatures, most of whom who made themselves useful by their talents, their virtues, their ability, all qualities to which this man [the King of England] has no right to? It was he who armed the savages with axes and scalping knives, he who excited them to fall upon our defenseless planters to slit their throats with their wives and children,

⁵⁵ •Available online: James Madison: Online by Gerhard Peters and John T. Woolley, The American Presidency Project. <http://www.presidency.ucsb.edu/ws/?pid=29454>. "Fourth Annual Message," November 4, 1812.

⁵⁶ •Indians converted to Protestantism by the *German Moravian sect*.

⁵⁷ •Here the text presents a note: This is King George III, who was not a wicked man, but a stubborn fool.

⁵⁸ •These are, of course, the German mercenaries of the British army.

he who paid for the hair (the scalp) of the victims, hair whose number, already amounts, I was told, to at least 2,000. Perhaps the frontier inhabitants, exasperated by the cruelties of the Indians, have been excited to kill indiscriminately all the Indians who fell into their hands, so that these horrible murders of our poor Moravians are still the responsibility of this man [the King of England]. And yet he lives; he enjoys all the sweets that this world can offer. He is surrounded by flatterers who ease his conscience by telling him that he is the best" of princes!

The more "the number and atrocity of crimes show me the impossibility to punish a scoundrel in this life in a manner proportionate to his crimes, the more I am convinced that there is another life where all the injustices of this world are righted, where all wrongs are righted. By this faith, let us console ourselves together, my dear friend, it is the only consolation that is allowed on this scene of horrors where we are projected⁵⁹"



⁵⁹ •Correspondance de Franklin, Volume 3, pp. 109-110, Letter from Franklin to James Hutton, written in Passy on 7 july 1782. This letter is not in the English version of Franklin's Letters. Also, in *The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin*, William Temple Franklin, Vol.I, Henry Colburn, Public Library, London, 1817. p.115

CHAPTER 8

The Battle of the Chesapeake Bay (Naval Waterloo) and Yorktown. The appointment of the American Commissioners to negotiate peace. Orders to the American Commissioners not to play behind France's back. English espionage and English attempts to negotiate separately with the Americans to isolate France. The Five Points of friction between France and the United States. The Anglo-American signature behind the back of the French. The general signatures of the two treaties.

The French naval victory at Chesapeake Bay, in September 1781, and the subsequent Franco-American victory at Yorktown marked the end of the English hope of keeping the Thirteen Colonies in a state of subjection and domination.

On that day, the sea battle between the *Marine Royale* and the *Royal Navy* lasted five hours. Several ships were damaged, and nearly 340 men were killed or wounded. In the evening, the Royal Navy fleet finally broke off the battle for good, driven off but not destroyed. The French tried to pursue the English fleet, but their flight was so much like a panic that the French were unable to catch up with it. The French returned to the Chesapeake Bay to block the entrance of the bay to English reinforcement that could have strengthened the British Army at Yorktown. Finally, Yorktown surrendered. This brilliant victory left the French and Americans with 214 cannons, 22 English standards and 8,000 prisoners who were paraded

in between a row of French soldiers and another of Americans.

According to Balch, the total number of "English" prisoners in the garrison was 9,641 soldiers, which included "6,198 infantrymen, plus 1,500 sailors and 68 men taken during the siege of Yorktown. But there were 1,875 in the York hospitals. These troops were composed of the 23rd Foot Regiment (Welsh regiment also called *Royal Welsh Fusiliers*) regiment of the line, recruited in the north and the center of *Wales*), the 33rd Foot Regiment (regiment originally raised in the extreme south-east of *Wales*, the 71st Highlander Foot Regiment (Fraser clan), the 76th Highlander Foot Regiment (MacDonald clan), and the 80th Highlanders Foot Regiment. From the 45th Foot Regiment (English regiment formed in Nottinghamshire), this troop was part of the surrender of Yorktown, yet the history of the regiment is silent about its presence at Yorktown because English Historians did not want to report this humiliation. The strength of the 45th English Foot Regiment seems to have been filled by *Scottish highlanders* because of the lack of English elements, by Hessian mercenaries of the Hereditary prince, and by mercenaries of the German regiments of Anspach and Bayreuth, by the Light Infantry of the *British Legion* (composed exclusively of German mercenaries), by the *Queen's Rangers* (Scottish), the 1st Battalion of the *English King's Guards* (4 or 500 men), the 17th Foot Regiment (English Regiment of The Royal Leicestershire Regiment). This count shows how little the soldiers of English birth ventured onto the battlefields.

The French also seized 214 canons of all calibers, 7,320 small arms, 22 British flags, 457 horses. The English also lost 64 ships of which they sank about 20. But the 40

that remained were in good condition¹, well armed, as was the 14-gun frigate *GUADELOUPE*, which had been sunk but could be refloated.

The French had suffered 253 men killed or wounded during the siege, among them 18 officers. Only one of these was killed on the last day of the siege. It was M. de Bellanger, Artillery lieutenant². *Several German regiments immediately asked to fight in the French Army if the war continued.* But it was not the case, England laid down its arms and capitulated. It would have been shocking if regiments of German mercenaries enrolled by the British authorities had fought against them.

The news of the victory was greeted with great joy throughout America and at Versailles. These two French victories were the crowning achievement of several months of campaigns. At the beginning of 1781, the seven southern colonies were still in the hands of the English of Cornwallis' British army. In pursuit of the two Corps of Greene and Morgan, the English general eventually gave up the field to the Americans with the exception of Savannah and Charleston. Cornwallis then moved up to Virginia in order to make his junction in the Chesapeake Bay with a fleet of the Royal Navy that was to supply him with war munitions, food, as well as reinforcements.



On learning of the Royal Navy's naval defeat, the British general decided to stop fighting, despite the good quality of his troops, mainly German mercenaries and Scots. By his capitulation, he transformed the repercussions of the *sea battle of Chesapeake Bay* into an English "naval Waterloo", to use the unorthodox expression of the

¹ 1 • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 vol., 1891-1895. NOTE pp. 186-187 v. fr.

² 2 • Muzzle ammunition is now called food or individual food rations.

great Hungarian historian Emil Reich³. The position of the English was no longer tenable against the French. A quarter of the English army had called in sick. There was enough to make their leader sick himself —and besides, ironically, he himself called in sick on the day of his humiliating capitulation⁴—.

With this naval defeat came the collapse of the dreams of keeping the United States in their economic “*restricted area*” and as a consequence, becoming, a super-power that would far surpass France of this time, and which *no coalition could bring to its knees*. A merchant’s dream. Of course, they could now trade with the Americans, but Americans could also afford to compete with them, something they had not been allowed to do before.

Thus, the London Merchant Lobbies lost all hope of using this young country, which had the most colossal destinies, to raise England to the top of the world power, to impose to their only profit a complete monopoly on the international trade, and crush with cannon fire and German cannon fodder all recalcitrant competition who would threaten English monopoly. Which merchant has not dreamed of destroying (or forcing) competition with gunboats, as 60 years later the *British East India Co.* forced China to buy its opium (Opium War, 1840)? It is surprising to realize that one third of the world (the immense British Empire⁵) was, at one time or another, submitted to this ban on not competing with England's lobbies.



³ •Emil Reich (1854–1910), in *Foundations of Modern Europe*. Read Books, 2007 (First published in 1902. Curiously, there is not a single street in France that celebrates the Battle of the Chesapeake probably not to avoid humiliating the English nation, while England is literally covered with Waterloo streets or squares.

⁴•Lord Cornwallis pretended an indisposition not to go out at the head of his troops. They were commanded by General O'Hara.

⁵ •Almost as large as the Mongolian Empire (31,000,000 km².)

On the 17th, at 10:00 a.m., the British general dispatched an officer *to the French*, under a parliamentary flag, to request a twenty-four-hour suspension of arms or armistice. Anxious to respect to the letter the rules of hierarchical cooperation between the two allied armies, the French immediately referred the request to General Washington, commander-in-chief of both armies. In order to punish the British for having voluntarily ignored the Franco-American chain of command and the superiority of the American general in the same chain of command, the "*American and French*" general⁶ pretended not to find clear enough the request for a truce and ordered the artillery shelling to continue. The bombardment of the British troops continued for another six hours and a large number of German soldiers were killed to satisfy the susceptibility of the general-in-chief and to punish all English vanity. By 4:00 p.m., the latter had finally understood that if they wanted to obtain a suspension of the Franco-American bombardments, they had to submit to the will of their despised rebel general. *The fear of Vallières' French guns, which made up the entire American artillery, was thus the beginning of Wisdom.* The proposals were clearly submitted to the American general by Cornwallis. The shelling was then suspended.

The next day was spent in capitulation negotiations. As negotiations were held *in French*, the international language of the time. This may seem very curious between the Americans and the English. The Comte de Rochambeau appointed the Viscount de Noailles to represent the French Army, General Washington appointed Colonel

⁶ •To avoid hierarchical problems, George Washington had been appointed to the rank of general of the French Army.

Laurens⁷ in the name of the American Army, and Monsieur de Granchain presented himself on behalf of the *Marine Royale*.

Everyone met the officers of Lord Cornwallis' Army to work out the terms of the English capitulation. The French, who had no grievance against this English general—except perhaps for having poisoned the wells by throwing in the corpses of slaves and animals—were of the opinion to grant him the "Honors of War," that is, a surrender without any programmed humiliation⁸. Although not very enthusiastic, the American generals were to acquiesce when La Fayette—remembering that, at the time of the surrender of Charleston, the British had forced General Lincoln to raise and wave the American flag as a sign of humiliation, and not to play the national military march—, La Fayette, therefore, insisted on retaliation against Cornwallis, and obtained from the reluctant French that the surrender be made according to these same two conditions, which was adopted⁹:

Article I stipulated that the garrisons at Yorktown and Gloucester, including the officers and seamen of His Britannic Majesty's ships, as well as other seamen, constitute themselves prisoners of war to the Combined Forces of America and France. The land troops remained prisoners of the United States. The Navy troops and the Naval Army became prisoners of His Most Christian Majesty the King of France.

⁷ •An American of French descent. The English army would therefore come out in columns, beating drums and ensigns deployed.

⁸ •La Fayette was then an American officer and not an officer in the French Army. Moreover, the English general nicknamed the teenager that was La Fayette with a certain condescension: "The kid!" So one can think that Lafayette was not unhappy to punish him twice.

⁹ •Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. pp. 182-183 de la v. fr.

Article III provided that, at noon that day, the two redoubts on the left flank of Yorktown would be surrendered, one to a detachment of the American Infantry, the other to a detachment of French Grenadiers. The garrison would march out to a location in front of the boundary posts, at precisely 12:00 noon, with their weapons at the shoulders (in the sling), their colors folded and the drums beating a military march. The British soldiers were then to lay down their weapons in front of the French and return to their bivouacs where they would remain momentarily. Two defensive blockhouses on the Gloucester side would be surrendered at 1:00 p.m. to a detachment of French and American troops who would take possession of them. The garrison would come out at 3:00 pm; the Cavalry with sabers drawn and trumpets sounding, and the Infantry in the manner prescribed for the garrison of Yorktown.

Article IV specified that commissioned officers would retain their individual weapons. *The Article V* allowed soldiers (German, Scottish or Irish), who wished to do so, to enlist in the service of America.

Article IX granted three months to English traders who wished to evacuate the zones until then held by the English, although the American Army would retain a right of requisition over their property.

In spite of his opportune (fictitious) illness which had allowed him to avoid the ultimate humiliation of handing over his sword himself, *Lord Cornwallis obtained the favor of being a prisoner on parole of the French*; to his great satisfaction. The French allowed him to return to England, but as a French prisoner, he was not to sit in the House of Lords or command English troops against the French. The capitulation was signed on the Allied side by General George Washington, who represented the United States, the Comte de Rochambeau, for the French Army,

and the Comte de Barras on behalf of the French Marine Royale.

The capitulation was signed on October 19th, 1781, at noon¹⁰. At two o'clock, the English garrison marched between the two hedges formed by the French and the Americans, and laid down their last arms. Lord Cornwallis who had pretended to be indisposed, did not go out as a defeated general at the head of his troops. The English garrison was commanded by General O'Hara. Adjutant general Dumas was charged to go at the head of these troops and to lead the column. He placed himself on the left of General O'Hara, and as General O'Hara asked him where General Rochambeau stood: "On our left," replied Dumas; "at the head of the French line! At once General O'Hara hurried his horse to present his sword to the French general. Dumas guessing his intention galloped off to place himself between the English general and Monsieur de Rochambeau. At the same time, he gestured to General Washington, who was in front of him at the head of the American Army: "You are mistaken! You are mistaken!" Dumas told him, "the General in Chief of our Army is on the right. As General O'Hara¹¹ raised his sword to hand it

¹⁰ ● In the presence of His Excellency General Washington, Commander-in-Chief of the Combined Force of America and France, His Excellency the Comte de Rochambeau, Lieutenant-General of the King's Army of France, Grand Cross of the Royal and Military Order of Saint-Louis, Commander-in-Chief of the Naval Army of France in the Chesapeake, on the one hand; and, opposite, the Right Honourable Earl of Cornwallis, Lieutenant-General of Her Britannic Majesty's Forces, commanding the garrison of York and Gloucester, and Thomas Symonds, Squire, commander of Her Britannic Majesty's naval forces in the York River in Virginia.

¹¹ ● Charles O'Hara (1740 -1802) was a British army officer of Irish origin through his father who had conceived him illegitimately with a Portuguese woman in Lisbon. In 1766 his wealthy father bought him a lieutenant-colonel (as was done in England at the time) in a regiment of English bandits freed on condition that they fight for their country. In 1780 he was appointed Brigadier General in the English Army. In 1792 he served as Governor-General of Gibraltar. On November 23, 1793, he was taken prisoner by Bonaparte, during the siege of Toulon. He was exchanged in 1795 for Rochambeau. He was again appointed Governor-General of Gibraltar in December 1795. He died in 1802 in his bed. He was one of the few to be taken prisoner by Napoleon Bonaparte and

to General Washington, the latter stopped him with a gesture, exclaiming, "*Never from such a good hand!*"

The American describes the mood of the English officers: "The English generals and officers seemed very humiliated by their defeat and showed their displeasure at having to give way to rebels, for whom they had publicly professed the greatest disdain and even a contempt which had often gone as far as forgetting the most elementary laws of humanity. Dumas, in pointing out this vindictiveness of the English officers, which he was well able to notice since he was leading the column of prisoners, tells us that Colonel Abercromby, of the English Guards, at the moment when his troop was putting down their arms, quickly moved away, covering his face and biting his sword.

They all were treated with the utmost courtesy. Visits were paid to each other. But in the middle of these demonstrations of politeness, on the side of the vanquished, there was a feeling of bitterness which was translated by the English into satirical or denigrating words towards the Americans, to whom they did not want to acknowledge that they had been forced to surrender. Thus, Generals Washington, Rochambeau and La Fayette, each sent an aide-de-camp to compliment Lord Cornwallis, who retained La Fayette's, *Major Washington*, a relative of General George Washington. He told him that he valued the fact that the general against whom he had made this campaign would be persuaded that he had only surrendered when faced with the impossibility of defending himself any longer. The same British general O'Hara who, as we have said above, had wanted to give his sword back to Monsieur de Rochambeau rather than to General

George Washington. [Bicheno, Hugh. *Redcoats and Rebels: The American Revolutionary War*. Harper Collins, 2003.]

Washington, found himself one day at the table of French generals, made sure that he did not want to be heard by Monsieur de La Fayette and said that he considered himself lucky not to have been taken by the Americans alone: "*It is apparently,*" replied La Fayette (who had heard him very well despite the efforts of O'Hara), *that General O'Hara does not like repetitions*¹²." Indeed, by this word "*repetition*", La Fayette was alluding to the fact that General O'Hara had already been taken prisoner a first time in the famous surrender of General Burgoyne.

O'Hara must never have regretted learning French and becoming fluent in it, for the French took him prisoner again a few years later, for the *third* time, during the escape of the English Fleet from Toulon, in front of the French Revolutionaries. Prisoner of war, the general almost died on the guillotine as the French Revolutionary Government had criminally decreed about the English who would attempt to sabotage and interrupt the course of the French Revolution.



Despite their surrender at the end of the American Revolution, the English had a hard time accepting that the Americans had succeeded in breaking with England, and especially that the French—detested, envied, and hated for centuries—had been the actors of this immense loss. The state of mind was very comparable to the hatred that putrefies the relationships of the two wives in a "*ménage à trois*." England hated France with all the intensity of a deceived wife. The victorious France behaved with a moderation that bordered on condescension, like the victorious and beloved mistress who takes into account the suffering of the neglected wife, and tries to soften it by her restraint

¹² • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 vol. 1891-1895. pp.184 et suiv. v. fr. Version.

and her delicacy. The wife, drunk with hatred, but suddenly fearful before the mistress who had brought her to her knees and was preparing to settle her fate, hid cautiously this hatred against the mistress and revealed it only in front of the husband. Such was, caricatured and simplified, the situation of the three countries at the time of the Peace Negotiations that were to lead to the double *Treaties of Paris and Versailles*.

Benjamin Franklin's letter to his friend in the British Parliament, William Strahan (Scottish but strongly integrated¹³ into London's society), gives us an idea of the depth of the bleeding wound and even *suppurating wound* that existed between the English people and the American society: "You admit frankly that the last war ended in a manner quite opposite to your expectation. Your expectation was ill-founded... You rather believed the tales that were told about our cowardice, about our impotence of body and mind. Do you remember the story you used to tell me, of the Scottish sergeant who single-handedly disarmed and took prisoner 40 American soldiers¹⁴? It was a bit like the Irishman who claimed to have taken five enemies single-handedly *by surrounding them*.

And yet, my friend, in spite of your wit and judgment you seemed to believe in this madness, because you shared the general infatuation. The word *general* reminds me of your General Clarke who had the impudence to say, at Sir

¹³ 2 •By its Anglican religion.

¹⁴ 1 •The recurring theme is well known. An H man, who had gone unarmed into the nearby wood to relieve a pressing need, saw an enemy patrol arrive in column. He lets them pass and then pulls up his pants and shouts, "You are our prisoners of war. Throw away your weapons or you're dead! Don't turn around! Go straight ahead to our lines!" And the patrol, hands up, arrives in the enemy lines, followed by the man H who, with his hands, holds his trousers. This legend with variations feeds and embellishes the patriotism and contempt for the enemy of many nations in times of war. A similar tale highlighted Adolf Hitler's courage in the interwar period; he is said to have taken prisoner a group of English infantrymen during the First World War in northern France or in Belgium.

John Pringle's and in my presence, that *with a thousand English grenadiers he would go from one end of America to the other and castrate all males...* Your Parliament also believed the stories of some other general, who foolishly claimed that a Yankee felt no courage. It was thought that a Yankee was a kind of Yahoo¹⁵. So your Parliament did not think it proper to read before such an august Assembly the petitions of such creatures.

What was the result of this monstrous pride and insolence? You first sent against us small armies, believing them more than sufficient to subjugate us, but you were soon forced to send more considerable troops. Wherever these have ventured to penetrate our country, beyond the protection of their ships, they were either repulsed and put to flight, or surrounded, beaten and taken prisoner.

An American planter who had never seen Europe was chosen to command our troops, which he did for the duration of the war. This man sent back to you, one after the other, five of your best generals, discomfited, head without laurels, dishonored even in the opinion of their masters. The contempt that you showed for our intelligence, comparing it [unfavorably] to yours, did not seem to be much better founded than the opinion you had of our courage... In whatever Court of Europe a Yankee negotiator appeared; the wise English Envoy, confused and angry, would end up picking a quarrel to your friends, and was sent home "with a flea in his ear"¹⁶. Do not believe, however, my dear friend, that I am vain enough to attribute our successes to our superiority. I am too familiar with the

¹⁵ ●Before being a search engine, a Yahoo, in Gulliver's travels, was a disgusting animal, which was the slave of the horse, but which had none of the qualities of this noble animal. Swift painted the Yahoo in heinous guises.

¹⁶ ●"And was sent home with a flea in his ear": popular idiomatic expression used in England and Australia, meaning: "To angrily tell someone to go away," to get stuck outside.

springs and levers of our machine, not to see that our human means were out of proportion to our enterprise, and that without the justness of our cause, and consequently without the help of Providence [that is to say France] in whom we had faith, we were lost¹⁷". Such was the bitter letter of reproach which reflected the general opinion of the Americans about the prejudices of the English!



Beaten down on sea as well as on land, the English began to become less intransigent...but more crabby. Shelburne¹⁸ received Joseph-Mathias Gérard de Rayneval, from September 13th to 15th, 1782, on a mission of information and not of negotiation. The English, who had lost an army at Saratoga, had returned to feelings of cooperation. But this was a ruse intended to soften the French so that the English would not suffer too much from their successive defeats, as they had done at the end of the War of the Austrian Succession which they had once lost: "Shelburne told me in the most serious and thoughtful tone," said Gérard de Rayneval: "I desire not only to contribute to the restoration of peace between the two Sovereigns, but also... to bring them to a cordiality that will make them happy for each other. Not only are they not natural enemies, as has been thought until now, but they have common interests which should bring them together. In the past, no one dared fire a cannon in Europe without the consent of France and England. Also we have, on both sides, lost our consideration for being determined to harm each other. Let us change such erroneous principles; let's get

¹⁷ •The Private Correspondence p.162 et suiv.

¹⁸ •William Fitzmaurice-Petty, 1er marquis de Lansdowne, (1737–1805), was better known in history as The Earl of Shelburne between 1761 and 1784. He was an Anglo-Protestant from Ireland [we would say a pied-noir] of the English Whig party of distant Franco-Norman origin (Son of Maurice). He was Home Secretary in 1782 and Prime Minister in 1782-1783.

together, let's agree, and we'll make the law to the rest of Europe¹⁹." Thus, the English diplomats tried to skirt around to save what was essential for them, as they had done at the end of the War of the Austrian Succession, which had made Frederick of Prussia the ally of the French. Frederick said: "They are thus idiots and ignorant people who govern France to know so badly how to take advantage of their benefits²⁰!" And unfortunately, Frederick of Prussia was very perceptive.

In 1783, the choice of a city where negotiations and Peace would be signed was made—as if by chance—on the very city where the French had had to sign the humiliating Treaty of Paris of 1763. In Paris (1763), the Prussians of this same Frederick II, who had played the main role in Europe, had practically gained *only glory*. Unwilling to humiliate the English by mentioning the deep reason of his choice²¹, the French Minister of Foreign Affairs proposed Paris which "seemed the most practical place to negotiate, since Spain already had an ambassador there, and that it

¹⁹ • Could we not say the same thing in the 21st century. Text extracted from Doniol, Henri, *Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique, Correspondance politique et documents*, tome V, Imprimerie nationale, Paris, 1886. p. 127-128.

²⁰ • Duc de Broglie, *La Paix d'Aix-la-Chapelle*, Calmann-Lévy, Paris, 1895. p. 245, and Castex, JC, *Dictionnaire des batailles franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Succession d'Austria*, Éditions P-O., Vancouver, 2011. Prolegomena p. 18. According to Lord Chesterfield and according to any attentive and impartial historian, the only reason why Louis XV and Madame de Pompadour sabotaged the victories of the French soldiers was the weariness of the King of France to follow his army in the campaign. He wanted to pass for a Warrior King in order to redeem his debauchery, publicly denounced by the French Catholic Clergy. Tired of following his army in the field, he simply wanted to return home to the comfort of Versailles. The King of England had very opportunely abandoned his army in the field after his fright at the battle of Dettingen, during which he had narrowly fallen into French hands. Thus, he no longer took the risk of wandering in battlefields. In any case, being a constitutional monarch, subject to merchant lobbies, the English King would not have left him the leisure to renounce the advantages of a victorious war as Louis XV did in Aix-la-Chapelle. [Castex, Jean-Claude, *Dictionnaire des batailles franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Succession d'Austria*, Éditions P-O., Vancouver, 2011. Prolegomena p. 21.]

²¹ • Signing for victory where they signed for defeat 20 years earlier.

was easy to gather the American Commissioners; that in the assumption that the different *parties* would treat directly between them, without intervention of mediators; but that, if one wanted to resort to the mediation of the Emperor²², one could meet in Vienna²³."

Vergennes declared that the King of France, his master, "was so disposed to Peace, that he would deal with it wherever the King of England would choose²⁴. "It will be noted how *inappropriate* this comment²⁵ was in the mouth of a negotiator whose army was victorious. It was as if we were at the end of the War of the Austrian Succession, when Louis XV, although victorious, sacrificed all the advantages gained by the French soldiers with their blood, and imposed an immediate peace, in order to avoid the inconvenience of following his army in campaign²⁶. The *Old Fritz* who had only four years to live, had to shrug his shoulders in his beautiful royal palace of Sans Souci while

²² ● The Holy Roman Emperor, Joseph II of Habsburg, eldest son of Francis of Lorraine and Maria Theresa of Austria. He resided in Vienna and also happened to be Archduke of Austria and King of Hungary.

²³ ● Lettre de Benjamin Franklin à Henry Laurens, written in Passy on april 20th 1782 ; The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &.&., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, Londres, 1817. Vol.II, Part III, p.149 et suiv. 3

²⁴ ● Ibidem.

²⁵ ● "The King, his master, however, was so truly disposed to peace, which he would agree to any place the King of England should chose."

²⁶ ● Louis XV had become so unpopular after the attacks of the Clergy, that he decided to forge the personality of the Warrior-King who followed his Army on campaign. But he was so tired of the constant travel that he literally sabotaged his advantages in order to impose peace and return to live in the comfort of Versailles. On the subject of this "curiosity" of the History of France, at the origin of the expression "Working for the King of Prussia", we will consult with profit the introductory Prolegomena of the same author in his Dictionary of Franco-English Battles of the War of the Austrian Succession, Les Éditions PO, White-Rock Vancouver, 2011. ISBN : 978- 2-921668-06-4

tenderly caressing the hand of a giant officer of his Prussian Guard.



On June 15th, 1781, Huntington, President of the Continental Congress, *ordered the American Commissioners for Peace*—that is to say the official American negotiators—not to play behind the backs of France²⁷. "We think it would be imprudent, at this distance, to lock yourself into absolute and peremptory directives concerning any other than the two essential articles mentioned above. You have therefore the freedom to defend the interests of the United States... To this end, *you must make the frankest and most confidential communications on all subjects to the Ministers of our generous ally, the King of France, to decide nothing in the negotiations for peace or truce, without letting the French know, and obtaining their approval. And ultimately, to act according to their advice and opinion*; endeavoring in your conduct to make them aware of the fact that we rely heavily on them and on the influence of His Majesty [Louis XVI] to come to our effective aid in everything which may be necessary for the peace, security and future prosperity of the United States of America." It was as clear as source water in the eighteenth century, if not today, an era of pollution. But wasn't this a warning also, a sign that there could be *slippage* within the team of American negotiators constantly solicited for treason by the British, indefatigable in the Art of deviousness and underhandedness.

In addition to the French negotiators, the peace negotiations were taken care of by five American citizen appointed by their Continental Congress, including Benjamin Franklin and John Jay. David Hartley represented

²⁷ •The Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States, Government Printing Office, Francis Wharton, Washington, 1889. 6 tomes. T. IV, p. 504.

Great Britain. As shrewd lobbyists, *the British were always reluctant to make proposals for fear of exceeding expectations.* The Marquis de La Fayette asked Major Ross why England was so slow to make acceptable proposals. Ross, who was a frank and direct military man, replied: "because we are afraid to offer you more than you expect or desire²⁸."

The English plenipotentiaries softened their demands with the Insurgents in order to seduce them. Benjamin Franklin wrote to Dr. John Ingenhousz at Passy on June 21st, 1782: "Our affairs in America present the best aspect today. Our Congress is perfectly united. All our citizens are armed and disciplined. Frequent service in the Militia has made them just good soldiers. The number of our enemies has greatly diminished; it is reduced to two or three garrisons. Our trade and agriculture are flourishing. England finally recognizes the difficulty of conquering us. They no longer demand our submission and ask for peace. They would consider themselves very happy today to obtain from us a federal union. They will do everything to succeed. But perhaps they will fail because *it is in the interest of all of Europe to prevent this union*²⁹."

In London, far from prostrating the English into inaction, defeat made them hyperactive, for there was no question of the London Merchant Lobbies —*their active principle*— would admit defeat. The English Army had been defeated? Thousands of men had died for nothing? Never mind the price, the firemen of politics (the diplomats) were going to try to *limit the losses and the breakage*

²⁸ •Correspondence, p. 266 Franklin, Monday, June 17, 1782.

²⁹ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 172: Letter from Benjamin Franklin to John Ingeniousz, written at Passy on June 21, 1782. The segment in italics was not highlighted in the original text.

the London Merchant Lobbies had to undergo. First of all, in that year 1782, the Government changed hands after a vote of no confidence against Lord North's Government³⁰. The successes of the French forces had "so strengthened the Opposition in the London Parliament, that this Opposition became the Majority, and forced the King to dismiss his former ministers and their supporters"³¹.

The British Parliament, that wished to draw closer to the Americans to counteract and thwart the French had "already made *half a peace* with the Americans, by forbidding their British troops in America to take any offensive, wrote Benjamin Franklin, and by authorizing the King to make Peace"³². All these occult maneuvers sought to detach the Thirteen Colonies away from France, in the vain hope of overcoming the French in isolation and to pacify the Americans thereafter. It worked, despite Benjamin Franklin's vehement denials to the Chevalier de Chastellux, written at Passy on April 6th, 1782: "I know that they desire to detach us from France, but that is impossible"³³. He seemed very honest, but he let himself be enticed by virtuosos in the art of political and diplomatic illusionism.

Apart from Canada, which France refused to reintegrate into its French Empire for the reasons exposed in this work, the point on which the English remained most apprehensive was the return of Gibraltar to Spain, about

³⁰ ● This was the first time that a British Prime Minister was forced to resign after a vote of non-confidence in the House of Commons.

³¹ ● Ibidem. p. 163; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to the Chevalier de Chastellux, Passy on April 6, 1782.

³² ● Ibidem. p. 163; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to the Chevalier de Chastellux, Passy on April 6, 1782

³³ ● Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, traduite de l'anglais et annotée par Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790); p. 163 ; Lettre de Benjamin Franklin au chevalier de Chastellux, à Passy le 6 avril 1782.

which the English Minister "would promise nothing"³⁴. But here again, the English were making a fuss over nothing. French politicians protected England with more care than a *mother hen*, refusing to damage England so that it could continue to maintain a political balance in Europe. When one knows that this famous *Balance of Power* consisted of putting together anti-French coalitions to defeat France and take advantage of its momentary weakness to steal its colonies... It is beyond comprehension! How could that French politicians favour their chief persecutor in this way? It was pure masochism!



Throughout this war, but especially after the Battle of the Chesapeake Bay, all the letters and messages from all the warring parties were carefully read and copied by seasoned spies —or by traitors— working not only for the French, for the English, but also for the other European powers: Spain, Russia, Prussia, Austria or Holy Empire. Thus, after a secret conference (in 1781), a dispatch from General Washington to General Sullivan, member of Congress, and another message from Monsieur de Chastellux to the French Consul in Philadelphia, Monsieur de La Luzerne, were intercepted by English agents, copied and delivered to English General Clinton, while a dispatch from Lord Germaine to Lord Clinton was carried to Washington by an American privateer. These letters served the cause of the Franco-Americans better than the most skillful diplomacy. George Washington revealed in his letter that "we are going to actively push the siege of New-York and we are going to write to Monsieur de Grasse to come and force the bar of Sandy Hook, while the English Minister announced the resolution to push the war to the South.

³⁴ •Quoted by Henri Doniol.

George Washington then understood the correctness of Rochambeau's ideas.

[In the same document,] Monsieur de Chastellux expressed himself in unseemly terms about Monsieur de Rochambeau, and claimed to be the one who have won him over to the ideas of General George Washington. [With the aim of perverting interpersonal relations by stirring up discord among the French enemy], the English officer in charge of the espionage and disinformation service sent a copy of this letter to the French general Rochambeau, who, as a punishment, sent for Monsieur de Chastellux, showed him the copy and threw it into the fire. He was careful not to contradict him and to confide in him his true intentions³⁵ which had changed in the meantime. François Jean de Beauvoir de Chastellux was a Marquis, while Jean-Baptiste Donatien de Vimeur de Rochambeau was only a Count, and the latter considered it more hierarchical (socially speaking), to punish the other by displaying a silence charged with animadversion.

Thus, the English continued the Peace negotiations, separately, with the French on the one hand and the Americans on the other. The French kept their American allies informed of English proposals, *but the Americans only revealed a part of it*. By chance, the French Secret Service made up for the lack of loyalty of their American and allied protégés.



At the beginning of the negotiations, George III's letters to his Minister North sometimes betrayed a great fear of the future. It had been felt for a long time already, in fact since the intervention of the French which had shown

³⁵ ● Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. p. 129 de la v. fr.

to the English that, without allies, they ran towards abyss of danger.

France had an ally, Spain, but this country —which feared that the taste for freedom of these American colonists would contaminate its own colonies— was just a moral ally, even if this country did not carry England in its heart, for the list of grudges against this Nation was long and incandescent: theft of precious wood from the forests of Central America, incessant frauds in the practice of the *Asiento de Negros* and the *annual cargo ship*, attacks on the Plata Flottas, attacks on the Spanish Florida... As a result, Spain never fought on the battlefields of the Thirteen Colonies. The King of England was therefore very concerned about losing all of North America, including Canada, French Acadia, which had just been ethnically cleansed of its French without France having raised the slightest protest against this crime against Humanity perpetrated by England³⁶, and Newfoundland, whose fisheries were of primary importance to the European in the European economies.

In the 18th century, which was to end in the blood of the French Revolution, the sovereigns of France had abandoned most of North America to the greed of England: Louis XIV had given up Newfoundland, Hudson Bay, and Acadia to England, Louis XV gave Canada³⁷ to England and Louisiana to Spain, and Louis XVI would neglect to recover New France for absurd reasons. As for Napoleon, he sold for a mere pittance to the United States, the Great-Louisiana, recaptured by force from Spain.

When one notices this negligence of the French sovereigns which led to the long-term degradation of France

³⁶ • Acadia had become the colony of Nova Scotia, populated by Germans and especially Scots deported from Scotland where the English also exercised ethnic cleansing.

³⁷ • And Louisiana to Spain.

through the squandering of its colonies, one can think that, even if the English constitutional monarchy had not at that time brought any welfare to the Englishman in the street, at least the action of the powerful London Merchant Lobbies had sufficiently neutered the discretionary power of the Kings of England in such a way that they could not commit such aberrations against the interests of their own Nation. King George III had written to North: "I will never consent that in any treaty that may be made, one word shall be mentioned concerning Canada, Nova Scotia or the Floridas, which are colonies belonging to my country, and the more they are kept separate from the other colonies³⁸ the better, for *it is by these colonies that we shall keep a certain terror over the abandoned colonies*³⁹, in which good garrisons must be constantly maintained⁴⁰." Knowing that the *French Secret Services* (like those of the English, by the way) read everyone's letters before they even reached their addressee, it was —more than a cry of fright— a message to the French that the policy of Vergennes would be realized and that the French were not making a strategic error in abandoning Canada to England⁴¹.



In spite of all this fiddling, the Preliminaries were in a state of being presented to the English Parliament in January 1783. They had been proposed in May 1782. ●*Article* 1 proposed that English troops would withdraw from the

³⁸ ●The other colonies = the Thirteen-Colonies.

³⁹ ●"Over the abandoned colonies." The segment in italics was not highlighted in the original text.

⁴⁰ ●Correspondence of George III with Lord North from 1768 to 1783, by W. Bodham Donne, in two volumes, John Murray, Albermarle Street, London, 1867. Vol. II, p. 108. Letter 432 – 29 Dec. 1777 from the King to North.

⁴¹ ●Vergennes' absurd strategy of leaving Canada to England to "watch" the United States and threaten them with its presence, thereby neutralizing the aggressiveness of both countries, as if it were written in stone that these two countries would remain sworn enemies forever.

Thirteen Provinces; and a truce would be concluded between Great Britain and the said provinces for a period of [here a blank space allowed for an additional 10 or 20 years at the option of the negotiators]. ●Article 2 stated that a *bona fide* negotiation would be opened between Britain and America's Allie. ●Article 3 sought to unshackle the Americans from France: If the proposed negotiations between Great Britain and America's allies failed to produce peace, and if war continued between the said parties, America should behave as a neutral nation and be treated as such. ●Article 4, decided that peace would be established between Great Britain and America's allies; the truce between Great Britain and America would be transformed into a *Perpetual Peace*. The independence of America would be accepted and guaranteed by Great Britain, and a *Treaty of Commerce* signed between them. ●Article 5 wanted these proposals to be presented to the Court of France, for communication to the American Commissioners, and *for reply* to the Court of Great Britain."

In other words, it would be sufficient for England to refuse any agreement with France for the United States to be released [Art. 3] from its obligation of its Treaty of Alliance with Louis XVI, which theoretically obliged the two parties to support each other. *The trap was really crude, and one realizes how much the English must have disdained the Americans to imagine that they could fall into it.*

It is certain that the behavior of the London Merchant Lobbies had to be monitored, because, especially in the final negotiations, it was to be feared that the Americans would be led to break down, unable to resist the temptation to sacrifice their French allies in order to obtain a larger share of the dividends of the war. The new United States were truly the spiritual sons of those English

Merchant Lobbies that functioned solely by economic calculation. *Money talks!* And the London Merchant Lobbies were ready to do anything, to betray *all*, just to obtain material advantages. They had proved it during the War of the Spanish Succession during which they had not hesitated to abandon Austria and the United Provinces in the middle of the war in order to have the right to the Royal Bribe [which included the monopoly of the Slave Trade or *Asiento de Negros to the Spanish Empire*] offered by France⁴².

The British repeated this crime of betrayal during the War of the Austrian Succession which they had lost, by secretly betraying their allies (Austria) to obtain complaisance from France⁴³.

At the end of the Seven Years' War, when the *Preliminaries of Peace*⁴⁴ were signed at Fontainebleau, between France, Spain and England, on November 3rd, 1762, Choiseul easily managed to separate England from its ally Prussia, by bribing again England. Choiseul granted enormous advantages to the English in order to frustrate the Prussians. Prussia was thus isolated. The soldiers of Frederick II of Prussia had died in vain and it was England which drew all the advantages. In any case, the use of German blood for the benefit of England was never a novelty. Ten or twenty times as many Germans than English died for the British Empire. Never Frederick II of Prussia forgave the "advantages" which he considered a treason by England.

⁴² •Diplomacy in the War of Spanish Succession, by JC Castex, P-O. Publishings, Vancouver, 2010. The book is available on several sites including Lulu.com and Internet Archives.

⁴³ •See the *Prolegomena* of Dictionnaire des batailles franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Succession d'Autriche, Castex, JC, Éditions P-O., Vancouver, 2011.

⁴⁴ •Peace finally ratified at the Treaty of Paris on February 10th, 1763.

It was not the first time in history that England allowed itself to be bribed. In 1493, for 745,000 gold crowns given by Charles VIII of France, Henry VII of England had abandoned his ally Maximilian of Austria (Germanic Emperor) who had been thus forced to sign with France the *Peace of Senlis*, on May 29th, 1493. In 1658, Cromwell's England had abandoned Spain in the middle of the Civil War, also to obtain a French Royal Bribe, the fortress of Dunkirk. The English had never forgiven themselves to have the "bridgehead" of Calais taken by the French, a century after the end of the Hundred Years' War; and they hoped that Dunkirk would be a suitable replacement. But in 1662, in need of money, Charles II sold Dunkirk to France, much to the dismay of future rulers.



The negotiations continued unabated. In fact, 10 days before the English regained a glimmer of hope by winning a naval combat in the West Indies, they seemed "*to know neither how to continue the war or how to make peace*", said Benjamin Franklin. The *least success* in the West Indies would dispel their fears, awaken their natural insolence, interrupt the negotiations, and rekindle the war⁴⁵."

And this "*least success*" occurred on April 12th, 1782, when Admiral de Grasse and his squadron, escorting a convoy, encountered off the island of Dominica Admiral Rodney at the head of his own squadron. At the sight of the English, De Grasse ordered several French vessels to continue their route in order to secure the passage of the convoy they were in charge of, while the rest of the French squadron deployed in line of battle to face the English ships augmented by fifteen frigates. The English thus

⁴⁵ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p.161; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to George Washington, written at Passy on April 2, 1782.

aligned numerical superiority of 3 or 4 ships of the line and 766 cannons. All the English ships carried a new weapon on their forecastle, the *carronades*, short but very large caliber cannons manufactured in the foundry of Loch Carron in Scotland, which had an effect on French rigging.

Finally, the French convoy passed through—which was the objective of the battle—yet de Grasse was taken prisoner and five escort ships taken, but the English squadron was itself too damaged by the battle to be able to continue.

The successes of the French in the West Indies had until this naval battle much of repercussion in Europe. "Admiral Rodney was then in France where he was held up by debts he could not pay. One day, he was dining at the residence of the French Maréchal de Biron. During the conversation, Rodney treated with disdain—fort disobligingly to his host—the successes of the French sailors, saying that if he were free, he would soon be vindicated. Wanting to put him to the test, the French marshal paid his debts and said to him, "Go away, sir. Go and try to fulfill your promises. The French do not want to take advantage of the obstacles that prevent you from fulfilling them"⁴⁶." Laughing under his breath, the Englishman returned to his country, free of any debt. This resulted in the English victory at Les Saintes. This case was a master stroke in the

⁴⁶ •The old Maréchal de Biron, who had no fear of harming his country, was none other than Louis Antoine de Gontaut, Duc de Lauzun, Comte and then Duc de Biron. This allowed Admiral George Brydges Rodney, 1st Baron Rodney, to win the naval victory of Les Saintes and thus prolong this war because the English, hitherto discouraged by their incessant defeats at sea, found thanks to this single victory of Les Saintes the hope of preventing their 13 colonies from acquiring independence. Several thousand men died through the fault of Biron who for his part left this world 6 years after this battle. Yet a convoy of 20 English ships loaded with booty worth 60,000,000 pounds, because Rodney had just plundered the Dutch island of Saint-Eustache, was attacked and captured by the French admiral La Motte-Piquet off England. Historical anecdotes about the main English characters who now play a role. 1784; quoted by Balch.

Art of Stupidity on the part of Biron⁴⁷. In England, he would undoubtedly have been shot. The Goddess of Victory (Niké) is so fickle that it is unwise to play with her loyalty.

In any case, this un hoped victory gave new hopes to the English who clung to the most ephemeral of hopes. Thus, the desire to negotiate of the London Merchant Lobbies suffered, or at least it handicapped their willingness to show any sense of compromise. In a letter to John Adams, written on June 2nd, 1782, at Passy, Benjamin Franklin spoke of the influence of this victory on their desire to negotiate: "On Monday June 3rd [1782], Mr. Oswald came to see me. He told me that he had spoken to Lord Shelburne, Lord Rockingham and Mr. Fox. They still have the same desire to make peace *but* some of these gentlemen seemed a little too puffed up from the victory in the West Indies, and, observing his coldness, they asked him⁴⁸ if he did not regard this victory as a very good thing. "Yes," replied Oswald, "if you do not think it too high⁴⁹."

As soon as the victory was announced, the English negotiators were instructed by the London Merchant Lobbies to be more demanding. In his letter dated May 25th, 1782, in London, the English plenipotentiary David

⁴⁷ •Louis Antoine de Gontaut, duc de Lauzun, comte puis duc de Biron (1701-1788). Not to be confused with Armand-Louis de Gontaud-Biron, comte de Biron, marquis de Gontaud puis duc de Lauzun en 1766, who commanded a corps of French troops during the American War of Independence. He died on the guillotine despite his apparent adherence to revolutionary principles.

⁴⁸ •The said coldness is that of Mr. Oswald, Commissioner of His Britannic Majesty. Lansdowne was Home Secretary and became (in July of 1782) Prime Minister of Great Britain. Charles WatsonWentworth, 2nd Marquess of Rockingham, (1730–1782), Viscount Higham, Earl of Malton He was Prime Minister of Great Britain from 27 March 1782 to 1 July 1782 and was succeeded by Lansdowne. Charles James Fox (1749-1806) was Secretary of State at the time.

⁴⁹ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790), p. 224 et seq.; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to John Adams, written on June 2, 1782 in Passy, residence of Benjamin Franklin in France.

Hartley⁵⁰ wrote to Benjamin Franklin to lecture him into flexibility: "It seems to me that I see on all sides many ways to establish a Peace which will do honor to all parties and which will be founded on *lasting principles*. No *de-meaning or vexatious conditions that would shorten the peace and rekindle the war!* Perhaps I would not go too far in adding that if nations would *simply follow Reason* and correct some gothic prejudices which are of no use to them, this simple change would reward them handsomely for the sacrifice of their mutual pretensions, which, *in the eyes of Reason* are but the sad fruit of passion, jealousy and misplaced pride. Peace will never be lasting among men as long as the principles of Reason and equity are not adopted in transactions from Nation to Nation⁵¹".

Thus, the English, following the Parisian fashion of the time, evoked the moralizing platitudes of the *Goddess Reason*. But the certainty remained: the reason of the strongest would always remain the best, and the same ones who had, without a qualm, marauded from France the immense colony of New France at the time of the Treaty of Paris in 1763, thanks to the irresistible power of the Prussian *war machine*, wished 20 years later, by signing another Treaty of Paris, that the French would be *reasonable* in their demands, and that they would leave them unharmed by not taking anything from them, as at the end of the War of the Austrian Succession.

⁵⁰ •David Hartley Junior (1732–1813), English inventor and politician, was the son of the philosopher David Hartley Senior, known in England of the same name. He was appointed Minister Plenipotentiary to negotiate independence with the Thirteen Colonies. He signed the Treaty of Paris on behalf of England.

⁵¹ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790), p. 235 et seq. Letter from David Hartley to Benjamin Franklin, written May 25, 1782 in London.

One felt that the three lions⁵² of England were becoming cunning foxes because throughout this war there were successive attempts of corruption. Already, in July 1778, English spies had tried to buy the Great Benjamin Franklin. The latter had received from Brussels a mysterious letter signed by the pseudonym Charles de Weissenstein. Stick and carrot were on the menu of the day⁵³.

This corrupting letter read, in part, as follows: "As it is unreasonable that their services [the services of American patriots] to their country [England] should deprive them of the advantages which their talents would otherwise have won for them, the following persons shall have *offices or pensions for life*, at their choice: Franklin, Washington, Adams, Hancock, etc. Should His Majesty or his successors ever decide to create a *Class of Peers of America*, then these persons or their descendants shall be the first to be appointed... should they so desire."

Outraged by this attempt at bribery, Benjamin Franklin shot a sharp, forceful, and acerbic response by addressing to... the King of England: "Free to you, and free to your children to lull you into believing that you have the right to govern us in the same way that you carry the title of "*Kings of France*"; as long as you do not try to exercise this right, we will not be troubled by it⁵⁴... This proposal

⁵² • Actually *leopards*. In fact, the coat of arms of England bears the two leopards of Normandy and the leopard of Aquitaine, provinces that in the Middle Ages had been personal possessions of the Kings of England.

⁵³ • Bakchichs and menaces.

⁵⁴ • Benjamin Franklin who knows very well the curiosities of history, does not ignore that the Kings of England bear since the Hundred Years War the title of King of France which they never wanted to renounce. They will wear it until the Treaty of Amiens (March 25, 1802) and the fleurs-de-lys of France will then disappear from the arms of England, but the two leopards of Normandy and the leopard of Aquitaine will continue to decorate the arms of England. They will simply adorn the three leopards with the title of "lions", as the Americans will take the eagle as a symbol. Perhaps this mockery of the ridiculous title of King of France worn by the King of England committed George III to renounce definitively to wear it from the Peace of Amiens (1802). Who knows?

to deliver ourselves bound and gagged, ready for the gallows, without the right to complain, and without the slightest friend afterwards in the whole of mankind, you would have us embrace it on the faith of an Act of Parliament. God Almighty! An Act of your Parliament! This shows that you do not yet know us; and that you imagine that we do not know you. But it is certainly not by virtue of this hollow illusion that we will act. You offer us a hope, the hope of offices, pensions and peerages. All this, from your point of view, seems irresistible. This offer to corrupt, Sir, is with me, your credential, and convinces me that you are not a private individual in demand. All this bears the stamp of the British Royal Court. It is even the signature of your King. But think for a moment how these offers will be regarded in America...

"So we will have to pay the salaries in order to enrich ourselves with these positions. But you will give us pensions, which will probably also come from taxes raised in America, which none of us can accept without having earned them... As for the peerage [ennoblement]! Alas! According to our long observation, the vast servile majority of your Peers in England constantly vote in favor of measures proposed by the Prime Minister, however poor or mean or so wicked, that we are left with but little respect for that title. We regard it as a sort of feather-and-tar honour, or a mixture of both filth and silliness, to which each of us, who should accept it from your King, would be obliged to renounce it, to exchange it for the one conferred by the crowd, or wear it as an eternal infamy⁵⁵."

⁵⁵ •The feather and tar "game" was cruel. It consisted of stripping the English in the United States who were fighting against independence, coating their bodies with tar and then sticking chicken feathers to them as a sign of mockery, presumably to stigmatize their habit of beating German mercenaries in their place (chicken means coward). As a result of this bullying and humiliation (which sometimes ended in bloody crimes), thousands of English emigrated to Canada or returned to England. Abbott, John S. C.,

There is no shadow of a doubt that George III could not be flattered of this letter, and if in the end the Thirteen Colonies had agreed to submit and fall in line, Benjamin Franklin would have paid dearly for his *lèse-majesté* invectives addressed directly to the King, for if the famous *Habeas Corpus* prevented a King of England from imprisoning a subject without cause, the King could easily have him murdered.



Apart from the fact that the American plenipotentiaries were violating their Agreement with France by negotiating a secret agreement with England, the two allies (France and the United States) will also oppose each other on several major clauses. For the United States, seeing England on its knees will induce this country to try to strip it of its assets as rapaciously as England had done to France at the end of the Seven Years War. The main stumbling blocks were:

- 1- The sharing of the fisheries on the Grand Banks of Newfoundland.
- 2- The possession of Canada.
- 3- The borders of the USA.
- 4- Compensation for the Loyalists (Reparations).
- 5- Payment of American debts to England.



The sharing of the Newfoundland Fisheries

The six colonies of New England⁵⁶, i.e. the northern states, had *fishing* as their only industry; those in the south had *agriculture* (cotton...). The fisheries of the Gulf of St. Lawrence "were for New England a matter of life or

American Pioneers and Patriots: Benjamin Franklin: A picture of the struggles of our infant nation, one hundred Years ago, Dodd, Mead & Company, New York, 1876. p.339

⁵⁶ ● New England included Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Maine, Connecticut, Rhode Island, and Vermont. New York State was then Nieuw Nederland, and New Sweden was Pennsylvania and New Jersey.

death⁵⁷. Prior to 1763, the northern states had also the *fur trade*, but paradoxically, the arrival of Canada into the British Empire had caused the entire fur industry to shift to Montreal. All the North American *Fur Wars*⁵⁸ in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries between New France and New England, had had as ultimate result only to deprive the victors —stripped of their protective borders— of the fruit of their terrible fighting. The result can be compared on a larger scale to the *Economic Globalism* of this 21st century, which, through the disappearance of borders, is emptying the West of its industries, so much so that the only *Motherland* of businessmen, speculators, starvers of the poor, gold stockpilers and traffickers, is the tax havens in which their profits accumulate.

Until 1763, the real war profiteers were none other than the great fur-trading families of New England, such as the Schuyler⁵⁹ family of Albany, the present capital of New York State. The language of communication between the *coureurs-de-bois* and the Indians had always been the French language⁶⁰, the fur companies found in Canada the thousands of French-speaking people needed to travel all over North America to the Illinois, the Great Lakes, Michilimackinac and the Red River, to the distant Rocky Mountains. It was therefore that the northern states of the Thirteen-Colonies were anxious to pursue hostilities in order to wrest from England what they considered crucial for their economic development: the *Newfoundland fisheries*, and if possible, the whole of Canada, in order to repatriate

⁵⁷ ●Marcel Trudel, *La Révolution américaine (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 239.

⁵⁸ Wars which the English call *the French and Indian Wars*.

⁵⁹ ●To learn more about this great family, see the Battle of Laprairie, in Jean C Castex's work, *Combats franco-anglais de la Guerre de Trente Ans et de la Ligue d'Augsbourg*, P.-O., Vancouver, 2012. pp. 271 ff.

⁶⁰ ●A French dialect sprinkled with Indian words called chinouk or chinook. English words did not infiltrate until the second half of the nineteenth century.

and recover the *fur industry* that was still the fortune-source of the English Aristocracy and Bourgeoisie through the British Hudson's Bay Co.



Informed by his French Secret Services about the feverish activity of the Continental Congress, Vergennes had informed La Luzerne⁶¹, as early as September 25th, 1779, that no member of Congress had dared to opine openly in favor of the continuation of the war, but that a party had been formed under the leadership of Messrs. Lee and Adams to seek to prolong it indirectly, by raising difficulties on the terms of peace. This party "was mainly attached, said Vergennes, to two aims, namely: the fisheries, and the lands situated on the banks of the Mississippi. They claim that 1°the right to fish belongs to the South-Eastern States, and that England should recognize it and France guarantee it, 2 that the territories situated on the Eastside of the Mississippi belong to the United States, and that free navigation on this river could not be disputed." One feels in the determination of these words, the will to create difficulties. The freedom of navigation on the Mississippi implied of course Spain to which the inept Louis XV had made a gift of the immense Louisiana, which bordered the western bank of the Mississippi, except for New Orleans, where both banks were Spanish.

In this same secret letter, one senses the discomfort of the French Government towards the Americans to

⁶¹ •The Marquis Anne-César de La Luzerne was born in Paris in 1741 and died in England in 1791 where he had been appointed ambassador. Thus, he saved his head from the guillotine but died of grief at seeing, from afar, the monarchical France of his childhood disappear as the Soviet cosmonauts saw from the sky dissolve their Soviet Union, or as the Japanese pilots of Zeros no longer found their aircraft carriers, sunk by the Americans at the Battle of Midway. La Luzerne was the first France ambassador to the United States of America after serving as its official representative. A county in Pennsylvania is named after him. [Michaud, Louis-Gabriel, *Biographies universelles anciennes et modernes*, tome 25, Ch. Delagrave & Cie., Paris, 1842.]

formulate the hope that, even if France does not demand to recover Acadia or Canada, this country [France] could at least compensate itself for this war by acquiring some additional fishing rights on the *Grand Bank of Newfoundland*, at the expense of England. Even if the French feel that the insatiable Americans want ALL the benefits of the war *without exception*, the French, tormented by scruples of true Catholics, feared they would be taken for war profiteers if they demanded ANY compensation: "It is indisputable that the King [of France] was entitled to make the most legitimate claims on Canada as well as on Acadia, and that these two provinces, especially the second one would be very convenient for us. However, His Majesty was nonchalant enough to renounce both of them eventually, with the sole view of favoring the United States, and to avoid anything that might have given them the slightest umbrage⁶². Such disinterested conduct would seem to serve as an example and an incentive to the United States, and prevent them from jealousy of France, if the fate of arms were to give the French the small advantage of extending their fisheries at the expense of Great Britain⁶³."

Thus expressed the trembling Vergennes, caricature of the Pompadour-Louis XV couple in the pool of the gravediggers of the French nation.

Three short years earlier, in 1776, when the fate of Independence was not so clearly assured, one could sense that the Americans were ready to show France a more magnanimous generosity in order to lure them into direct participation in the war. Under the heading of the discussions of the Continental Congress of December 30th, 1776,

⁶² ●Ombrage = jealousy or fear

⁶³ ●Bancroft, George, annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. Volume 3 contains historical documents. Letter written at Versailles, de Vergennes à La Luzerne, 25 September 1779, vol. 3, p. 279 et seq.

we read (as already mentioned in these pages) that the Continental Congress wishes "that his Most Christian Majesty [i.e., the King of France] be invited, if possible, to assist the United States in the present war against Great Britain, by attacking the Electorate of Hanover or some other part of the territories of Great Britain, in Europe, in the East or West Indies. [Congress also wishes] that the [American] Commissioners in Paris be invested with the power to stipulate to the Court of France that all trade between the United States and the West Indies, be carried on vessels belonging to the subjects of his Most Christian Majesty, or those of the [United] States, both having full liberty to engage in such trade. [It is the wish of the Congress also] that the Commissioners be likewise advised to assure His Most Christian Majesty that in the event of his armed forces being employed—in conjunction with that of the United States—for the purpose of excluding his Britannick Majesty from any share in the cod fishery in America, by seizing the islands of Newfoundland and Cape Breton, and that vessels of war to be furnished to the United States when they should request them, in order to seize Nova Scotia, *the fisheries would benefit in equal shares and in community to the subjects of Her Most Christian Majesty and those of the said [United-]States, to the exclusion of all other nations*, whoever the people may be; and one-half of the island of Newfoundland shall be placed in the possession of His Most Christian Majesty and under her jurisdiction, provided that the Provinces of Nova Scotia and Cape Breton and the remaining part of Newfoundland shall be annexed to the territory and administration of the United States⁶⁴." The Portuguese could prepare to forget

⁶⁴ •Secret Journals and the Acts and Proceedings of Congress, from the First Meeting thereof to the Dissolution of the Confederation, by the Adoption of the Constitution of

their *bacalhau-à-brás* and get used to Brazilian ground beef. We can see that from 1776 to 1779, the gratitude of the Americans had already shrunk like a *skin of misery*. It will disappear completely and even turned into hostility as soon as the second American president was elected.

These Grand Banks fisheries in Newfoundland (gone in the 21st century for reasons of industrial overfishing), caused extremely high levels of tensions at the end of the American War of Independence. In a letter to Josiah Quincy, written in Passy on September 11th, 1783, the official representative of the United States in France tried to justify for their country the possession of the fisheries: "The fisheries which I am reproached for having abandoned, had not yet been put up for discussion before I was accused. I had not said a syllable about it, neither by word nor in writing. On the contrary, I have always been on the principle that having had an equal right with the English to the fisheries when we were united, and having contributed equally with our blood and money to conquer them over France, we were entitled to a fair share when our association broke up⁶⁵."

Newfoundland and the fisheries of the Grand Bank of Newfoundland had been conquered by Le Moyne d'Iberville's Canadian *groupe franc*⁶⁶ during the War of the League of Augsburg, but Louis XIV had simply offered them to England for bribal reasons at the end of the War of the Spanish Succession⁶⁷.

the United States, Printed & Published by Thomas B. Wait, Boston, 1820. Vol. II, pp. 39-39..

⁶⁵ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 326; letter from Benjamin Franklin to Josiah Quincy, Passy, September 11, 1783.

⁶⁶ •*Groupe franc* is an archaic expression for a *commando*, a *raider group*, or the modern expression for *Special Forces*. *Franc* means *libre*, *autonome*.

⁶⁷ •Newfoundland, Hudson's Bay [also conquered by Le Moyne d'Iberville's "commandos"], Acadia and the monopoly of the slave trade to the Spanish Empire (*Asiento*) were part of the gigantic "bribe" that Louis XIV had granted to England by secret treaty, so

In these endless [American Revolution] negotiations, the independence of the United States raised a new problem: *Finally, would the Americans continue to enjoy the fisheries of the Gulf?* The intervention of France raised another question: *Would France share the fisheries with the Americans and exclude the British*⁶⁸? Faced with the United States, the defeated England was at the mercy of France because the United States wanted France and the United States to share the fisheries *equally*, and consequently wished to exclude England entirely, what Great Britain had coldly imposed on other countries since the Treaty of Utrecht. *An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth!*

In 1763, under pressure from the London Merchant Lobbies, England "had eliminated [from the Grand Banks] an old competitor, Spain; and had reduced France's share to the congruent portion, so that England found herself exploiting the greatest part of the fisheries in concert with its American colonies. Moreover, even if France had retained some unimportant fishing rights, the few French fishermen were harassed by English warships without the inept Louis XV and without Louis XVI doing anything other than vain and sterile protests in London, in front of a cynical English Government which sneered as soon as the French had turned their backs, knowing that these French Aristocrats were paying lip service but in fact didn't care about the French fishermen. In the opposite situation, if the violations of the Peace Treaties had been inflicted by the French to the English, the powerful English London Merchant Lobbies would not have failed to put pressure on the English Government to send a squadron to Newfoundland to

that it would abandon its allies on the battlefield. Which England did, allowing France to establish a French Bourbon King on the throne of Spain, and no longer a Habsburg.

⁶⁸ ●Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 238.

restore Treaties jurisprudence. But in France the merchant lobbies were particularly underestimated by an aristocratic ruling class who pretended to despise money⁶⁹, so protests were only paid lip service. Consequently, the English had no problem drowning difficulties in a sea of procrastination.

Despite the distressing debonairness of the French towards the kneeling England, the English feared that France would impose scathing clauses on them, at least as retribution for the terrible Treaty of Paris of 1763, which had shown no leniency to France. But as usual, the French fishermen were very disappointed, and so were the Americans. The French Government, too concerned with pseudo fairness, made itself the violent defender of England in the face of furious Americans. Vergennes declared that the fisheries of the Gulf belonged exclusively to England and that the Americans, by making themselves independent, had "voluntarily stripped themselves of all the enjoyments that this [English] Nation had given them, just as they had stripped England of all the advantages that their union with them provided". The French Government, therefore, refused to recognize to the United States "any present right to the fisheries."

Barbé-Marbois, secretary of La Luzerne, proposed, in a ciphered letter to Vergennes *to exclude the Americans from the fisheries of the Gulf*, a ciphered letter which (of course!) ended up in the hands of the Commissioners representing the United States⁷⁰. Let us not try to understand the logic of French diplomats who mix politics, religion, liberty, equality, fraternity, and also a pinch of national

⁶⁹ •And who, moreover, could not engage in trade on pain of forfeiture.

⁷⁰ •By the care of the British secret services who wished to sow discord between France and the United States. In vain! Without success, because the Americans needed the French too much for it to take offense at this, before they have achieved full independence!

interest! John Adams, who was traveling with La Luzerne and his Secretary on board La SENSIBLE, wrote that the French diplomats who were of his opinion in these discussions during the voyage, changed their minds as soon as they touched the ground of the American capital: "The Secretary, M. Barbe-Marbois himself, was as frank and open as myself. He stated to me, in the clearest and most affirmative terms, on several occasions, that I had convinced him that *"we had a natural and legal right to the possession of the fisheries"*; that they were necessary and essential to our interests; and that France should support our claim to full and free enjoyment.

"After our return to America, when I heard that these gentlemen had recommended to Congress so much moderation in their instructions to their peace-negotiators, and had advised against insisting on the fisheries and western territory as an ultimatum, and when, afterwards, I found out (through our instructions and our private correspondents) that they advocated an explicit renunciation of any claim on the fisheries and on the western lands, I did not know how to reconcile these facts with our conversations⁷¹ which had taken place" during the voyage on La SENSIBLE.

Vergennes then spoke of the *coastal fisheries*. If the situation of the fishing is particular since all the European powers can draw all their supplies from it at will, "it is not the same for coastal fishing. It belongs by right to the owner of these same coasts, and he is the master to exclude from it who he judges about." And here, Vergennes returned to his obsession which consisted in keeping the Americans away not only from Canada, but also from

⁷¹ • Adams, Charles-Francis, *The Works of John Adams, Second President of the United States, with a Life of the Author*, by his grandson, Vol.1, Little, Brown and Company, Boston, 1856. Vol. I, pp. 671-672.

Nova Scotia and Newfoundland, in order to reserve all the advantages to England. Starting from the fact that *each one is master in his own house*, it follows "that fishing on the coasts of Newfoundland, Nova Scotia and its dependencies, Canada, etc., belonged exclusively to the English; that the Americans have absolutely no claim to it.

This led to a situation —at best paradoxical and at worst unreasonable and incomprehensible— in which France, which was fighting for the US, objected to the American appropriation of the English fisheries. Then John Adams, furious, declared that he would not sign the Peace if England did not at least allow the Americans to fish on the Grand Bank of Newfoundland. England finally gave in, but French protective behavior for English interests dealt a severe blow to the Franco-American friendship⁷². And when, some twenty years later, John Adams became the second president of the United States in 1797, the French wondered why this man was so ungrateful to the country that had offered them freedom. *In fact, the French, who had delivered the American Pantagrue baby so that England would not become too powerful, were also afraid of favoring the baby too much as it might become too big and too powerful for them.*



The possession of Canada

As discussed in depth in Chapter 5, the possession of Canada remained a hot topic throughout this war and these negotiations. Should France give up this immense territory populated by 150,000 French and 500 English merchants⁷³

⁷² ●Marcel Trudel, p. 240

⁷³ ●But this number increased rapidly with the arrival of the American Tories [called loyalists in Canada] driven from the United States by the Independentists. When they arrived, the Canadians gave them land between 200 and 1200 acres per family, and enough to survive, dress and cultivate the land for two full years. But the Canadians were poorly paid for their generosity by these refugees, full of hatred against the French,

or help the Americans to conquer it? For, without the help of the French Army and the Marine Royale, they were unable to get hold of it, as demonstrated by the various attempts.

The situation had changed since the Seven Years' War. Thirty years earlier, France had been defending the Belle Rivière (The Ohio) and Great Lakes valleys against the encroachments of George Washington and the Thirteen American colonies on the grounds that the Ohio was part of the Mississippi River watershed, which belonged to France.

In this year 1782, the latter country, England, still prohibited the Ohio "against the same encroachments, but this time it was no longer to defend but to prevent a new empire from being formed⁷⁴: "the American Empire which had just been born and which already frightened the hegemonic nations.

As mentioned above, France's policy was ambigoric because some of its secret objectives were totally antinomic to its avowed aims. In his 1777 memoir, the Comte de Vergennes explained why he wanted Canada to remain in British hands, contrary to his vague commitments to the Americans: "*Le Canada remaining in the power of England, this frontier alone would suffice to occupy the anxiety of the northern colonies, which can never be perfectly calm about the views of its neighbors.*" Thus, Vergennes seemed to forget that the population of the United States

whose army had just participated in the independence of the Thirteen Colonies. The history of these French people in Canada became a long road of suffering, and only the ever-threatening presence of American neighbors – with whom French Canadians risked making common cause – dissuaded England from treating them with the same cruelty as the Acadians, the Boers, the Scottish Highlanders, the Irish Catholics, the Beothuks of Newfoundland, the Tasmanians, and the Boers. the Métis of the West... to name but a few.

⁷⁴ • Marcel Trudel, p. 238.

doubled every 25 years⁷⁵, and that this country was going to become gigantic and powerful by cannibalizing Europe and the rest of the World of their population and brains, in the face of an England demographically much slower.

In his great naivety, Vergennes could not imagine that the "Americans could be ungrateful to France who has so gratuitously obliged them, and could pay for their good deeds with the blackest ingratitude." Besides, if Vergennes had forgotten that it was time to separate the Thirteen Colonies from their mother country, Benjamin Franklin did not fail to remind him. Thus, in this letter written on February 13th, 1781, he clearly stated that "if the English are allowed to recover this country...the possession of these vast and fertile regions... will give them such a broad base in their future greatness, it will so much increase their trade, the number of their seamen and soldiers, that they will become the terror of Europe, and they will exercise with impunity that insolence which is natural to their [English] nation and which will grow enormously with the enlargement⁷⁶" of their power.

From the beginning of this war, Spain, wiser and little aware of the vapid and amphigoric strategy of the French, wished to see France retake possession of Canada, in order to weaken England. Gérard had to show the text of the Franco-American Treaty to Don Juan de Mirailles⁷⁷ to make him understand that the clauses of the treaty did

⁷⁵ ●A century after these negotiations of 1780, the American population already exceeded 50,000,000 inhabitants, while the French population reached 39 million where it remained until 1939.

⁷⁶ ●Correspondence de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p.114 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Charles Gravier, comte de Vergennes (1717-1787) who was the Minister of Foreign Affairs of the King of France, Louis XVI. This letter was written at Passy, Benjamin Franklin's residence in France, on February 13th, 1781.

⁷⁷ ●Mirailles was the Chargé d'Affaires of the Kingdom of Spain in Philadelphia.

not allow the French⁷⁸ to seize the former New France for their own account. On October 17th, 1778, Vergennes wrote to the Comte de Montmorin, Ambassador of France in Madrid to let him know that, according to the same Franco-American Treaty, France had undertaken to expel England from the whole of the Thirteen Colonies. But he specified that, as far as the rest of North America was concerned, "there might be difficulties on our part in securing Canada... I should like very much that Florida should not be included, and I would like to see this area returned to the hands of the Spaniards⁷⁹."

The Spaniards ended up accepting this curious French strategy, as explained to Vergennes, on October 26, the Comte de Montmorin: "At the Escorial, October 26th, 1778. I can tell you... that M. le Comte de Florida Blanche, to whom I communicated the conditions to which the King consents to the peace, gave the most complete approval to the moderation which dictated them and sees no objection to them⁸⁰."

But Gouverneur Morris⁸¹ was suspicious of France, and he was not without lucidity. Under the pretext of

⁷⁸ •Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. Letter of Gérard to Vergennes, 25 of July 1778. pp. 185-187

⁷⁹ •Spanish Florida had been partially occupied by the English during Negros' Guerra del Asiento, which served as the opening for the War of the Austrian Succession, which the English lost to the Spanish and minimized by giving it the ridiculous name of War of the Ear to Jenkins. Bancroft, George, annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, Paris, 1876. 3 vol. The 3rd volume contains historical documents. Letter from Vergennes to Montmorin, 17-10- 1778. Vol. III, p. 307

⁸⁰ •Bancroft, George, annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. The 3rd volume contains historical documents. Letter from Vergennes to Montmorin, 17 Oct 1778. Vol. III, p. 308. The Count of White Florida is the Count of Florida Blanca, of course.

⁸¹ •Last or Surname: Morris; First name: Governor; it was the surname of his mother Sarah Gouverneur, daughter of a French Huguenot from New Holland. He had been a

talking about Spain, he explained to the French (with much diplomacy since he substituted Spain for France), precisely what was going to happen with this aberrant *policy of posting England on the head of the United States to watch them and threaten them in order to concentrate their pugnacity*: "Mr. Morris told me that they did not doubt the dispositions of France, but that it was feared that the prejudices of Spain would inspire that Power to the policy of leaving Canada in the hands of the English in the hope of fixing all the attention and directing all the forces of the United States on that side! He observed that this policy would be *wrong*, because as long as the English remained masters of Canada and the Lakes, one could not prevent *the English (of Canada) to become friends of the Americans* through mutual need and advantage [in other words, *by necessity*], and, at the same time, would become enemies of Spain [in other words *of France*], and would also find it easy to associate some members of the [US] Confederation, in their enterprises against this [Spanish] Crown, [*i.e.*, *French Crown*]. *This would necessarily result in two political parties in America, one pro-English and the other pro-French* (and Spanish), and it was not possible to ignore the advantages that the former would have over the latter⁸²."

member of the Continental Congress since January 28, 1778. He was immediately appointed to a Committee for the Army and was very surprised to find that American soldiers were left in this terrible state of abandonment. In 1778 he was a signatory to the Articles of Confederation. Governor Morris later replaced Jefferson as U.S. ambassador to Paris in the midst of the French Revolution. He was the last diplomat to refuse to flee the French capital in the midst of the reign of the Terror, at the risk of being guillotined.

⁸² •Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. Dépêche de Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassadeur de France) à M. de Vergennes (Ministre des Affaires Étrangères), à Philadelphie le 20 septembre 1778, à Philadelphie. pp. 343 et sequ.

And this Gouverneur Morris was a true prophet. All his predictions came true. After the War, there were indeed two political parties in the United States, and France had to suffer the harmful consequences of Vergennes' duplicity and of his nonsensical strategic theories, even though the Duc de Choiseul was the true inspirer, he who had led France into the unfathomable abysses of the Seven Years' War.



The English understood well the state of mind of the Americans, who, from the beginning of the independence agitation, tried to frighten the American colonists in order to make them give up any desire for independence by spreading rumors that England was planning to return Canada to France, and that, consequently, the eternal *French and Indian Wars* (in other words, the *Fur Wars*) were about to be rekindled in North America. This rumor reappeared with even greater persistence during the Preliminary Negotiations of Peace in 1782. It was one of the many rumors that the British used in their Psychological Warfare against the Americans colonists.

Those who were not in the secret of the gods —*in the secret of this unusual, not to say incoherent, diplomacy*— thought that France was going to jump at the chance to get back the valiant Canadian people who had fought so well for their motherland during those famous *North American Fur Wars*.

Among those who were totally unaware of France's diplomatic strategy, at the beginning of the American Revolution —to name only the most famous—, one is surprised to find Gilbert du Motier, Marquis de La Fayette. He wrote at that time to his wife: "Canada is oppressed by the

English all this immense country is in the possession of the enemies, they have a fleet, troops and forts... The idea of making all of New France free and deliver it from a heavy yoke, is too brilliant to stop there. Then my army would increase immensely and would be increased by Frenchmen⁸³." La Fayette will prepare himself on several occasions for the invasion of Canada, but, at the end, the Continental Congress itself would become cautious when they understood that the invasion of Canada by the French could trigger an irreversible impulse from the Canadian population to reconstitute New France. The Continental Congress did not seem to attach much importance to this when it recommended to La Fayette to "determine his conduct on the chances of success and not to expose American troops to any serious unintended accident⁸⁴."

How can we ask a general not to expose his soldiers to any danger if not to cover oneself in case of failure or to discourage a leader from acting? The only ones who were disappointed, were the two French-Canadian regiments of La Fayette's Corps who thought they were arriving home as liberators and delivering their beloved homeland, as well as the Canadians who secretly hoped that their mother would remember them after abandoning them to their stepmother.

To the end, the Americans hoped to receive Canada on a silver platter "or from the hands of France and Spain as a portion of the fruit of their success, or from England

⁸³ • La Fayette, Marie-Joseph, *Mémoires, correspondance et manuscrits du général La Fayette*, publié par sa famille, Société belge de Librairie, Hauman, Cattoir et Cie. Brussels [published simultaneously in Paris by Fournier senior, and in London by Saunders & Otley], 1837. vol.1, pp. 151-152. Letter from La Fayette to Madame de La Fayette, February 3rd, 1778

⁸⁴ • Instructions of February 24, 1778, taken from the *Secret Journals of the Acts and Proceedings of Congress*, Thomas B. Watt, Boston, 1821. 4 tomes, t.I, et *Journals of the Continental Congress*, t.10, p.193.

as the price of their reconciliation⁸⁵." Finally, the project was abandoned because of the danger that the Canadians would prefer to offer themselves to the French without the Americans being in a position to oppose it.



The boundaries of the United States

The *Québec Act* passed by the Parliament of Great Britain was a terrible threat to the Americans in that this punitive law confined the Thirteen Colonies to a frontier that was too small and imprisoned them in a *suffocating straitjacket* that was supposed to prevent them from becoming a powerful country full of the spirit of revenge and therefore a threat to England.

In Conrad Gérard's⁸⁶ very important letter to Vergennes, dated January 28th, 1779, the ambassador explained the arguments he had provided to the Continental Congress with reference to the desires of the Americans. We can see that in all matters —except that of independence itself— the French rather supported the English, for both countries felt equally threatened by the Fate of this young Goliath or Pantagruel whose brilliant and titanic future could be foreseen.

According to Gérard (and according to the Québec Act), the territorial rights of the Americans were limited by the surrounding colonies belonging to the English. Consequently, the Americans could not allow their settlers to migrate outside the borders of the Thirteen-Colonies to

⁸⁵ 2 • Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. pp. 865-866. Encrypted dispatch from Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassador of France) to M. de Vergennes (Minister of Foreign Affairs), written in Philadelphia on September 5, 1779.

⁸⁶ 3 • Ibidem. p. 491 Dispatch from Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassador of France) to M. de Vergennes (Minister of Foreign Affairs), in Philadelphia on January 28, 1779. Conrad A. Gérard was France Ambassador to the United States.

occupy territories belonging to England or Spain⁸⁷. Indeed, if the Americans accepted the principle of "particular and scattered settlements⁸⁸" they would be denying the principle of justice and fairness which directed the Revolution, and would show an unjust desire of conquest, even before they have taken on their own consistency.

[The ambassador of France added (ultimate hypocrisy) that] their confidence in me –in Gérard– imposed on me the necessity of not concealing from them any of my reflections, I declared to them that the King of France would never prolong the war by a single day, to procure for them the possessions they claimed⁸⁹." And, final warning to the Americans, "Congress must feel the danger to which to what danger this country would be exposed to in the future, especially if, pressed between the English of Canada (the hammer) and the Spaniards of Louisiana and Florida (the anvil), these two Powers were to unite their resentment⁹⁰" and their forces.

The warning thus formulated gave a glimpse of the fear of the European powers in the face of the American newcomer. None of the European powers, especially those who dominated world politics, particularly France (on land) and England (on sea), wanted a huge United States, a great power in the making⁹¹, to obtain a disproportionate

⁸⁷ ●West: Greater Louisiana (Spain). South: Florida (Partly Spanish). North: Canada (English).

⁸⁸ ●Établissement = colonisation, établir des colonies. As mentioned elsewhere, the subsequent annexation of the Spanish territories of the southwestern United States was done in this way, allowing the colonists to settle in Mexican territory, then helping them to obtain the independence from Mexico and then the annexation to the United States..

⁸⁹ ●Bancroft, George, annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, published in Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. pp. 283-284.

⁹⁰ ●Ibidem. p. 285.

⁹¹ ●Since its population had almost doubled in twenty years. It had grown from 1,300,000 in 1760 to 2,500,000 inhabitants 20 years later. It was 315 million souls in January 2013 and will well exceed one billion in 2100, but will likely become a Hispanic

territory that would make this Confederation a country that even the most powerful coalitions could not control. This is precisely the case with the United States, today, which has more aircraft carriers than the rest of the world combined. France, the first protector in time of the American Republic —no more than England for a different reason—, would not grant this nation all the territory it wished to obtain.

On September 25th, 1779, the Comte de Vergennes, *always short-sighted*, had confided to La Luzerne, that the United States would probably never succeed to be a powerful country, since, now independent, their "general confederation had great difficulty to maintain itself, and that it might well be replaced by several particular confederations"⁹². If this revolution actually happens, it will weaken the United States, which and will never have a real and respectable force except through their union. But it is up to them alone to make these reflections. We have no title or interest in presenting these dangers to them. I say "without interest", because we have no interest in seeing North America play the role of a super power, and to find this country in a position to give concern to its neighbors. The only object of our wishes with regard to the United States is that they become independent and peaceful⁹³."

Vergennes' words were based on *some minor disagreements* between the Thirteen Colonies, throughout the war. In addition to the rivalries between the Southern and Northern states which were exacerbated for political and economic reasons, the financial participation in the war frustrated the colonists who did not want to raise *taxes* or

power. Even if we can foresee at the beginning of the 21st that China will very soon take the first place in the world.

⁹² •This opinion came true 80 years later, during the Civil War.

⁹³ •Bancroft, George, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis.*, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. pp. 284 et seq.

establish *conscription* to force their fellow citizens to fight [especially the English colonists]. *Why should they have done so when the French did it for them?*

Some colonies continually threatened to secede because they disagreed with the others. The greatest crisis occurred eighty years later, during the Civil War or Secession War. Even today, there are more legal and structural differences between the 50 states than between France and Belgium. The paradox of the Anglo-Saxon countries is that they are all run by powerful Merchant Lobbies which want to do as they please and are afraid of facing a unitary, centralized and strong state⁹⁴, which is more difficult to corrupt and would not govern in the exclusive interest of the rich social class like in the plutocracies of the world. They therefore opt for many levels of government —what is called *decentralization*— more easily corruptible at the local level, and, at the same time, without real strength to impose on financiers anti-corruption rules. This is the profound reason for this decentralization to which all French people aspire in this 21st century, irrational imitators of the American Republic.

●

An official French document⁹⁵ shows to what extent the birth of this young giant could worry the Europeans: "The die is cast, England must look upon this new country as its equal, and even as its rival, independent⁹⁶." And all

⁹⁴ 1 ● The first rules favorable to capitalism are total freedom and a state as small as possible. Freedom is embodied in the absence of state control; Financiers must *self-regulate*, so that even in the worst turpitude they never violate any law and do not risk the slightest penalty.

⁹⁵ ● This Memoir written by Xavier de Vergennes and signed by King Louis XVI, at Versailles, on November 15, 1782, was probably written between May 30, 1778, and le June 15, 1782. It can be found in Bancroft between page 29 and page 42.

⁹⁶ ● Bancroft, George, annotated by Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. Vol. 3, pp. 29 ff..

the courts of Europe began to dream with apprehension of this giant of which England had just given birth with the forceps of the French midwife, with the idea that this country was going to become quickly formidable. It was like the guards of a Wildlife Reserve who are raising a lion cub or a tiger cub, knowing that very soon the animal would become dangerous. With this in mind, Vergennes moved quickly to the real subject of his *Memoire*, the size of the new country: "Right now, what seems to us more important is to regulate what power will be given to this country in the vast continent of North America and what its limits will be⁹⁷... It would be too dangerous to abandon to this country, at the moment of its birth, an undetermined extent of domination in this new country, *still very little populated but which can become really populated in a very short time*. We would make its leaders masters of producing soon the greatest revolutions not only in this part of the world, but even outside their continent⁹⁸."

Vergennes discerned two possibilities of hindrances that had to be imposed on the Americans in order to curb their future power: *curbing immigration from Europe* and *limiting the size* of the new republic. Therefore, as far as possible, "each [European] power must take precautions to prevent emigration. With the aim of preventing as much as possible this inconvenience, it is advisable not to let the American Colonies expand excessively so as not to give them the means of receiving too large a number of new subjects. To neglect this important objective would be a major fault of which we might promptly repent⁹⁹." And the diplomats dreamed of enclosing the new nation "within

⁹⁷ •Ibidem.

⁹⁸ •Ibid.

⁹⁹ •Bancroft, George, annoté par Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. Vol. 3, pp. 29 et suiv.

limits which delay at least for a long time the projects of its ambition." What Vergennes could not have known was that the immigration laws, manipulated by the dominant group in the United States [the English], later favored immigration from England and sought to curb other sources¹⁰⁰.

The French foreign Minister dreamed of these famous boundaries that would limit the power of the new country: "This is what we believe to be the way to achieve this. It is first of all to *surround* the possessions of the Insurgents by nations in a position to support each other against their initiatives, and whose power can oppose projects contrary to the tranquility of this part of the world. To fulfill this objective, it is necessary to leave the English nation in control to consolidate itself on the eastern and northern frontier of the Insurgent States, and they must even be encouraged to do so¹⁰¹". Needless to say, England was, for once, totally in favor of this French suggestion.

This strategy consisted of posting in ambush enemy states (Spain to the West and South; England to the North) at the door of the United States to threaten them and curb American power, like a real Sword of Damocles. This seems surprising, in this 21st century, especially considering the spectacle of England today, cuddled up to the gaiters of the US Marines and ready to bend to the whims of the Washington lobbies¹⁰². But in 1780, England was still,

¹⁰⁰ • *The Quota Laws of 1921 and 1924* limited the maximum number of entries allowed to 2% of the number of nationals in the United States from the country in question; for example, if 10,000 Ukrainians lived in the United States, Ukraine could only send 200 new immigrants.

¹⁰¹ • Bancroft, George, 1876. 3 volumes. Vol. 3, pp. 29 ff.

¹⁰² • In the twenty-first century, the Anglo-Saxon countries are being recruited into a gang of egretdock mentality: "First centered on the USSR during the Cold War, the NSA (American Secret Service) quickly extended its big ears in all directions. The listening stations of its Echelon interception network, the result of the alliance of intelligence services of five Anglo-Saxon countries (United States, Canada, United Kingdom, Australia, New Zealand) drain billions of pieces of information every day to the

by its navy a powerful state at sea, even if English recruiters still had insurmountable difficulties in recruiting infantrymen.

In opposition to the French and the English, Benjamin Franklin, who wished his country to annex Canada, evoked another form of migration: that of the American colonists (British *Tories* or *Royalists*) who settled in the marginal frontier areas and became causes of unrest between nations¹⁰³, which could also lead to tensions between the United States and England. The "settlers on the margins of the American provinces are generally the most unrestrained people¹⁰⁴, who, far from the sight and control of their respective governments, are more likely to commit aggressions against their neighbors, cause unending complaints and create grounds for further disputes between their States¹⁰⁵." The inventor of the lightning rod wanted, by this argument, to show how much more desirable it would be to conquer Canada than to abandon it in the

headquarters of Fort Meade, Maryland. As early as the mid-1990s, President Bill Clinton and his right-hand man Al Gore instructed the secret services, NSA and CIA, to move towards economic intelligence, in order to conquer all markets. Source: Le Figaro digital of 5/7/2013. The expression "huddled at the feet of gaiters" is not extravagant; Indeed, during the 1st Iraq War, the British army, too close to the American army, suffered 25 killed, all victims of American fire. They were the only ones killed in the English army.

¹⁰³ ● We remember that the Seven Years' War in America began in Ohio (which the French considered part of New France (since Ohio is located in the Mississippi River basin) where the Americans (and George Washington in particular) wanted to settle settlers. The states of the American Southwest were also conquered over Mexico by encouraging American settlers to settle surreptitiously in these Mexican areas (California, Texas, New Mexico, Arizona ...) and then by asking for independence and attachment to the United States..

¹⁰⁴ ● "The most disorderly of the people". I had the choice between anarchic and unbridled and I thought that "anarchic" had a political aftermath, while "disorderly" means rather "unbridled".

¹⁰⁵ ● Notes for Conversation, in *The Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States*, edited under Direction of Congress by Francis Wharton with Preliminary, Index, and Notes Historical and Legal, Government Printing Office, Department of State, Washington, 1889. Volume V, p. 541. Also in *Œuvres posthumes de Benjamin Franklin*, éditions Janet, 181. Vol. II, p. 187.

hands of England; for the presence of England at the gates of the United States brought an unnecessary risk. But this argument did not change the opinion of Vergennes who wished the opposite for this very reason.



Spain, which was less secretive in its diplomacy game and had mixed opinions about the independence of its colonial neighbor, was subjected to harsh criticism from the Americans during the Peace Negotiations. In the letter of August 12th, 1782, from Benjamin Franklin to Robert R. Livingston, Franklin wrote from Passy: "Nothing seems clearer than the design of this Royal Court [of Spain], to shut us up between the Allegheny Mountains. I hope that that Congress will insist on having the Mississippi as a border, and to enjoy at the same time the free navigation on the river, from which they would like to exclude us entirely... It would be like selling the door of my house to my neighbor¹⁰⁶. We can also think of the US Irish commandos (the Fenians); they attacked Canada to take revenge on the English.



Compensation for the Loyalists (reparations)

To schematize the social strata within the American population, one could say that within the American population, the colonists of English origin had succeeded, through nationalistic solidarity, parochialism and nepotism to maintain themselves in the upper stratum of the American society. Especially at the political and social level. It was therefore these rich English politicians, those who had much to lose by opposing the groundswell of support for independence, who retained the reins of power. By contrast, other Englishmen, with little or no wealth, often

¹⁰⁶ ●James Parton, *Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin*, Mason Brothers, New York, 1864. t. II, p. 389. "A neighbor might as well ask me to sell my street door."

(openly) opposed independence. Those who wished, too openly, to prevent the Americans from gaining independence, were treated with great violence by the pro-independence peoples, most often Irish, Scottish or German. The Irish, Scots (and even the few Acadians who had not yet migrated to Louisiana) had themselves suffered atrocities in their own country at the hands of the English, and God only knows how many inexpiable and perhaps even unjustified vengeance were inflicted in retribution.

The Germans who were aware that they were being used as *cannon fodder* for the benefit of the English and who were doubly taxed for reading their newspapers in the Germanic language, hated them for these reasons. In response, any Tory¹⁰⁷ was considered a traitor to America, mistreated¹⁰⁸, expelled, his property sold at public auction, as was the properties of the Japanese¹⁰⁹ during World War II, in Canada and in the United States. Some relatives of American soldiers (soldiers held as POW in the hell of the English pontoons in New York and Portsmouth and whom the gaolers made die of hunger or under torture), also took revenge on the English Tories.

Now, it happened that the English negotiators whose troops had burned, killed and destroyed everywhere they went, as they had done in Canada in 1759 and as they would do again in 1837 on the shores of the St. Lawrence River, had the arrogance to demand compensation for the English Tories, who had been expelled, often because they served as a *Fifth Column*¹¹⁰ for the English troops who

¹⁰⁷ ● That England will call loyalist.

¹⁰⁸ ● Coated with tar and covered with feathers, a sign of cowardice (the English beat German mercenaries in their place).

¹⁰⁹ ● Including Japanese born in Canada and the United States

¹¹⁰ ● *Fifth Column*: spies, informers, informants. The expression is of course anachronistic in this book since it dates from the Spanish Civil War, 1936-1939.

came to exercise their retaliation against Americans independentists.

In a letter to John Adams, Franklin wrote, "I observed that there was much talk in England of a reconciliation with the colonies; it was more than *peace*, since one could be obtained without the other. I added, that the cruel evils we had been subjected to by burning our cities, [...] would leave long traces of resentment; that the greatest advantages that English commerce could hope for from peace depended on a reconciliation; that peace, without reconciliation, was unlikely to be lasting; that *estranged friends were never better reconciled than when the aggressor offered to make reparation for the wrongs he had committed in a moment of passion*. And I insinuated that if England voluntarily offer us Canada as an indemnity, it might have a good effect¹¹¹." But not content with not offering an indemnity and not conceding Canada to us as reparations, England tried to *obtain reparations* from the United States in order to compensate the Loyalists for their personal losses. All to no avail!

Richard Oswald (1705-1784) was an English *slave trader*, son of a Anglican clergyman who probably failed in his moral and religious education since Richard became a slave trader. He represented and spoke on behalf of England and of the London English Merchant Lobbies at the Peace Negotiations in Paris. He was the signatory for England.

In May 1782, Oswald gave Benjamin Franklin a *Memorandum* demanding "*Reparations*" to compensate the oppressed Loyalists. The American Representative in Paris immediately wrote a reply on the 21st of the same

¹¹¹ •Laboulaye, Édouard, *Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin*, Vol. Two 1775-1790, Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Letter of Franklin to John Adams, in Passy, 20 April 1782, vol. 3, pp. 188-189.

month, in which it was stated that their property had been "confiscated by the particular laws of the specific States in which the offenders had resided, and not by the federal laws from the Continental Congress, which, indeed, has no power to pass similar laws or to repeal them. The Congress, therefore, can't give its Commissioners any power to deal with the restitution to be made to such persons. This is a definite matter for each State specifically. If the Government of London should find that these Loyalists had been unjustly robbed, *it would be up to England rather than America to compensate them.* But in my opinion, England has no obligation towards them, *since it was through their false reports and bad advice that England allowed itself to be drawn into this miserable war.* And if we have to bear the losses of the English loyalist, we can amply compensate for them by the depredations that the English have committed on the coastal regions of America¹¹²."

It was in this field "a language of deaf people who did not know *braille*". Throughout the peace negotiations, the American plenipotentiaries¹¹³ behaved as if they had received instructions to ignore any request for compensation from the British authorities. It was as unfair as if

¹¹² • *Memorandum given to Dr. Franklin by Mr. Oswald, English negotiator.* May 21, 1782, The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &c., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, Londres, 1817. Vol. II, Part III, pp. 209 et suiv. Regarding the section: "*since it was through their false reports and bad advice*", Franklin refers to the role of the "Fifth Column" played by the American Royalists (Tories) opposed to Independence. They would inform the English army of any act of independence and the English army would come to retaliate against the American population.

¹¹³ • Plenipotentiaries which were in name only since they had to have their decisions approved by the Continental Congress, which delayed the treaties by several months..

slaves had been asked to buy back their freedom when slavery was abolished. However, they were soon exasperated and even infuriated to learn that the French diplomats supported compensation for the expelled Royalists: "It is a usage generally received by all polite nations to stipulate in Peace Treaties, amnesties and restitution of confiscated property for those subjects who have separated from their homeland and have followed the cause of the power that was waging war against them¹¹⁴." *Here is that the French Government who had never been the least bit concerned about the inhuman expulsion of the French Acadians by the English, which had never raised its voice and demanded compensation for the thousands of Canadians whose farms had been looted and burned by the English Army in the approaching winter of 1759, no more than in 1837, it was the same French Government that was involved in a Byzantine casuistry to defend the despoiled English Tories.* There was enough to make American lose their Latin (even if they had never studied it at school).

According to the misty and amphigouric mind of Monsieur de Vergennes, the American plenipotentiaries opposed the Reparations with bogus arguments. And Vergennes went on to express a few ideas of phony angelism of which the French Left-wing is so fond of today, in order to adorn itself with the holy tunic of the apostles; traits probably formulated with the perfidious aim to incongruously feed the fires of resentment and discord between England and the United States, the main victims of this war: "These reasons are good, no doubt, but they do not save the dignity of England, which cannot entirely

¹¹⁴ •Doniol, Henri, *Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique*, correspondance diplomatique et documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Letter from Vergennes to La Luzerne, November 23, 1782, vol. 5, p. 178.

abandon people [its Loyalists] who are only in distress and suffering today because they have remained loyal to their King. It is therefore essential, if we want peace, to seek and to imagine expedients to smooth out this difficulty¹¹⁵." By "throwing this new resentment and these frustrations into the fire" like burning oil, Vergennes could only seek to "rekindle and maintain the flame" of hostility, for the United States was itself in the depths of an abysmal debt, which meant that the French had to pay their own annuities [interest].

Vergennes' diplomatic game was perhaps also to place himself as an *objective arbitrator* between the two enemies in the quick disappointing hope of recognition from both parties, Americans and English. But it is always dangerous to place oneself between quarrelsome people. One risk taking blows from both sides; what will happen after this war. On the one hand the Americans felt betrayed and their love for France melted like snow in the sun. On the English side, gratitude and thankfulness were totally unknown and perverse feelings for a lobbyist like Richard Oswald, especially towards France so envied. In any case, as for the restitution of the confiscated Torie's belongings, they had been sold at public auction¹¹⁶. And in order to avoid all the legal, byzantine and interminable Court disputes concerning the property rights of these confiscated goods—as would be the case at the end of the French Revolution and Napoleonic Empire when the French aristocrats returned to France¹¹⁷—the US negotiators advised the

¹¹⁵ • *ibidem*, p. 178.

¹¹⁶ • Thus, after Henry VIII had confiscated and sold for his own benefit the property of the Catholic clergy of England, he would have been unable to make amends with the pope and return to the Catholic religion, unless he gave up his throat, bought back all movable and immovable property and returned it to the religious congregations that had been despoiled. He therefore remained in Anglicanism..

¹¹⁷ • Thus, was voted by the Villèle Government the *Law of the Billion to the emigrants* (1825) which contributed to the unpopularity of Charles X.

Loyalists, former owners of these properties, against returning to the United States, warning them of "the little security which the so-called Loyalists would enjoy if they returned into the territory of the United States, for the resentment which the people retain of their cruelties¹¹⁸ was deeply engraved in their hearts¹¹⁹."

Benjamin Franklin, for his part, wrote about the compensation of the English Loyalists who had lived in the United States: "You have spoken to me of an indemnity for the Royalists whose property has been confiscated. I answered you that it was impossible for us to stipulate anything on this point, the confiscations having been made under the particular laws of the various States, which laws Congress can neither repeal nor suspend. I have told you honestly and cordially that if reconciliation is desired, these people should not be mentioned in our negotiations. They have done infinite harm to our properties, burning and destroying farms, villages and towns, just for the sake of doing harm. If compensation is demanded for the losses they have suffered, we will in our turn present an account of the ravages they have committed¹²⁰. This account, which will necessarily recall scenes of barbarism, will only serve to inflame the spirits instead of appeasing them, and will perpetuate hatreds which we all seek to extinguish. Nevertheless, knowing from you that your ministers

¹¹⁸ •The cruelty of the Loyalists, as many of them formed repressive units that fought alongside the regular army, burning the homes of the Patriotes, torturing and killing those who took up arms and their families.

¹¹⁹ •Doniol, Henri, *History of France's involvement in the establishment of the United States of America*, diplomatic correspondence and documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Letter from Vergennes to La Luzerne, 23 November 1782, vol. 5, p. 178. It was in a way the Rwandan Tutsi-Hutu syndrome.

¹²⁰ •Many settlers of the Thirteen Colonies of English origin tried to oppose Independence by enlisting in the English army to direct the reprisal operations against the separatists. It seems that the verb to lynch comes from the Virginian judge Charles Lynch who during the same American War of Independence condemned the royalist English colonists to penalties not covered by the law..

are anxious to obtain this indemnity, I have written to Congress on the subject. This is the answer that I have recently received from them¹²¹." Enclosure containing the response of the Continental Congress to the claim: "By the United States assembled in Congress, it is resolved that the Secretary of Foreign Affairs shall be directed to procure, as promptly as possible, the authentic state of the slaves and other property which have been taken or destroyed by the enemy in the course of the war, and that the Secretary of Foreign Affairs shall transmit the said statement to the Ministers Plenipotentiary charged with the Negotiations of Peace. In the meantime, the Secretary of Foreign Affairs informs the said ministers that several thousand slaves and an immense quantity of other property have been either taken or destroyed by the enemy. It is the opinion of Congress, from this, that the enormous loss which the citizens of the United States have suffered at the hands of the enemy, will be regarded by the States as an insurmountable barrier to any restitution or compensation in favor of the owners of property, confiscated by the said States. If, in each of our States, the accounts of the war are drawn up, the abominations committed by the Royalists under the command of English generals, and by the English troops themselves, they will make such a scandal that it will make the English name odious in America, until the very last generations. In this collection of authentic crimes, we find the burning of the beautiful town of Charlestown, near Boston; of Falmouth, at the beginning of winter, which deprived of any shelter the sick, the aged, the women, and

¹²¹ •Such was the letter of November 26, 1782, from Benjamin Franklin to Richard Oswald, written at Passy (France), November 26, 1782, pp. 289-291. Notes for Conversation, in *The Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States*, Edited under Direction of Congress by Francis Wharton with Preliminary, Index, and Notes Historical and Legal, Government Printing Office, Department of State, Washington, 1889

the children; the burning of Norfolk in the middle of winter, of New London, Fairfield, Esopus, etc., not to mention the devastation, the ravaging of nearly 150 miles of cultivated country, all the farms and barns burned, and hundreds of farmers with their wives and children massacred and scalped."

If the present Ministers of Great Britain "will deign to think of it for a moment, they will doubtless be impartial enough to admit that their Nation had no right to impose an unjust war upon us (they have always admitted that this one was not founded in Law); that England had no right to commit a thousand useless cruelties, without example among civilized peoples; and that nevertheless we had to suffer these evils without asking for satisfaction; whereas, if an Englishman or one of their acolytes had suffered any loss, he should obtain restitution or indemnity! The English troops will never be able to justify their barbarity: they had not been provoked. The Loyalists can justify themselves by saying that they were exasperated by the loss of their property, and that they wanted to take revenge. This vengeance, they have satisfied. *Is it fair that they should obtain both their revenge and their property*¹²²? Some of them may have deserved well of England. *It is for the English to reward those who, out of attachment, have embraced the English cause.*"

To the insoluble problem of repaying these tens of thousands of Royalists, robbed by their own fault, "the Commissioners of the United States, who are here, do not seem very eager to work on it." And if the French were playing at *angelism* to create dissension between the enemy brothers, the Americans—who could not afford to unmask the patelinage¹²³ of the French for fear of angering

¹²² •Segment highlighted in the original text.

¹²³ •Patelinage = wheedling

them— were going, then, to play the warlocks, the relentless warriors eager to pursue an eternal war in order to induce the French to precipitate peace, they who, at its full price, were paying for this war with their guts and blood: "The continuation of the war does not frighten them!" added Vergennes, very depressed by the apparent obstinacy of the American negotiators. I confess that it frightens me a lot especially when I think that the United States, without means of their own and without energy to obtain them by themselves, are constantly turning to us to obtain them¹²⁴. *But this was only an American ruse to incite Vergennes to moderation in the field of indemnities.*



The difficulties thus came essentially from the obstinacy of the United States who did not want to resolve to pay indemnities, and rightly so since the English troops had burned thousands of houses, and even some rare minor industries (hemp mills¹²⁵ and hemp rope factories for the for the navy...) which competed with others rope factories located in England.

The pretext for this categorical refusal of indemnities was therefore the fact that the confiscations had been established under the specific laws of each state, forcing the U.S. federal Government to submit to these laws without being empowered to change them. England, always resourceful to invent a way out by forging a solution that this country would not have to pay the prohibitive cost, asked the Canadian colonial Government to vote a budget out of the taxes levied in the Province of Quebec, in order to accommodate and equip these thousands of refugees. These

¹²⁴ •Doniol, Henri, 1888. Letter from Vergennes to La Luzerne, November 23, 1782, vol. 5, p. 178.

¹²⁵ •The Canebière Avenue (or chènevière) so popular in Marseille was once a hemp field. With the stem the rope was woven, while the leaf was smoked in marijuana.

Tories were coming with an empty purse, certainly, but with a heart full of hatred against those "*Frenchmen*" without whom they would not have been thrown on the roads of exile, uprooted and destitute.

As almost all of the 50,000 Loyalists went to settle in Canada, which France had kindly left them, they made the French-Canadians pay for all of these compensations. The Province of Quebec was even cut in two to create the anglophone Province of Ontario, because all these *nice* immigrants did not want to be democratically dependent on the French Canadians who were helping them. Each Loyalist received land, farming tools, seeding tools, seeds, draft animals and enough grain to last two good years. In Ireland as in Quebec, the English immigrants had experience with this kind of frustrating exchange. The Catholic population also had to pay to provide a second chance for these Anglo-Protestant exiles who joined the hardcore Orangemen¹²⁶ to give the Catholics a ruthless life. In Acadia, the refugees came to occupy the good lands cleared with great effort by the French a century earlier and from which the Acadians had been expelled without compensation by the English fifty years earlier... without the hypocritical angelism of the French diplomats being scandalized in the least!

The term "Loyalist" has a mean sound, a bad ring in the minds of Quebecers and Frenchmen alike.. For the latter, the Loyalists were the French who, during the Second World War, refused to rally to General de Gaulle in order to remain loyal to Marshal Pétain. For the Quebecers, it was a multitude of English refugees who rushed to Canada as a haven of salvation, with their families and slaves, after being mistreated and robbed by the American

¹²⁶ • "Hardcore Orangement", i.e. intolerant and cruel.

Independents. But it turned out that these refugees, richly spoiled by the French-Canadians, were quick to bite the hand that had fed them by their social, religious and linguistic intolerance. In fact, they were almost as ungrateful as those who went to colonize Ireland to make it an Anglo-Protestant island, totally excluding the Catholic Celts¹²⁷.

Between 15 and 19% of the American colonists¹²⁸ (i.e. between 30 and 38% of the English colonists who represented approximately 50% of the total US population, if we exclude the Indians and the Blacks) can be classified as Loyalists. But most of the English settlers in the Thirteen Colonies did not dare to publicly admit their attachment to England in order to avoid expropriation and humiliation by the settlers of Irish, Scottish and German origin. Some English settlers even made anti-English zeal to clear their names and to absolve themselves of all suspicion.

Long after all the guns had fallen silent and the cries of the orphans' tears had dried on their cheeks, England continued to claim compensation for its Loyalists who had already made a life for themselves elsewhere with the help of French-Canadian money.

In his letter to the Englishman Alexander Small, who reproached him for no longer remembering the sufferings of the Loyalists, Franklin replied, among other things on September 28th, 1787, in Philadelphia where he was to die 30 months later: "You think it very impolitic of us to have expelled the refugees; I do not believe that we miss them, nor that anyone misses them... They should be welcomed

¹²⁷ • In Ireland, colonization had begun in Northern Ireland (Ulster) with poor Protestants sent from Scotland and England. The objective was to expel the Catholics.

¹²⁸ • 15 and 19% of American settlers represent 30 and 38% of settlers of English origin who constituted approximately 50% of the global colonial population, not counting Indians and Blacks.

with more pleasure in a people whose quarrel they have espoused, than among people who cannot have forgotten so soon the destruction of their dwellings, the murder of their dearest friends¹²⁹."

Regarding the restitution of confiscated goods, he added that "it is an operation that none of our politicians have yet ventured to propose... Perhaps they are waiting for the English Government to return the confiscated property to the Scots in Scotland¹³⁰, to the Irish those who were in Ireland¹³¹, and to the Welsh those who were in England¹³² " The Scotsman did not insist.



Throughout these Peace Negotiations, France's overly protective of English interests seemed so strange that Franklin himself wrote to one of his friends in England, the Anglican Bishop Jonathan Shipley¹³³: "It is constantly said that there is no reciprocity [i.e., that England, having lost the war, gets no benefit] in our treaty. So, we

¹²⁹ •A direct allusion to the cruelties inflicted by the British army on the American populations in retaliation. Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 423; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Englishman Alexander Small, written in Philadelphia on February 19, 1787. Alexander Small (1710-1794) was a Scottish surgeon.

¹³⁰ •In reference to the *Highlands Clearances* or *ethnic cleansing of Catholic Upper Scotland* which began in 1760 under the pretext of transforming agriculture into breeding Cheviot sheep. These cruelties reached their climax as soon as the French people (traditional allies of the Scottish people) were monopolized by the French Revolution. All the property of the Scots in Upper Scotland had been despoiled and the houses and barns burned.

¹³¹ •Irish Catholics were not allowed to own an inch of land in their country. They previously had to convert to one of the Protestant sects, provided that it was itself tolerated by the English Monarchy.

¹³² • Welsh Catholics were victims of the *Test Act*, which prohibited them from owning real estate and trading. Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 443; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to the Englishman Alexander Small, Philadelphia, September 28, 1787.

¹³³ •This Anglican bishop Jonathan Shipley was born in 1714 and died in 1788. In 1769 he was successively appointed Bishop of Llandaff (South Wales) and then of St Asaph in North Wales. Benjamin Franklin called this clergyman "America's constant friend, the good bishop of Asaph".

count for nothing our silence on the atrocities committed by the English troops, and our renunciation of any compensation for the burning and devastation of our cities and countryside... Can the English be so selfish as to imagine that they have the right to plunder and kill as they please, and then make peace on equal terms, without repairing the harm they have done?... I still think that it would be in England's interest to voluntarily repair these damages as much as it is in its power¹³⁴." But frustrated, *the English people, accustomed to the complacency of France —some would say to the softness¹³⁵— and thinking to be able to obtain more and more from France's benevolence, never had the slightest word of gratitude for the leniency of his enemy towards them¹³⁶.*

One will not be surprised to see that this famous "fatherly" clemency of France towards England—even if no English historian (except for Benjamin Franklin who was legally an Englishman) has ever alluded to it throughout history, presumably out of national pride— was encouraged by the English Secret Services who saw it as a way for England to get away with any murder. Franklin, who was the architect of American liberty alludes too to this in a letter to the American Secretary of Foreign Affairs, Robert Livingston: "The letter of Mr. Marbois¹³⁷, which was

¹³⁴ ●Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 309; letter from Benjamin Franklin to Jonathan Shipley, Passy, March 17, 1783.

¹³⁵ Softness, indulgence, complacency, debonairness... France's behavior towards England seemed similar to the behavior of a father who wants to protect his rascal son.

¹³⁶ ●It can even be said that the United States of 1783 was as disappointed with its French ally who wanted to spare England as was Spain, another ally of France, at the end of the War of the Austrian Succession, when the English, seeing that they were going to be defeated, secretly approached France in order to try to get along and not lose too much. And this strategy also worked to England's advantage, while at the end of the Seven Years' War, France, defeated on the continent by Prussia, was mercilessly carved up by England.

¹³⁷ ●This is the Marquis François Barbé-Marbois (1745-1837) who was then Consul General of France in Philadelphia.

transmitted to us *through the suspicious channel of the English negotiators*,... in which we [the French] were recommended to moderation, did not have enough weight in my mind to persuade me that the French Royal Court would have wanted to reduce the advantages that we [Americans] could obtain from our enemies¹³⁸."

And there Franklin tries to explain the deep reasons for the French: "All these speeches can be explained quite well by the very natural fear that the French have that we would rely too much on them and their subsidies to continue the war... The judgment that you make on the conduct of France seems to me perfectly objective. France's moderation is more glorious than their victory. The character of this French Royal Court and of this Nation has changed a lot since these last years. The ideas of territory conquests are out of fashion. The ideas of trade are more enlightened and more elevated than formerly... *The wise people of this country estimate that France is big enough, that all its ambition must be Justice and magnanimity towards other nations, fidelity and utility towards its allies*¹³⁹". This letter, with a strong flavor of incensing and coaxing, had every chance of being read by the French Secret Service. Therefore, one may wonder to what extent

¹³⁸ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 315; letter from Benjamin Franklin to Robert R. Livingston, Passy, July 22, 1783. "We relying too much on the ability of France to continue the war in our favor, and supply us constantly with money, might insist on more advantages than the English would be willing to grant, and thereby lose the opportunity of making peace, so necessary to all our friends." The Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, p. 413. Segments in italics were not highlighted in the original text.

¹³⁹ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, translated and annotated by Laboulaye of the Institut de France and the Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et C^{ie}, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p.315; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Robert R. Livingston, Passy, July 22, 1783. "We rely too much on the ability of France to continue the war in our favor, and to supply us constantly with money, we might insist on more advantages than the English would be willing to grant, and thus lose the opportunity of making peace, so necessary to all our friends." The site Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, p. 413.

these flatteries were not tricks, simple manipulations intended to incite the French to devote themselves always more, without asking for the least advantage in kind, because, as the Canadian Euclide Roy rightly said: "*Glorifying dedication is to create heroes*"¹⁴⁰ to be exploited even more.



The American debt.

While England was being dragged by its Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations (in other words, by its *Merchant Lobbies*) into the headlong rush of a cruel war that took no account of the German, Irish and Scottish blood or the country's indebtedness, it is likely that one of the reasons of this moderation of the French towards the English was basically a simple desire to stop the abysmal expenditure in which the French Monarchy sank without hope of help of whoever it was. For every single month the American Republic was in an immense need of money and France, already in ruin, was heavily solicited. Where did all these millions of *French livres* go? Certainly not to feed and equip the poor American soldiers (mostly of Celtic or Germanic origin) who seemed to come directly from a "court of miracles" [a shantytown], while the rich politicians (usually of English origin) were quibbling and palavering in the Continental Congress, or jealously arguing

¹⁴⁰ •Quoted by Antoine Bissonnette, in *Sixty Years of Freedom 1837-1897, Souvenirs patriotiques par nos meilleurs écrivains, Déom & Frères, Montréal, 1897*. This famous phrase was uttered on November 14, 1858, in the Côte-des-Neiges cemetery in Montreal, by Canadian Euclide Roy, President of the Institut canadien, on the occasion of the inauguration of a stele to the Canadian Patriotes who died during the insurrection of 1837. More generally, so many people misestimate themselves and are willing to do anything to savor the satisfaction of believing they are admired, that showing them admiration pushes them to sacrifice their lives out of devotion, for the sole benefit of selfishness. In the case of the French Monarchy, in the midst of an economic crisis and on the verge of the French Revolution, this explanation would be adequate.

at the American Legation in Paris-Passy, with Franklin as their target¹⁴¹.

Sometimes the French became weary. On March 10, 1779, the French Ambassador, Conrad Gérard wrote to the Comte de Vergennes, Minister of Foreign Affairs: "You may find, Monseigneur, that I am too rigorous towards the Americans on all their requests and projects; but the King himself would have been overwhelmed with a multitude of requests that were equally inappropriate or impracticable¹⁴²." Franklin himself confessed to his multiple requests and showed to what extent some Americans were not at all grateful to France's efforts and sacrifices this Nation made on their behalf: "I have not ceased for a moment to solicit, either directly, or through the intermediary of the Marquis de Lafayette, who has been actively and warmly involved in this matter... We were told that we would be helped, but not up to the sum requested. They spoke of 6,000,000, but not as a fixed sum... I know his good will. He will do for us the best he can... There are limits to everything. The resources of France are limited as are those of all other nations.

"There are people in America who have established the principle that France has enough money for all its needs, and besides for all ours, and that if this Nation does not supply us with all that we require, it is for lack of goodwill on their part. The first assumption is false, I am sure;

¹⁴¹ • Watching these soldiers whose blood we want without a purse loose, we cannot help but compare them to American veterans of Vietnam and Iraq, who lost two-third of their pay as soon as they were hospitalized because the huge "battlefield" bonus disappeared as soon as the soldier was wounded or absent. Nor can we forget the tens of thousands of desperate tramps who could not find their jobs when they returned from these wars and who had no right to unemployment insurance..

¹⁴² • Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. p. 178 Dispatch from Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassador of France) to M. de Vergennes (Minister of Foreign Affairs), Versailles on March 10, 1779. p. 571.

as for the second, I can say that I would be very happy to obtain more and that I shall be very pleased if my successor is more successful¹⁴³." Why then did the Continental Congress not establish new taxes to cover the costs of war instead of relying on the French taxpayers? Because the said Continental Congress was populated by rich planters, mainly of English origin, and they did not want to pay for the cost of the war, especially for an independence they did not even approve deep in their hearts, but which they reluctantly accepted in order not to be dispossessed of their property and expelled from the country.



The United States signed separately behind the backs of the French

In Paris and Versailles, the Peace Negotiations were taking place between France and England on one hand, and the United States and England on the other. The cunning English were trying to slow down the negotiations in the hope that a military victory would give them more leverage. With this objective, the so-called English plenipotentiary, the famous slave trader Richard Oswald, considered that he had to ask for the opinion of the London Government for every single decision. Thus, the London Merchant Lobbies (of which Oswald was a member) had the opportunity to examine each proposal and thus drag their feet. Franklin often complained about the slowness demanded by the British, as in this letter: "If, at every proposal, your *plenipotentiary*", who seems to have no

¹⁴³ ●Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Volume II, Letter from Franklin to Livingston, Passy, 5 Dec. 1782. p. 294

power, is obliged to send a letter and wait for an answer, we shall not soon see the happy conclusion¹⁴⁴."

Faced with the loss of North American trade, the English Merchant Lobbies tried to hang on to the slightest flicker of hope. They delayed negotiations in order to wait for a miracle, such as a naval or land victory. They obtained it in the case of the *Battle of the Saintes*, which they tried to consider as a strategic victory, but that the French could consider a tactical victory in their favor since the convoy—for which this battle was fought—passed without trouble; but it brought the English only moral relief or hopes and not victory in America. The war was truly lost for them; and if the victorious French, nonchalant in the commercial and colonial matters, abandoned Canada to them and did not prohibit them from US trade, the English, on the other hand, still held out the treacherous hope of signing a *separate peace* with the Americans in order to turn *together* against the French and try to take revenge on them for all their successive humiliations. Thus, when Lord Grenville arrived in Paris *with all the powers of plenipotentiary*, he claimed to be appointed to deal with all of them (French and American), but his credentials revealed that he was accredited only to negotiate with the French. "It was only yesterday¹⁴⁵ that I had the opportunity to discuss this point with Mr. Grenville. Having expressed to him my surprise that, after all he had told me, his credentials did not mention our United States; he could not give me any satisfactory explanation. He told me that the cause of the omission was probably that they had copied old credentials [*the ruse was rather crude!*] from the time of the last Peace Treaty, but that he was sure that he was intended to deal with us, his instructions *clearly* proving it. I told

¹⁴⁴ •Ibidem. Letter to the Englishman David Hartley, July 10, 1782. p. 281.

¹⁴⁵ •So, June 1st, 1782.

him that a special power seemed necessary; that without it, we could not deal with him¹⁴⁶."

All means being acceptable for the London Merchant Lobbies; *the English diplomats even used the friends Franklin had in England to influence him to betray the French by negotiating with them outside the terms of the Franco-American Alliance.* On January 2nd, 1782, Squire Hartley wrote to Franklin: "My dear friend, ... At my last interview with Mr. Alexander, he told me that the last events¹⁴⁷ would not change the prospect of peace; that America had no other desire than to end the war ... and that *no formal recognition of [American] independence was required.* I thought that this was a very honest opening, but the point he then made to me *seemed more effective in achieving peace*, in a word that *America was willing to enter into a separate peace treaty with Great Britain, and that her [French] allies were willing to consent.* I believe that *this was the unhappy union of a common cause between France and America, which has thwarted, during the last three years the desire of the people of England for peace. I am really convinced (in view of the deep jealousy that exists between England and France), that this country [England] would like to fight for a piece of straw to the last man [to the last German mercenary] and to the last schilling rather than accept a peace dictated by France.* Therefore, I consider this to be the greatest opening... I have

¹⁴⁶ • Letter from Franklin to John Adams, Passy, June 2, 1782. The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &.&., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, London, 1817. Vol. II, Part III, pp. 204 et seq..

¹⁴⁷ • The main causes were the English defeats at *Chesapeake Bay and at Yorktown.* *Holland abandoned its neutrality favorable to England and join the French.*

often told you that this would be an act of justice due to the Americans from their allies, not to draw them into a war of resentment and jealousy among Europeans beyond its original objectives and commitments. Moreover, I believe that *the separation of causes* in these negotiations promised by far *the shortest path to a general peace...* I grant you that *it would be a bitter test of humility to be forced into a formal recognition of independence under the haughty leadership of France*, and I believe that every part of the nation would come to every extremity before submitting to it. But if this thorny point can be passed under silence (*sub silentio*) and if the proposed treaty with America can be conducted *outside the control of France*, *let us give the cause of Peace a good chance*¹⁴⁸." Thus, for the negotiators, Diplomacy seemed to be located outside the paths of honor and respect for Treaties.

But if ever there was on earth a man who could spot Machiavellian underhandedness, it was the chief negotiator, Benjamin Franklin. He knew very well his former countrymen fellow citizens, having lived for many years at the Court in London. Franklin was not unaware that in the event of American collaboration, the English would not fail to make this reason known to the French in order to make the Americans lose all credibility. He replied to David Hartley, almost by return of mail to David Hartley, the following scathing words: "You tell me that Mr.

¹⁴⁸ •Segments in italics were not highlighted in the original text. The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &c., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, London, 1817. Vol. II, pp. 60-61; letter from David Hartley (Squire) to Dr. Franklin, London, January 2, 1782. Segments in italics were not highlighted in the original text.

Alexander has informed you that America is willing to make a separate treaty with Great Britain. I am convinced that your strong desire for peace has misled you; and that you have misunderstood Mr. Alexander. It is not possible that he should have advanced a thing so entirely without foundation. I remember that on other occasions (as you yourself say) *you have put forward this proposition, and that it always caused me more disgust than my friendship for you would allow me to show.* But since this time you have gone so far as to communicate such a proposal to Lord North, *as if it came from us*, it is necessary that I should explain myself frankly to you, and tell you in no uncertain terms that I have never had any such thought. *I believe that there is not a man in America, except a few English Tories, who would not leap at the thought of abandoning a noble and generous friend for the sake of making a truce with an unjust and cruel enemy. I have read again your "Bill of Conciliation," and the handwritten proposals accompanying it. I see with sorrow that one cannot express the slightest wish for peace, nor show the simplest feeling of humanity without there being people who immediately interpret it as a willingness to accept the most humiliating conditions rather than continue the war*¹⁴⁹." The response was hurtful and brutal.



At this point, the American negotiator, Benjamin Franklin, lifted the camouflage net of the trap that his dear English friend was unashamedly setting for him, to show him that he was not duped: "How dare you propose *a ten-year truce*, during which we will commit ourselves not to assist France while you continue to wage war against her.

¹⁴⁹ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp. 148 ff. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to David Hartley; written at Passy, Benjamin Franklin's residence in France, January 15, 1782.

A truce in which nothing will be said that could weaken the pretensions that you have to dominate us¹⁵⁰: claims that you may, therefore, re-post at the expiration of the truce or *at your pleasure*, as soon as, by our treason towards our best friend, *we would have covered ourselves with infamy to such an extent that no other Nation will want to help us, no matter how cruelly you may wish to treat us!* Believe me, my dear friend, America has too much sense, and values the esteem of the world too much, to lose everything by such perfidy. Congress will never charge its Commissioners to obtain peace on such ignominious terms; and though there are very few cases in which I would risk disobeying it, yet, if it were possible for me to be given a similar order, I would absolutely refuse to carry it out. I would immediately resign my mandate and exile myself forever from such an infamous country¹⁵¹." And the American negotiator concluded with these words which showed that the Machiavellianism of the English negotiators was based on the assumption that the American negotiators were foolish enough to fall into this crude trap: "You tell me that *no stipulation in favor of our independence should be inserted in the treaty* [between the United States and England] because "you firmly believe that the jealousy which exists between England and France is so deep that England would fight... In this state of affairs there is no peace treaty which is possible. In fact, we started the war to be independent of your Government, which we found tyrannical; and that *long before* France had anything to do with our affairs. The article of our treaty reads as follows:

¹⁵⁰ 2 •During these ten years, "no formal recognition of independence was required.."

¹⁵¹ 3 •In fact, France had agreed that the United States and England should negotiate peace between them, but, of course, not without its knowledge. Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp. 148 ff. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to David Hartley; written at Passy, Benjamin Franklin's residence in France, January 15, 1782.

"The two parties take the engagement that neither of them will conclude a truce or peace with Great Britain without the formal and prior consent of the other party. They mutually accept not to lay down their arms until the independence of the United States shall have been formally or tacitly secured by the treaty or treaties which shall terminate the war'; this article was inserted at our request because it is in our favor¹⁵²."

The affair seemed closed. And yet the English diplomats, consumed with jealousy and indefatigable in the art of clinging to the flimsiest twigs of hope and Machiavellianism, continued to try desperately to fracture and destroy the Franco-American entente. Thus, on April 20th, 1782, three months after Franklin's scathing reply, he received a letter from Lord Shelburne¹⁵³, Home Secretary of England, who was about to become, on July 4th, 1782, Prime Minister of Great Britain, replacing Lord Rockingham. His letter showed that some imprudent words uttered by the French Minister of Foreign Affairs¹⁵⁴ had not fallen on deaf ears, and that the English diplomats were going to make an effective use of them. The missive said, among other things: "The frankness with which the Comte de Vergennes¹⁵⁵ expresses the sentiments and wishes of His Most

¹⁵² ●Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); pp. 148 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to David Hartley; written at Passy, Benjamin Franklin's residence in France, January 15, 1782.

¹⁵³ ●William Petty FitzMaurice (1737-1805), Anglo-Protestant statesman of Ireland, known as Lord (Lord) or Earl Shelburne later he became Marquess of Lansdowne, as his wife Sophie Carteret was the daughter of John Carteret, 2nd Earl Granville by inheritance of the Granville family. Lansdowne was Home Secretary and became (in July of 1782) Prime Minister of Great Britain.

¹⁵⁴ ●He had hoped for the return of peace as soon as possible; A banal phrase but one that can be used wisely by English diplomats who are always on the lookout.

¹⁵⁵ ●The name Vergennes was given to a small town in Vermont, USA. Charles Gravier, comte de Vergennes, native of Dijon (1717), died at Versailles in 1787. According to Antoine-François Delandine, (*Dictionnaire universelle, historique, critique et bibliographique*, Mame Frères, Paris, 1810. tome 26, p 426), "Under his ministry, France resumed, in foreign countries, a political consideration all the more solid, because it was

Christian Majesty concerning a prompt pacification, is a happy omen of the accomplishment of our enterprise. His British Majesty shares the same feelings, the same wishes. *He has strengthened his Ministers in their intention to act in the same way; it is that which best accords with the true dignity of a great nation.*" These few low flatteries from the cunning English diplomats were enough to freeze Vergennes in his angelic gelatin of turkey confit. The English, petrified by the fear that the French would humiliate them had absolutely nothing to fear from them. French politicians like to play the role of moralizing preachers, of disinterested missionaries; and for that, they cleanly erase the slates of debts, forgive insults and betrayals, renounce all advantages for their country, but not for themselves, and burden themselves with penitential repentance in the name of their fellow citizens without asking their opinion. While French historians revived a few misdeeds to the History and Honor of their own country¹⁵⁶, English historians, on the other hand strive—in spite of the fact that English politicians conduct themselves with perfidy and greed—to erase from the memory of the world all those hypocrisies

founded on the virtues and the spirit of beneficence of the Comte de Vergennes. His strongest desire and zeal was always to prevent the shedding of human blood, and to accommodate disputes that might have brought about war." This was the man who did not return Canada to France. If he had been an anchorite or brother preacher, he would have been applauded enthusiastically, but he was the Minister of Foreign Affairs of a victorious country, whose citizens had shed blood for a just cause, and which was not only unable to take advantage of it but let the enemy understand the intentions of its king. If he had been British, the English would have shot him for these indiscretions that smacked of treason. But he was French, and well in line with French diplomats of the type of Saint-Séverin of Aragon (War of the Austrian Succession).

¹⁵⁶ • This systematic smearing of France and its history is a remnant of the Cold War, when the French Communist Party, obeying the USSR which wanted to sabotage the West, systematically discredited the so-called capitalist countries. This defamation was particularly successful in France when the powerful Communist Party obediently obeyed Moscow. The French Socialist Party inherited its excessive character. In Quebec, in osmosis with France, a similar phenomenon of discrediting Canadian history developed. In England the virulence of Soviet disinformation shattered on the rocks of the deep and powerful patriotic "religion" of the citizens of Her Majesty Elizabeth II..

perpetrated in favor of their merchants and moneymen. There was every chance in the world that France, once more, was not going to claim anything from defeated England, as after the War of the Austrian Succession, (even if at the end of the Seven Years War England had bled to deaf France –defeated by Prussia. In 1782, the English, at their wits'end, continued to let it be believed that they were determined to pursue the war to the last German mercenary of the Holy Roman Empire, if the French imposed on them too humiliating conditions.

The English diplomats in the throes continued to shower Vergennes of flatteries which were going to allow them not to pay too much their defeat. Playing both sides as virtuosos, they also flattered Benjamin Franklin but this one, knowing the usual arrows of the perfidy, did not restrict his desires: "After having read this letter [from Shelburne to Franklin, April 20, 1782], I asked Oswald what were the particular ideas of Lord Shelburne, which he had to communicate to me. He told me that the Ministry Shelburne was sincerely willing to make peace¹⁵⁷; [he said] that great confidence was placed in the frankness and honesty of my character [indeed, England had tried a thousand times to sign the peace separately with Franklin in order to isolate France... in vain]; that it was also believed that I retained some remnant of my old affection for *Olde England*, and that it was hoped that I would seize this opportunity to give proof of it... [He told me that at a Cabinet meeting held on April 27th, 1782, it had been proposed] that the most important point was American independence, provided that England would *be restored economically to the position in which the Peace of 1763 had left her.*"

¹⁵⁷ •How could they not be after the multiple defeats?

The interpretation of this phrase —*restored economically*— left the field open to the imagination of each party. Did they mean to say that England *hoped not to suffer in any way* from having inflicted this war on the Americans, and, in the end, to resume her role as *mother country for the Thirteen Colonies*? As for the *reparations* demanded: "this problem would be settled to our satisfaction towards the end of the treaty, but according to this English diplomat (Shelburne), it was *better not to speak of it* at the beginning¹⁵⁸", no doubt because it might cause discord before the cessation of hostilities. When the soldiers would be demobilized and returned to their homes, he would be impossible to get them back to the battlefields. Moreover, on the subject of these famous *compensations*, he added that "Lord Shelburne had said that he would never have believed that reparations were to be demanded from England, and that he was astonished that I did not know whether or not the American intended to ask for them¹⁵⁹."

Shocked by the English diplomat's comments that he hoped that Benjamin Franklin would "retained some remnant of his affection for old England," when Franklin was in the mood to publish a lexicon of the crimes, misdeeds, and arson perpetrated by the English in that war throughout the Thirteen Colonies¹⁶⁰, the American philosopher-

¹⁵⁸ •Letter from Lord Shelburne to Benjamin Franklin, Shelburne-House, April 20, 1782. Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790), p. 202.

¹⁵⁹ •Ibidem.

¹⁶⁰ 4 •Schiff, Stacy, Winner of the Pulitzer Prize, *A Great Improvisation, Franklin, France, and The Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York (NY), 2005. Footnote 209. "With Lafayette, Franklin began to compile a catalogue of British atrocities, to illustrate it and publish it in a bound volume, a frightening work of propaganda. The English had incited slaves to massacre their masters, and the Indians to scalp settlers; they had executed men who had taken prisoner; They had burned American cities. Unlike Franklin, Lafayette had witnessed many of these depredations. Despite this, it was he who convinced Franklin that a little moderation might be desirable. Lafayette despised the English as much as anyone else, yet he had to concede that, as a people, they were no worse than the rest of humanity."

negotiator stubbornly repeated that *the Americans would never negotiate with the English without the presence of the French*; and he repeated once more to Lord Shelburne his "*never!*" which became less and less convincing as *time passed, the sworn enemy of obstinacy*.

When the slave-trader Richard Oswald, "*Commissioner of His Britannic Majesty*," had been appointed by the *Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations* (i.e. the London Merchant Lobbies), this famous Oswald then came to visit Franklin, who introduced him to Monsieur de Vergennes. The Chief of the French Diplomacy innocently believed to have to explain, *with an evangelical finger pointing to Heaven*, to this representative of the English Government, that "*the foundation of a good and durable Peace must be Justice. And when we negotiate, I will have on several requirements an appeal to make to the Justice of the English. I warn you about this in advance!*" Clearly, the Frenchman and the Englishman were not connected on the same wavelength. What were these requirements? Vergennes did not specify it to Oswald. Only one came to Benjamin Franklin's mind: Vergennes would presumably demand reparation for the insult the English had done to the French by seizing from them in full period of peace, in violation of the law of Nations, a great number of merchant ships, by surprise and without the slightest declaration of war.



On the way to Versailles, following the meeting with the French Minister of Foreign Affairs, Franklin realized that Richard Oswald was still trying to persuade him of the idea that all the English negotiators were trying to impose, that the present weakness of the English Government was *due only to the division of English opinion about the war*. But he insisted heavily —too heavily to be credible— on

the fact that "*if by any chance France demanded from England humiliating requests, we would find unanimity, and there would be no lack of resources*¹⁶¹." The English frog was, of course, bluffing in the hope to intimidate the ox, for England was on the verge of bankruptcy. The wise and subtle Benjamin Franklin commented on this bluster thus: "These threats encouraged me by reminding me of an old adage: *He who threatens is afraid*¹⁶²."

The American then suggested to Oswald that if he wanted peace, he should make sure that England pay damages and reparations to the families for the villages burned and the inhabitants killed or scalped during the passage of British troops or their Indian henchmen or slaves. For during this War of Independence, which was ending, the English soldiers had, as we mentioned above, encouraged and incited the Indians and the bands of insurgent slaves to attack the American civil populations. Following the defeat of England, the Indians underwent serious reprisals of which the English did not care at all.

On May 3rd, 1782, the English baron Grenville¹⁶³, special envoy of Fox¹⁶⁴, went to Vergennes' residence with Benjamin Franklin, who served as his sesame. He

¹⁶¹ •The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &, comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, London, 1817. Vol. II,

¹⁶² •Ibidem. pp. 181 et seq. Letter from B. Franklin to Lord Shelburne, written at Passy on April 18, 1782.

¹⁶³ •William Wyndham Grenville, 1st Baron de Grenville (1759-1834) was then Chief-Secretary for Ireland. He was Prime Minister of the United Kingdom from 1806 to 1807. He was the son of George Grenville who had also been Whig Prime Minister from 1763 to 1765.

¹⁶⁴ •The Honourable Charles James Fox (1748-1806), a Whig, combined the offices of Leader of the House of Commons and Secretary of Foreign Affairs under the Minister the Marquess of Rockingham. He was the son of Henry Fox, 1st Baron Holland.

also came to try to avoid to England the disadvantages of defeat. Of course, at that time, he did not know that the French were so undemanding from the English. This incredible lack of greed seemed extremely disturbing and even worrying to the English —fundamentally affairists—who never went to war for the King of Prussia, but who, on the contrary, took advantage of the King of Prussia to win their wars¹⁶⁵.

Of two things, either the French had a very dangerous secret weapon or they were foolishly disinterested and refused to take advantage of their victories —as at the end of the War of the Austrian Succession—, and in this case it was necessary to try to extract the best possible advantages. Everything allowed to believe that it was the second mindset that inhabited them. To *draw as much as possible from their enemies*; the English had played on this keyboard at the end of the wars of the Spanish Succession, of Austrian Succession, of the Seven Years, and they could hope that the French Aristocrats who served as diplomats would be no more brilliant than in the past. They could wish that Vergennes would not be worth more than Saint-Séverin-d'Aragon¹⁶⁶. Franklin remembered little of this discussion: Lord Grenville declared "that in case England should recognize American independence, London expected France to return the islands which the French had conquered from England, in exchange for the islands of Saint-Pierre et Miquelon. Grenville added that since the original object of the war had been obtained (the independence of the Thirteen Colonies) there was every reason to suppose that France would be satisfied with these

¹⁶⁵ ●Especially the Seven Years' War.

¹⁶⁶ ●Alphonse Marie Louis de Saint-Séverin d'Aragon (1705-1757), Count of Olza, Knight of the Holy Spirit, appointed —by the inescapable Madame de Pompadour because he had enough cunning to treat her with deference— Minister Plenipotentiary to negotiate the end of the War of the Austrian Succession (Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle).

conditions." The French Minister smiled at this proposal of exchange [very arrogantly showing that the British had forgotten that they had lost the war and considered the French to be "naïve"] and pointed out that the offer to grant independence to America was one thing.

—*America*, Vergennes added, *is not asking you for independence* [in other words: America is taking it from you]. *Here is Mr. Franklin who will answer you on that point.*

Franklin then spoke:

—*It is certain that we do not believe we need to bargain for what is ours, which we have acquired with much blood and money, what we possess.*

Vergennes then spoke again:

—*As for being satisfied because we have obtained the initial object of the war*, examine a little the conduct of your Nation in the past wars. For example, what were the reasons for the last war [the Seven Years War]? Your claim to some uncultivated land on the banks of the Ohio and on the borders of Nova Scotia. Well! Were you content to recover those lands? No! You kept, when peace came, **all** Canada, all Louisiana¹⁶⁷, all Florida, Grenada and other islands of the West Indies, besides the greater part of the northern fisheries with all the conquests you had made in Africa and the East Indies.

Franklin recounted that "someone remarked that it was not fair that after having made war on its neighbors

¹⁶⁷ • A gross error by Vergennes, who seems to have no knowledge of the recent diplomatic history of his own country; Louisiana was simply given to Spain (Secret Treaty of Fontainebleau of 1762) without any real political reason by none other than the capricious Madame de Pompadour who did not want her dear Louis XV to have reasons to go back to war and therefore to follow his army in campaign as he had promised to appear as a Warrior King and make the people forget that he was only a king incapable of anything. It was except for debauchee. It was another stab in the back, given by the French to the Acadians deported to the Thirteen Colonies by England. The Treaty of Paris (1763) allowed them to emigrate to Louisiana where they would not be treated as pariahs by the population, while Louisiana had secretly been given to Spain!

without any provocation, a nation [the English nation, not to name it] which had not had the upper hand, should expect to find itself unharmed and to recover all that it had lost by the hazards of war. Whereupon Lord Grenville claimed that the war had been provoked by the encouragement which France had given to the Americans to incite them to revolt. This remark heated up Monsieur de Vergennes a little who firmly declared that the rupture was made and independence declared *long before* the Americans had received the slightest encouragement from France. And having said so, he defied anyone to find any evidence to the contrary. "And Mr. Franklin, who is sitting there, he added, knows the facts and can contradict me if I am not telling the truth. He repeated to Mr. Grenville what he had previously told Mr. Oswald, that according to the intention of the King of France, he would negotiate loyally, and faithfully respect the agreements he would sign. Furthermore, he would give convincing proof of these dispositions during the negotiations, by the fidelity and the exactitude with which he would respect his commitments with his present allies¹⁶⁸. Vergennes added that the King of France had essentially in sight justice and dignity; and that he would never depart from it¹⁶⁹. He made known to Lord Grenville that he should communicate without delay to the Courts of Spain and Holland¹⁷⁰ the events which had taken place and to echo their answers¹⁷¹."



¹⁶⁸ ●United States, Spain and the United Provinces that was increasingly called Holland, after the most powerful of these provinces.

¹⁶⁹ ●One would think to hear a president of the Fifth Republic enumerate the "republican values.""

¹⁷⁰ ●Even though Holland was one of the United Provinces ruled by a Republic.

¹⁷¹ ●Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775–1790), pp. 208 et seq..

On leaving Versailles, which was then a town south-southwest of Paris, to return to Passy, a village west of the French capital¹⁷², Benjamin Franklin went a long way with the same English Minister. Grenville complained heavily about the French Minister of Foreign Affairs, who had shown him a little too much ill humor. So, they parted that evening without any displeasure. A few days later, Grenville again urged Franklin, as Hartley had done previously, that Franklin should abandon the alliance with France: "He repeated to me the same arguments that Mr. Hartley had had already written to me; that is to say that it was supposed that France would raise its claims¹⁷³ on points completely different from those which were the object of our alliance; and that, in this case, it was not believed [in London, of course] that we were bound to continue the war to serve French interests, etc. etc. etc..."

Then Benjamin Franklin gave the Englishman a great lesson of honesty by hammering into him these words: "Men too often have only imperfect ideas of their obligations, Gratitude is so compelling to most of them that they try to find reasons and arguments to prove to themselves that they owe nothing to anyone; and they too easily accommodate such arguments¹⁷⁴." Beautiful and just words, in truth, which the French would no doubt have appreciated if the Americans in general, and Franklin in particular, had not ended up letting themselves be

¹⁷² 6 • These two municipalities are now merged into Greater Paris. Passy became a district of the 16th Arrondissement of Paris.

¹⁷³ 1 • As England had done at the end of the Seven Years' War.

¹⁷⁴ • The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &.&., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, Londres, 1817. Vol.II, Part III, p.175

corrupted by the English and signing behind the backs of the French some secret Preliminaries. Ulysses and his companions had been more prudent than the American diplomats; in order not to let themselves be seduced by the irresistible song of the mermaids, they had chained themselves to the masts of their ship.



But let us return to this Grenville-Vergennes meeting in the presence of Franklin. The historian Jonathan Dull points out that the behavior of the Baron Grenville—Chief-Secretary for Ireland, and who would later become Prime Minister of England—, sovereignly displeased Benjamin Franklin. Subsequently, he favored the presence of some other more honest and acceptable plenipotentiaries¹⁷⁵.

What is certain is that Benjamin Franklin's moral lesson strongly astonished the English plenipotentiary Grenville, who was not used in his country to such moral rectitude and ethical rules. Grenville answered a question by: "it was a great stretch of *my ideas of gratitude* to apply them to France, for it was France who had led to our¹⁷⁶ separation from you, a separation that diminished the power of its rival country (England) and increased its own

¹⁷⁵ ●Dull, Jonathan R., *Benjamin Franklin and the American Revolution*, Bison Books, Winnipeg, 2010. À ce point, Franklin se lança dans une véritable parabole de type évangélique pour faire comprendre son point de vue à l'Anglais : «'A', a stranger to 'B', sees him about to be imprisoned for debt by a merciless creditor. He lends him the sum necessary to preserve his liberty. 'B' then becomes the debtor of 'A' and after some times repays the money. Has he then discharged the obligation? No. He has discharged the money debt, but the obligation remains, and he is debtor for the kindness of 'A' in lending the same so reasonably. If 'B' should afterwards find 'A' in the same circumstances that he, 'B', had been in when 'A' lent him the money, he may then discharge this obligation of debt of kindness in part by lending him an equal sum. " In part", I said, and not wholly, because when 'A' lent 'B' the money, there had been no prior benefit received to induce him to it. And therefore, if 'A' should a second time need the same assistance, I thought 'B', if in his power, was in duty bound to afford it to him." The Private Correspondence of Franklin, p. 176.

¹⁷⁶ ●"Our" because it is always Franklin who is speaking.

power¹⁷⁷." To which Benjamin Franklin replied: "I was touched by the assistance which France had given us in our distress, and by the noble and generous manner in which France granted it to us without demanding or stipulating the slightest privilege, either for his business or otherwise. I would never let myself to allow my gratitude to be weakened by such reasonings. I added that I hoped—and that in my heart I was persuaded—that all my compatriots shared the same sentiments." As for this last wish, Franklin was wrong, of course. The ink of the peace treaty was not absorbed by the drying ash, that the American Government was almost at war with France¹⁷⁸. This provided an immense joy to England, who fanned the flames of misunderstanding.

Needless to say, the admonition did not please the future English Prime Minister. "Nevertheless, we left each other good friends." Franklin concluded.

When Grenville emphatically expressed a desire to discuss with Franklin the means of reconciliation with America, because, as said earlier, England wanted to recover *all* its economic advantages with the United States, as if there had been *no* war. "I promised to consider the subject, and finally fixed the date for Saturday, June 1st

¹⁷⁷ •Private Correspondence, p. 177.

¹⁷⁸ 1•*Quasi-War*. The French blamed the American Government for the cessation of debt repayment to the French Revolutionary Government. The Americans used as a pretext the strange argument that — Their debt was to the royal France, not the republican France. Needless to say, the incumbent President was John Adams, who had behaved in Paris when he was a representative in France, with a violence that made it suspected of wanting to sow discord between France and the United States in order to bring the latter closer to England (so much so that Vergennes refused to consider him a representative of the United States). Which he did as soon as he became president of the United States; he moved away from France and approached England. The real reason for this Quasi-War was that the French Revolutionary Government had abolished slavery, and that the American and British Governments, infiltrated by their slave lobbies, opposed it. England invaded the French West Indies and the Americans also showed their bad mood by refusing French ships permission to anchor in an American port; but it was far from a real war with the United States.

when he proposed to remind me of it." In spite of his always polite words and expressions, one felt, towards this very undiplomatic "diplomat", a deep annoyance and reluctance, simply by the way Benjamin Franklin related the related the anecdote¹⁷⁹.

In early April, the U.S. Representative made —again and again — mention, this time in a letter to the Chevalier de Chastellux, of the fact that the English were again attempting to isolate France by dragging American representatives in a separate, illegal and unethical peace: "I know that they wish to detach us from France, but that is impossible¹⁸⁰" Franklin wrote, firm in his righteousness. The English, absolutely burning with the desire to detach the Dutch from the cause of American Independence, were trying to seduce them into ceasing loans to the Americans. France itself had to borrow from Holland in order to lend *at a loss* to the Thirteen Colonies. Money being the sinews of war, the London Merchant Lobbies saw in Dutch bankers the Achilles heel of the American Revolution: "I learned from the Dutch Envoy that the new Ministry of England had offered, through the mediation of Russia, a suspension of hostilities to Holland, and a renewal¹⁸¹ of the *Treaty of 1674*. Monsieur de Berkenrode seemed to think that the offer was made to gain time... It is feared that this offer would have the effect of fortifying the pro-English party in Holland and to delay a little the business; but it is hoped that finally, the proposal will not be accepted. It would make the Dutch look ridiculous."

¹⁷⁹ ●Private Correspondence, p. 177.

¹⁸⁰ ●Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 163; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to the Chevalier de Chastellux, Passy on April 6, 1782.

¹⁸¹ ●The Peace Treaty of Westminster (1674) had ended the Third Anglo-Dutch War, It provided the annexion by England of the New Netherland (New York) and some places in India.

To caricature the concept of *separate peace* (strongly advocated by England to isolate France) between the United States and England (without the knowledge of France), Benjamin Franklin, who was fond of political parables, summed it up as follows: *'A' has a cane in his hand. He meets his neighbor 'B' who has no cane. He uses his advantage to beat 'B'. But 'B' gets a stick and comes back to return the blows. Then 'A' says to him: "My old friend, why do we quarrel? We are neighbors, let's live together in peace and harmony as we used to do. If 'B' agrees and throws away his stick, his other friends and 'A' will laugh at him. This is the way I have presented the situation*¹⁸² between the United States and England.¹⁸³

The twofold approach of English diplomacy suggested the objectives of the English: *first*, to recover the Thirteen Colonies, which could constitute an inexhaustible reservoir of "cannon fodder" on battlefield, with Scotland, Ireland and the eternal German States of the Holy Germanic Roman Empire. All these peoples were effective replacements for the English on the land battlefields for the greater benefit of the London Merchant Lobbies and the British Empire. As soon as the Colonies were recovered, the *second phase* would follow, which was to assemble a coalition powerful enough to attempt to crush France in order to punish this nation for having sabotaged the growth

¹⁸² •The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &.&., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, London, 1817. Vol. II, Part III, p. 114; Letter from B. Franklin to the Honorable Robert Livingston, Esq. (Squire or bearer of the knight's shield; this is the first title in the Order of the Knights of St John of Jerusalem). The letter was written at Passy, Franklin's residence in France, on April 12, 1782..

¹⁸³ •"A" is England; "B" is America. France is the stick.

of the British Power, and, in this way, for taking away the possibility to be a superpower and to crash all competition. The intoxication of the Glory of the Seven Years' War was still fresh in the mind of Albion and the English had unfortunately forgotten that it was the mighty *Prussian war machine* and the mastermind of Frederick the Great that had inflicted the defeat on France, not the English armies which took advantage of Prussia in Europe to just rush overseas to collect the fruits of Prussian victories in Europe: French colonies.

To remain in the parables of Benjamin Franklin, let us complete and enhance the story of the *Balance of Powers* by adding in it the American Revolution, as follows:

"In a playground, 'A' is jealous of 'B' who always has in the pockets of his coat, in the checkroom, several toys that 'A' dreams to steal from him. Unfortunately, 'B' is the toughest kid in the yard. So 'A' who is the most cunning in town makes several *friends* to whom he gives sticks, and while, at the signal of 'A', his friends beat up 'B', 'A' goes surreptitiously steal his toys in the checkroom. And so, it goes on throughout the school year. Then, one Sunday in July, 'B' meets 'A' all alone beating his girlfriend. 'B' takes the girl's side and gives 'A' a beating. But instead of taking back all the toys that 'A' has stolen from him during the school year, 'B' feels sorry for 'A' who has lost his wife. He leaves him all his stolen toys to console 'A' and says, "Let's not take our toys away from 'A' and eliminate him. He is too important in the balance of the playground!" *My dear children,*" concludes the educator, *"who is the big schmuck in this parable?"*

Replace the *playground* by Europe, the *toys* by the colonies, the *friends* by Prussia, the Netherlands, Austria-Hungarian, Russia... the *Sunday in July* by the American Revolution, the *girlfriend* by the American Thirteen

Colonies, 'B' by France, and 'A' by England, and you have Europe from the 18th century to the end of the First Empire.



From April 9th to 12th, 1782, an event took place that could have had serious consequences for American independence. It was the the Naval Battle of the Saintes because England had succeeded in gathering locally a greater number of ships of the line than the French, as well as fifteen frigates to face the French ships¹⁸⁴. This apparent success¹⁸⁵ whipped up the stubbornness of the Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations (the London Merchant Lobbies) and gave them hope that France might not succeed in wresting their American turf from them I believe that at first," wrote Franklin to Livingston, "the English sincerely desired peace, but since their success in the West Indies I see a certain desire on their part to let negotiations take advantage of the chances that this campaign may give them¹⁸⁶." He added in a letter to Morris, about this English pause, which suggested the Lobbies were on the lookout, wondering if this campaign would provide them with any further glimmer of hope: "I hope that our people, wrote Franklin, will not be seduced by fine words, but will be on their guard, ready to repel any enterprise of these treacherous enemies¹⁸⁷." This was not the case.

¹⁸⁴ •Rodney's English lined up 3,012 guns against the 2,246 French guns of the Comte de Grasse; superiority in ships of the line and artillery (766 guns); moreover, without this superiority of manpower, Rodney would not have attacked de Grasse..

¹⁸⁵ •Apparent because the French managed to achieve the objective of the battle (to pass a convoy of logistic transports). But the French commander-in-chief (Admiral de Grasse) was taken prisoner, which had a bad effect..

¹⁸⁶ •Private Correspondence, Lettre de Franklin à Robert Livingston, écrite à Passy le 25 juin 1782. p. 270.

¹⁸⁷ •Franklin's June 25 letter to Robert Morris, p. 272.

English diplomatic activity, reinvigorated by this break in their naval defeats, concentrated even more on the hope of seducing the Americans in order to isolate the French by getting the Thirteen Colonies to sign behind the backs of the latter. Among the many attempts by English diplomats to isolate France, we have seen above that the English tried to induce the Dutch bankers to stop lending money to the Thirteen Colonies, to the French and to the English. They hoped that, since the Americans would no longer receive anything from France, it would be easier to detach them. More importantly, they also tried to negotiate a separate peace with the Netherlands so that this republic would stop subsidizing the war. In the last days of May 1782, Franklin was secretly received by the Russian czar who visited Paris incognito under the pseudonym of *Comte du Nord*. This was not secret enough for the French Secret Service not to be interested in it. Benjamin Franklin met Mr. Berkenrode, Ambassador of the United Provinces, as well as the agents of the *Vereenigde Oost-Indische Compagnie*, Vanderpierre and Boeris¹⁸⁸. "These gentlemen informed me that Mr. Fox's second letter to the Russian minister offering mediation (by which he proposed to conclude a separate peace with Holland) had produced no more impression than the first, and that we would deal only in concert with France¹⁸⁹." Sublime disappointment!

¹⁸⁸ •Dutch East India Company, in Dutch Vereenigde Oostindische Compagnie. It is better known by the abbreviation of VOC.

¹⁸⁹ •The Count of the North became Paul I, Tsar of all the Russias. The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, London, 1817. Vol. II, Part III, p. 195.

The English offensives were multiple and desperate. By all means, their diplomats also tried to convince the Thirteen Colonies to fall in line so that they could reinstate themselves in their colonial role. They even published false news in the London newspapers and magazines, owned by the Merchant Lobbies. On May 30th, 1782, THE LONDON EVENING POST reported the following piece of disinformation or fakenews: "If our news from France is true, Lord Grenville has obtained on his first visit to Dr. Franklin, a most considerable piece of information; America has reserved to herself the right to treat separately with Great Britain." And pseudo-journalists, taking for granted that this piece of disinformation¹⁹⁰ was true, analyzed the *Franco-American Treaty of Alliance of February 6th, 1778*, to decide that the object of this alliance being *the independence of the United States*, as soon as the latter were assured that England was granting them independence and free commercial access to the whole world, the Franco-American Treaty would become *null and void* and America could deal *separately* in its negotiations. "I assume that this article originated in a letter from Mr. Grenville¹⁹¹", Benjamin Franklin simply wrote.



Hot on the heels of violence and insatiable to the point of insanity when they felt they had the upper hand, English gentlemen became cunning and Machiavellian when their weakness made them fear for the worst. There is no doubt that the nickname of *Perfidious Albion* was attributed to England by the Austrians when Torcy's Memoirs were published in 1757, after the Austrians realized

¹⁹⁰ • We grant ourselves the right to use this anachronism.

¹⁹¹ • The Private Correspondence, p. 212

that the English had betrayed them during the War of Spanish Succession¹⁹².

On Thursday, June 11th, 1782, Benjamin Franklin revealed that Walpole¹⁹³ had tried to open separate negotiations with the Marquis de Castries, Ministre de la Marine, but Castries told him that he should approach Vergennes. Walpole had not dared to insist¹⁹⁴. On learning that, the same day (June 11th, 1782), the American representative in Paris took advantage to try to secure future peace agreement by getting the French to sign a new Treaty of Military Assistance that would automatically come into effect as soon as peace would be signed.

While the Comte de Vergennes, as credulous as ever, rejoiced, trying to convince himself that "the Court of England was sincere in declaring that they desired peace", Franklin who knew well the unfathomable cunning of his ex-compatriots, remarked that, "since the English had shown such a great desire to divide us, by making considerable offers to each power *separately*, with the evident purpose of dealing more favorably with the other one; and that, since they had consented *so reluctantly to conclude a general peace*, it was possible that after that, having established *peace with us all* [for the sole purpose of rendering *null and void* the Franco-American Treaty of Alliance, which was to be terminated by peace], they would choose one of us to declare war on him separately. In order to

¹⁹² •Colbert, Jean-Baptiste, marquis de Torcy, Mémoires de Monsieur de Torcy pour servir à l'Histoire des négociations depuis le traité de Ryswick jusqu'à la Paix d'Utrecht, Nourse & Vaillant Imprimeurs, London, 1757. 3 Vol. All this imbroglia is exposed in detail in the History of Anglo-French diplomatic relations during the War of the Spanish Succession, by J.-C. Castex, Les Éditions P-O, Vancouver, 2010.

¹⁹³ •Horatio Walpole, 4th Earl of Orford (24 September 1717-2 March 1797), of Strawberry Hill House, Twickenham, youngest son, the diarist known to history as "Horace Walpole". He became the 4th and last Earl of Orford on his nephew's death in 1791, and died in 1797.

¹⁹⁴ •The Private Correspondence, p. 259

thwart this project, I thought that it might not be useless that, before signing the Treaty of General Peace, all the powers at war (France and the United States) should make a *new treaty* between them, committing themselves¹⁹⁵ to make *common cause* again and to renew the general war, in case of aggression by England¹⁹⁶. Prudence was the mother of security for the United States.

Two weeks later, on June 28th, 1782, England, always one step behind, finally proposed to the Thirteen Colonies to grant them an autonomous status similar to that of Ireland. Here we are, the phrase "*the Statute of Ireland*" was enough to throw panic to the Catholics American born in the Green Erin; they knew precisely what kind of hell the *Statute of Ireland* would put them in¹⁹⁷. So, there was no question of the Americans themselves agreeing to be crucified to this famous statute: "Although we may have been willing at the beginning of the struggle, to accept such conditions, wrote Franklin, be assured that we cannot trust them today. The King of England hates us with all his heart. Whether we grant him the slightest degree of power or authority over us (however limited that power may be), he will soon extend it by corruption, artifice and violence until we are reduced to absolute subjection! He will come all the more easily that by taking him back as our King, we will draw upon ourselves the contempt of all Europe, which today admires and respects us, and that we will never again find a single friend who wants

¹⁹⁵ •In this case, in case peace returns, England throws itself on the United States, to re-chain them to her Empire by the colonial straightjacket, or even, the spirit misted with hatred, on France itself to try to make it pay for its military and financial aid to the Thirteen Colonies.

¹⁹⁶ •Laboulaye, Édouard, *Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin*, p. 259.

¹⁹⁷ •Irish Catholics had no civil rights, no property rights over any piece of land, no right to vote, to become trader, to go to school... Only the Anglo-Protestant minority had all human and political rights. The Irish was then destined to be slowly eliminated by Protestant England.

to help us¹⁹⁸." Ah! Decidedly, this Franklin was a 24-carat brain that understood everything at lightning speed!



Yet, despite the sagacious Franklin's abysmal distrust towards England, *the Preliminaries of Peace* signed on November 30th, 1782, showed significant divisions among the Franco-Americans. "It was understood in the Franco-American Alliance contract that neither party would conclude a peace or truce with Great Britain without first obtaining the formal consent of the other party. And yet, in spite of this article and the official instructions of the Continental Congress, the American plenipotentiaries signed on November 30th, 1782, a treaty with England, without consulting Monsieur de Vergennes, without knowing the status of the negotiations with the Court of France. *The impatience and distrust of John Adams and John Jay were the cause of this strange conduct, of this lack of procedure.* Franklin's excuse was that the treaty was *provisional*, but this was, according to Laboulaye, a poor excuse, and Benjamin Franklin's conduct in this instance may be placed on the shelf of what he called the *errata of his life*¹⁹⁹.

Thus, without consulting the French, on that last day of November, the American Commissioners signed with England, their *Preliminary Articles*. When Vergennes learned of the event, he was very indignant of the conduct of the Commissioners of Congress. He protested to Franklin and asked La Luzerne to inform the Continental Congress of what had happened.

¹⁹⁸ ● Laboulaye, Édouard, *Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin*, traduite et annotée par Édouard Laboulaye, Tome Second 1775-1790, Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. p. 298.

¹⁹⁹ 1 ● Ibidem. pp. 298-299

The American Plenipotentiaries²⁰⁰ —who were not true plenipotentiaries *stricto sensu* since, for fear of treason, they had to have their decisions approved by the Continental Congress, which took months—, they were in charge of negotiating peace. The English Plenipotentiaries were also to take advice from the London Government²⁰¹, but this was only a ruse designed to stall in the hope that a military turnaround would free them from the constraints of their successive defeats. Franklin, for his part, "tended singularly to favor the policy of Vergennes; John Adam remained as ever the most austere defender of the interests of the Continental Congress," John Jay tended to favor England, and Henry Laurens seemed marked by his desire to distance himself from his French origins by displaying an apparent great mistrust at France. It was as if he was motivated by *the extremism of the new convert!*

Of the four American plenipotentiary Ministers, John Adams was certainly the most hostile towards the French, because he had committed blunders in France and had been slapped on the fingers by the French. In the fall of 1779, he had tried to offer a Treaty of Commerce to England. On July 17th, 1780, when Adams announced to Vergennes that he intended to sign unilaterally a treaty of commerce with England, the French diplomat instructed him to wait for the Continental Congress to hear France's objections²⁰². When the Continental Congress heard about this blunder, on July 12th, 1781, it rescinded John Adams' commission. And as one can imagine, as resentful as the

²⁰⁰ 2 ●As mentioned above, the most important were Benjamin Franklin, John Adams, John Jay and Henry Laurens. The last, Laurens, was descended from a French Huguenot.

²⁰¹ ●As mentioned above, the London Merchant Lobbies themselves were represented on the team of English Plenipotentiaries. But they still had to get each clause approved.

²⁰² ●Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution (1775-1783)*, Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. p. 236.

Pope's mule (who had held his vengeance for seven years), Adams did *not for seven years*, he *never* forgot it. And when he became Vice President of the United States (seven years later, to be precise) and then president, the French had to suffer his implacable vengeance.

When Vergennes learned of the Adam and Jay's misstep in Paris, he wrote to Franklin on December 13th, 1782: "I am quite embarrassed, Monsieur, to explain your conduct and that of your colleagues with respect to us. You have decided on your Preliminary Articles without informing us, although the instructions of the Continental Congress prescribe you to do nothing without the participation of the King of France... Do you think that you are fulfilling the instructions that bind you to the King of France? I do not want to carry these reflections any further, I leave them to your honesty²⁰³."

Franklin defended himself very skillfully by advising Monsieur de Vergennes to avoid letting the controversy erupt so as not to let the English know that they had succeeded in sowing discord within the Franco-American Alliance. "In these Preliminaries, we haven't decided anything which would be contrary to the interests of France, and no peace will ever be signed between us and England until you have concluded your own. You make however observation, fair in appearance, that by not consulting you before the signing we were guilty of neglecting a point of diplomacy (and civility). But as it is not for lack of respect for the King, whom we all love and honor, we hope that this will be forgiven and that the great work so happily carried out, up to now, so close to its perfection and so glorious for his reign, will not be destroyed by a simple imprudence on our part... *The English*, I have just learned,

²⁰³ • See Doniol, Volume 5, p. 192.

flatter themselves to have already succeeded in dividing us. I hope that this little misunderstanding will remain a secret, and that they will find themselves entirely deceived in their expectations²⁰⁴."

Vergennes followed this advice by keeping this affair secret, but he gave free rein to his indignation in a private letter to La Luzerne. December 19, 1782: "You will surely applaud, Sir, as well as me, to the very extensive advantages that our allies, the Americans, should gain by Peace. But you will not be less surprised than I was at the procedure taken by their representatives. According to the instructions of Congress, they were not to do anything without our participation. I warned you, Sir, that the King would seek to influence the negotiations only insofar as his offices might be necessary to his friends. The American deputies will not say that I tried to interfere, even less that I bothered them with my curiosity. They carefully kept away from me. John Adams, one of them, who came from Holland where he had been welcomed and taken care of by our ambassador, was nearly three weeks in Paris without imagining that he owed me a mark of attention, and probably I would not have seen him again if I had not made him aware of it. When I had the opportunity to see one of them and to question them succinctly about the progress of the negotiations, they constantly *confined themselves to generalities*, trying to make me understand that it was not progressing and that they had no confidence in the sincerity of the English ministers. Imagine, Sir, how surprised I was when, on November 30th, Mr. Franklin informed me that the articles were signed... I am not accusing anyone, I do not even blame Mr. Franklin; perhaps he yields too

²⁰⁴ •Doniol, *History of France's Participation in the Establishment of the United States of America. Correspondance politique et documents*, Imprimerie nationale, Paris, 1886. 5 vol. Tome V: letter from Franklin to Vergennes, December 17, 1782. pp. 127-128.

easily to the impulses of his colleagues, who affect to know no respect²⁰⁵."

And the French Minister played the prophet of doom and gloom and the right prediction without any difficulty: "*If we judge the future by what is happening before our eyes, we shall be ill-paid for what we have done for the United States of America and to secure for them the title*²⁰⁶." He couldn't think he was saying it so right. It was in this same letter that Vergennes ordered La Luzerne to inform "the most influential members of the Continental Congress... of the improper conduct of their Delegates without, however, falling into a pattern of indictment²⁰⁷."

Now it happened that the Continental Congress had just solicited an enormous additional loan of six million *French livres* from France. Some Americans had a few cold sweats. Quite unnecessarily, in fact! Louis XVI immediately granted the sum. Also, Vergennes, in announcing the news to La Luzerne, alluded to this "*stab in the back*" of November 30th:

—You will be careful, Sir, to make this new mark of interest known to the Continental Congress, but at the same time you will want to *leave no hope that the King might be disposed to give it more scope, either by new advances or by lending him his royal guarantee*²⁰⁸. The United States do not show themselves sufficiently disposed to create the means to meet their debts so that one could reasonably think of borrowing on their behalf. This one will most

²⁰⁵ •Ibidem. Tome V, pp. 192-194.

²⁰⁶ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Volume II, chap XIV, p. 302, and Doniol pp. 192-194.

²⁰⁷ •Doniol p. 194.

²⁰⁸ •Suretyship: the French also served as a guarantor for the Americans so that they could also borrow on the world financial market (Dutch...).

certainly be the last²⁰⁹." Indeed, the United States preferred to borrow from the French rather than raise their own taxes. An eternal technique inherited from the Parliament of England, whose lobbies alone benefited from wars, but whose debts were paid by the little people of this island through "Sunken Funds" and "Lotteries".

On December 31st, 1782, the French minister repeated his admonition and his gratuitous threat: "Concerning the requests for money, you understand that the present behavior does not encourage us to show us positively."

In fact, this famous betrayal of the Americans towards the French was rather *a simple lack of tact, a lack of diplomatic experience*. Article 8 of the treaty of alliance specified: "Neither of the two parties shall conclude either a truce or a peace with Great Britain, without the prior and formal consent of the other side²¹⁰," and the signing of the Preliminary Articles was not at all equivalent to the signing of a truce or the signing of a peace: it was simply the acceptance of the articles which could eventually constitute the articles of a peace treaty. These articles were worth nothing if peace was not concluded between France and England²¹¹. The declaration of the American ministers Plenipotentiary on this point is explicit. This is why, in spite of this lack of consideration for the French, France granted her new loan of 6,000,000 *French livres* to the Americans, and remained faithful to their cause of freedom.

●

²⁰⁹ ●Doniol, History of France's Participation in the Establishment of the United States of America. Correspondance politique et documents, tome V, Imprimerie nationale, Paris, 1886. 5 vol. Volume V: 197—198, December 31, 1782.

²¹⁰ ●US National Archives, The Federal Register Publications System, United States Statutes at Large The treaties of 1778, p. 54

²¹¹ ●Doniol, Volume V, footnote 277.

In the General Preliminaries, France demanded nothing for itself except, *non-privileged* access to the American economy. On the other hand, the United States, taking advantage of the fact that England was on its knees, (the *all-powerful* country *secreting bulimic rapacity*), no longer wanted to settle for what they and France wanted when they entered the war: total independence. The American wished, for example, to completely exclude England from the Grand Banks of Newfoundland, in order to appropriate them in equal parts with France... They wanted to trade with the French, but they also knew that sooner or later they would become an immense power, as their situation suggested, situation they already qualified as "continental", but which was not yet so, since Spain, England and imperial Russia were still in their way, in (Spanish) Louisiana, in Canada (English) and in Russian Alaska, without forgetting the "Oregon Territory" which did not legally belong to anyone except the Amerindians. This situation promised a lot of trouble for all those neighbors who occupied the same continental living space: Spain, England and Russia²¹²



General signature of the two treaties

Finally were signed the same day, September 3rd, 1783, the treaties of Versailles and Paris, which put an end to the American War of Independence that the Americans like to call *American Revolution* to give it precedence over the French Revolution. In fact, it was the first colony of modern times to wrest its independence. The *Treaty of*

²¹² •Russia wisely sold Alaska to the Americans. Under threat of war, England had imposed itself on Canada, and particularly in the Oregon Territory, a frontier that left it only the cold Canadians; not to mention the North Sandwich Islands (Hawaii). Spain had huge territories taken away from what is now the American Southwest.

Versailles (September 3, 1783) put an end to the conflict between France and England. Spain, which was also in a state of hostility with England also signed. David Hartley, member of the British Parliament signed the Peace for King George III.

On the American side, Benjamin Franklin, John Jay and John Adams, represented the United States. The signing ceremony of *the Treaty of Paris* (September 3, 1783) between the United States and England took place at 56, rue Jacob, in Paris, because Benjamin Franklin, always very suspicious of the English of whom he feared a last minute ruse (kidnapping, hostage taking...), refused to sign at the British Embassy. He was afraid of the duplicity of his former compatriots, because, at the British Embassy (British territory) he could have been put under arrest.

- England recognized the Independence of its Thirteen American Colonies and proceeded to return the prisoners of war who had survived torture in English concentration camps. England also was returning some war captures and looted property to American citizens.

- The borders of the new state were circumscribed by the line of the Great Lakes to the north, the Mississippi River to the west, and the 31st parallel to the south. The new boundary cut longitudinally through all the lakes, except for Lake Michigan, which was entirely in the hands of the Americans. In the West, where Spanish Louisiana, and the Rupert's Territory, which belonged in full *private* ownership to the Hudson's Bay Company, the territory was not to be divided. It would be divided at the beginning of the following century when Bonaparte's France forced Spain to retrocede Louisiana to France, and Bonaparte immediately sold this 14-state territory to the United States for a pittance. The Province of Quebec lost part of its territory to the United States, but the exact location of the

southern border of Quebec was not settled until much later.

- American fishermen regained their fishing rights around the island of Newfoundland and in the Gulf of St. Lawrence.

- As far as France was concerned, England was forced to give back some of the territories which the English has seized by surprise at the end of the Seven Years' War; eight French lodges in India²¹³: *Balassore, Kassimbazar, Yougdia, Dacca, Patna, Mazulipatam, Calicut and Surat*. France kept or recovered Sénégal and some islands of the West Indies: *Martinique, Guadeloupe, Saint Lucia, Tobago and Trinidad* as well as *Saint-Pierre-et-Miquelon* in the north of America. The French granted themselves a more extensive fishing right on the banks of Newfoundland, on the northeast and west coasts of Newfoundland, from Cape St. John to Cape Raye.

On the other hand, France did not ask for any reparation for the acts of piracy of the Royal Navy against the French merchant ships, in the middle of peace. Aren't merchants despicable people according to the opinion of the Aristocrats? "These captures had been made by trickery, with a deviousness unworthy of a civilized country. The English captains announced to the French commanders of *these merchant ships that they had news to communicate to them, and they invaded their ships by surprise, in peace time*. Hypocrisy of merchants, the French said."

- Spain recovered Menorca and the part of Florida that had been annexed by England. But the French refused

²¹³ ● These lodges were in addition to the traditional trading posts of Pondicherry, Chandernagor, Karikal, Yanaon and Mahé, which finally remained French longer (the transfer did not take place until 1954) than India remained English (1947). The Government of independent India refused a referendum to ask the people of Pondicherry if they wanted to remain French, fearing that the population would refuse to be attached to the Indian Republic.

to force England to surrender Gibraltar so as not to humiliate the English too much!

● Being the allies of the defeated British was disastrous for the French-Canadian who had much to lose from the defeat of England. First, 50,000 English refugees descended upon them like a swarm of angry locusts. They arrived from the United States, ruined for having bet on the wrong horse and furious against the French-Canadians whom they equated with La Fayette and Rochambeau's French troops. They had expelled the British from their Thirteen Colonies. These Protestants quickly refused to live with the Catholic Canadians (who nevertheless provided them through their taxes with all they needed to live two years and to start building a new farming life and a new sanity: cereals, horses and machines) and it was necessary to amputate the Province of Quebec (1791) in favor of these *Royalists* officially called here *Loyalists*. The Canadians also lost Ohio and the Great Lakes to the Americans.



If the secret disappointment of the Canadians was immense when they realized that France was not taking back Canada, considerable too was the surprise and the satisfaction of the English. "Sieur Adhémar will endeavor to show the English that we are their friends and that the enmity which existed, came only from Louis XIV and William III." It was an utopian dream, a French diplomat's fantasy of idealists, unable to understand that the London Merchant Lobbies who directed the Destiny of the English people dreamed only of hateful revenge.

It was all the same curious and shocking that Louis XIV—one of the best Kings of France—should be thus pilloried by one of the worst monarchs, Louis XVI. But

just as de Gaulle reached out to Germany, at the end of the Second World War, the main thing was to reach out to the vanquished in order to create peace in Europe after centuries of conflict. But the English are not the Germans. There were two antinomic reactions. George III of England had been so scalded by the defeat that he showed himself momentarily favorable to a rapprochement and a reconciliation with France, as recounted Rayneval²¹⁴, the French plenipotentiary in London: "I was introduced in the cabinet of the King [of England] by mylord Grantham, who remained present. I made the speech of which I enclose here a copy. His Britannic Majesty replied in such a way as to convince me of *the frank and sincere joy the King felt in seeing peace restored*. This prince told me that the principles of Justice which His Majesty [the King of France] has developed on all occasions, the candor and uprightness which he noticed in his politic, the simplicity and purity of his morals and private life, had had long inspired in him a great esteem and a true friendship for His Majesty; that he saw with great pleasure the moment to be able to explain himself in this respect; that the frank and liberal manner the negotiations were conducted, increased and strengthened his feelings; that he hoped that there would be established between His Majesty and him a cordiality whose seed was as much in his heart as in his principles; that France and England were made to be friends; that their union perfectly suited to their well understood interests; that it [the commercial union between the two countries] would prevent a war not only between the two countries, but also between the other sovereigns of Europe. Finally,

²¹⁴ • Born in Masevaux in the Haut-Rhin, Mathias Joseph Gérard de Rayneval was the brother of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, like him diplomat. In the service of French Foreign Affairs, Mathias was appointed Minister Plenipotentiary in London at the end of the war; he played a large part in the treaty of commerce concluded with England in 1786, known as the Treaty of Eden-Rayneval.

His Britannic Majesty told me with great unction and much gaiety that he did not want to have war with France any more. Then this prince attached himself, Monseigneur²¹⁵, to praising you; he put great emphasis on the frank and loyal conduct which you have held throughout the course of the negotiations, and he flatters himself that as long as you are Minister, there will be neither war nor dispute between France and England. His Britannic Majesty finished his speech by saying some infinitely flattering things [*you're never better served than by yourself*], but which I am careful not to repeat. My audience lasted nearly an hour. There was a lot of talk about intrigues; and this matter again provided the King of England with reasons to praise His Majesty [the King of France]. The intervention of the mediators was not omitted; the King of England showed much satisfaction that it did not take place. And this prince said in a very agreeable manner that he had always thought it necessary to address France directly. He was persuaded that it was the surest way to peace, and that my trip in September had convinced him of the correctness of his opinion and his hopes²¹⁶." Ah, how these praises resound like a *Phew! Thank goodness!* of relief in the mouth of the English Sovereign. But this French debonairness did not prevent England from falling upon the French barely 10 years later, under the influence of its London Merchant

²¹⁵ 2 • This is, of course, Vergennes, who was in charge of foreign affairs in France. How to evaluate the praise of a King of England for an enemy who has just defeated and humiliated him? There is no doubt that an English Vergennes would have been beheaded by the same king for High Treason.

²¹⁶ • Doniol, Henri, *Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique*, Correspondance politique et documents, tome V, Imprimerie nationale, Paris, 1886. pp. 279-280. Bancroft George, Former Minister Plenipotentiary of the United States to the Courts of Paris and Berlin, translated and annotated by Count Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'Indépendance des États-Unis*, F. Vieweg, Libraire-Éditeur, Paris, 1876. Volume III, p. 55. Letter from Monsieur de Rayneval to Monsieur de Vergennes, London, January 24, 1783.

Diplomacy in the American Revolution

Lobbies, after having rallied all of Europe against its deadly enemy caught in the clutches of assassins like Robespierre and many others within the French Revolution. A unique opportunity to strangle this country!



CHAPTER 9

Human losses and consequences of this war. Length of wars. Reparations. Court dirty games. Fate of each of these countries.

The chronology of events that punctuates America's effort to free itself from England's embrace can undoubtedly be considered as a happy adventure for the balance of Europe and the world. Indeed, with the contribution of the American colonies, whose population doubled every quarter of century, England as a superpower, would probably have allowed the London Merchant Lobbies to transform Europe into a private "*hunting ground*" for consumers, as this country was already doing with its colonies, which had had no choice but to consume goods manufactured in England, without any possibility of exercising the slightest competition. Europe would undoubtedly have suffered the fate of India, which went from 23 % of the world economy at the beginning of its possession by England to 2% in 1948. As the British Historian Angus Maddison wrote, quoted by the British-Indian Historian Shashi Tharoor: "At the beginning of the eighteenth century, as the British historian (Maddison) has demonstrated, India's share of the world economy was 23 per cent, *as large as all of Europe put together*. By the time the British departed India, it had dropped to just over 3% of the world. The reason was simple: India was governed for the benefit of Britain. Britain's

economic rise for 200 years was financed by its depredations in India¹."

This was also the case in the Celtic countries of the British Isles (Wales, Ireland, Scotland, Cornwall)² which were, century after century, bled white of their demographic and economic vitality, to the benefit of England, hegemonic in this archipelago³. This is almost the case today (in 2010) since the USA has transformed Europe, through NATO, into a guarded *hunting ground* that can be spied on and robbed at will. Seen from the perspective of the 21st century, the United States has become a cheat state (precisely what it reproached England for at the time of Independence), by spying on its allies in order to steal their markets⁴.

But one cannot remake History, even if we are entitled to consider that if, in the 18th century, the United States had adopted German as its official language, the Hitler's adventure would have gone even further off the rails and changed the world one hundred and fifty years later, with the addition of a culturally Germanic America. That is why, when Jonathan R. Dull writes that "the American War failed to accomplish France's goal of weakening Britain permanently by ending its monopoly on American

¹ •From, *An Era of Darkness: the British Empire in India*, Aleph Book Company, New Delhi, India, 2016. Chapter 1, p.26.

² •Cornwall (Cornish) is the southwestern tip of the island of Great Britain. It is one of the eight Celtic nations of Europe along with Brittany, Scotland, Ireland, Wales, Isle of Man, Asturias and Galicia.

³ •Especially if we study in depth disasters such as: the Highland Clearances, in Scotland, as well as the famines caused by Ireland in the mid-nineteenth century.

⁴ •We remember the tapping of the telephones of European leaders and even Israeli president, as well as the forced cancellation of the purchase of French warships by Russia and by Australia.

trade⁵," it is clear that Dull did not sufficiently investigate the French strategy of that time, which was simply to *politically separate* the Thirteen Colonies from their mother country, because these colonies would transform England into a superpower that would destabilize the European and even the world balance, without equivalent until the Renaissance of the Great China in the 21th century.

Conversely, French diplomacy did not want England to be reduced to nothing because the French considered England's role as necessary in the balance of nations of the time.

The American Revolution War could certainly be considered as a *civil war*⁶, but Americans like to present it as a *Revolution*, the first Revolution of modern times. This gives them the primacy of Liberty over the colonialism demonized by modern times. Even if, basically, all countries of any importance have been constituted of "agglomerated colonies" which have been, in the long run, successfully assimilated. Gascony was reconquered from England by the French Army at the end of the Hundred Years' War, and the Gascon leaders who wished to remain "English" had their heads cut off, which left them little choice; Brittany, Normandy, Franche-Comté, Corsica, Alsace, French Flanders... were conquered by forced annexation and slowly digested by France, that is to say, *francized*, so that these "colonies" become provinces of France. Still, it was necessary this period of "colonization" to be long enough.

⁵ •Dull, Jonathan R., *The French Navy and American Independence; A Study of Arms and Diplomacy*, Princeton University Press, Princeton (New Jersey), 1975. pp. 340-341

⁶ •Although, ethnically speaking, the main thrust suggested that, among the small majority people, it was the Celts and Germans who wanted to get rid of the English. The rulers, on the other hand, were rather dominated by the English who constituted the rich class at the very beginning and who preferred to keep their property by changing allegiance.

In fact, the Thirteen Colonies constituted the first accession to independence of contemporary colonies. These hostilities lasted ten long years⁷, from 1773 to 1783. And it left such a mark on the minds of the English that they managed to stop using arms to oppose the desire for independence of their colonies who wanted to shake off the yoke of oppression⁸. And if the French waged wars in Indochina and Algeria, the British, pushed by the *think tanks*⁹ created by the merchant, aristocratic and financial London Lobbies¹⁰, immediately agreed to negotiate an economic agreement of the Commonwealth type with all the recalcitrant people who dreamed of freedom.



Like all wars of independence, the American Revolution was essentially a social revolt. The revolt of an ambitious bourgeoisie, subjected to an undemocratic taxation and to unjustified economic constraints. This well-to-do class, this wealthy class controlled the power, then pushed the small people to take arms. The insurrection was facilitated by the fact that the little people had accumulated heavy grudges against the central government. This is the pattern of all the wars of independence, of all the revolutions and particularly of the French Revolution which immediately followed in its wake.

In the Thirteen Colonies, the social structure consisted of two basic strata which resisted mixing as much as the Nobility and the Business class in France, or as oil and water in Nature. Oil symbolized the Americans of

⁷ ● 1773, Boston Tea Party, à 1783, Paix de Paris et de Versailles.

⁸ Exception: Rhodesian Bush War.

⁹ ● The term *think tank* (occult group of reflection and political pressure) was anachronistic at that time.

¹⁰ ● *The Secret Society of Cecil Rhodes, The Milner Group, The Round Table*, see Carroll Quigley, Professor of Foreign Service at Georgetown University: *The Anglo-American Establishment*, 1981.

English origin (50% of the total) and water the others, essentially the 20% of Celts (Scots, Welsh and Irish), the 7% of Germans background and the 20% of slaves (blacks or Panis Indians) who formed a separate class. All these ethnic elements, more or less considered with contempt by the mother country, did not mix, certainly, but they knew how to unite against England.

The ethnic layer of English or Anglican origin held the upper hand in the Thirteen Colonies, favored by ethnic nepotism and supported by discriminatory laws¹¹ and by the halo of national pride that is often felt by those who do not know history or whose history is a means to arbitrarily glorify themselves. The small people who took up arms came essentially from the lower, proletarian stratum of American society¹², the Celts (Scots, Irish, Welsh...) and Germans from the Holy Roman Empire. The armed struggle was thus generally carried out by these Celts, while the upper stratum of the English layer monopolized the positions of political and administrative leaders to control the new state.

Many of the poor English who had little to lose (small civil servants or breadwinners), revealed their true opposition to the Independence and offered themselves as informers, guides, soldiers or even "vigilantes". They ended up being brutalized and expelled. They had to exile. The English, planters (with their slaves), rich merchants,

¹¹ •In addition to the Fugitive Slave Act of 1793, the Indian Removal Act of 1830 (intended to force Indian tribes east of the Mississippi to emigrate to the western Mississippi), the anti-Catholic Test Act and the numerous discriminatory laws of each of the thirteen colonies: double taxation of the German-language press.

¹² •The adjective proletarian is not anachronistic, even if Marxist analysis was still far away at that time. The proletarians formed the poorest layer in the hierarchy of Roman citizens. Their only capital was their children: prōlētārius, ū, m. = who counts in the state only through his children. (from prōlēsis, f. = children, family, race, lineage, posterity). [Gaffiot F., Dictionnaire latin-français, Hachette, Paris, 1934.] In Britain, the Scots played more or less this role as suppliers of soldiers, to compensate for the refusal of the English population to fight in the open countryside.

and politicians, were finally the great beneficiaries of the American Revolution. This excessive schematization has the advantage of giving a simplifying sketch of the revolutionary sociology.

The French Revolution which was to burst six years later, followed the same process: bourgeois leaders, or even impoverished nobles, took up the cause of political agitation from behind their podiums and pulpit of propaganda, while the little people were content with the battlements of the barricades.

The French, who landed in America in July 1780, began fighting on June 26th, 1781, and ended up at Yorktown on October 19th, 1781, after a single campaign. In 14 weeks, the English army capitulated¹³. Some military leaders are known to blame their allies for the discredit of their defeats. Never have the Spanish and Portuguese been worse fighters than in the writings or under the pen of English military writers when they evoked, for example, the Peninsular Campaigns of the Duke of Wellington during the First French Empire.

The lies of the military leaders, intended to safeguard their vanity and that of their country, sometimes turned against them, plunging their enemy into hilarity. Thus, during the *War of the Asiento de Negros* (*War of Jenkins' Ear*) which served as an overture [opening] to the War of the Austrian Succession, "the honor of England was even doubly affected because its leaders had the bad idea to announce prematurely several victories against the

¹³ • Compare this to the intervention of the U.S. Army on European battlefields during the Great War. The United States declared war on the German Empire (Second Reich) in 1917 after the British intercepted the Zimmerman Telegram, in which the Germans proposed that Mexico declare war on the United States to recover certain states of the American Southwest wrested from Mexico. But in 1917, as the United States did not yet have an army capable of fighting a modern army (other than the Indians), the first American regiments did not begin fighting in Europe until the last months of the war, in the spring of 1918.

Spaniards that turned out to be defeats¹⁴. So, medals were struck in London; the King had also organized triumphal celebrations at great expense¹⁵. The King of Britain George II also lied by celebrating his flight from Dettin-gen¹⁶ by a *Te Deum* throughout England.

Military leaders do not hesitate to lie in order to clear their name of a mistake, of a defeat, or to support the morale of the population, as did the Propaganda Service of all the Armies of the world during World War II. During the Peace Negotiations of 1782-1783, Franklin wrote to Henry Laurens to tell him that all these lies were the work of "the war leaders and ministers of the belligerent powers, who, in order to sustain the courage of their people, represent their own situation under the most favorable colors, and that of the enemy under the worst. The result is that on both sides, *the people expect better conditions for peace than can't really be obtained*, and that they attribute this disappointment to treason. This is how the Peace of Utrecht¹⁷ and that of Aix-la-Chapelle, passed, in England,

¹⁴ • In particular, the Battle of Cartagena, capital of the Spanish colony of New Granada. This war of England against Spain was a complete disaster for England: only 600 of the 3,000 soldiers raised in the Thirteen Colonies survived. The Colonies then served as a reservoir of manpower for the English Army, in order to spare the citizens of England.

¹⁵ • Dictionnaire des batailles franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Succession d'Austria, Castex, Jean C Les Éditions P-O, Vancouver, 2011. p. 11 (Prolegomena).

¹⁶ • June 27, 1743, at the beginning of the War of the Austrian Succession. Marshal de Noailles succeeded in cornering the English army in a parade, without food. Taking advantage of the night, the English fled, abandoning the wounded and part of their artillery. Georges II ne voulut plus se risquer sur un champ de bataille après cela. Il présenta sa fuite comme une victoire et ordonna aux Anglais de la célébrer par des Te Deum. Encore aujourd'hui, les historiens anglais présentent cette fuite comme une victoire. [Castex, Jean-Claude, Dictionnaire des batailles franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Succession d'Autriche, Les Éditions P-O, Vancouver, 2011. pp.. 86-90.]

¹⁷ • The Peace of Utrecht ended the War of the Spanish Succession. Indeed, during this war, it was English gold that allowed England to buy regiments of German mercenaries and pay some to Austria and Holland. And it was the huge French bribe—not made up of gold, but of territories such as Acadia, Newfoundland, and Hudson Bay, as well as the monopoly of the slave trade to Spanish America—that Louis XIV gave to England, that allowed France to buy England's withdrawal from the anti-French coalition, and thus impose a Bourbon on the Spanish throne.

for having been influenced by French gold, and, in France, by English guineas. The last peace (the Treaty of Paris in 1763), *the most advantageous and glorious ever for Britain*, was, you may recall [Franklin tells us], violently decried, and those who negotiated it rudely insulted¹⁸," for they thought that England could have obtained even more."



In the realm of casualties, "more than 25,000 American Revolutionaries were killed on active military duty. 8,000 of them fell on the battlefields. The remaining 17,000 were victims of disease, including 8,000 to 12,000 who died of starvation and disease caused by the deplorable conditions of captivity in the British prison camps in the rotting docks of New York or Portsmouth.

The calculation of deaths by disease is undoubtedly underestimated; 2,500 Americans died while quartered at Valley Forge during the winter of 1777-1778 alone¹⁹." The number of Revolutionaries seriously wounded or disabled by the war was estimated in between 8,500 and 25,000. "The total calculation of American military losses 50,000" of which²⁰ the vast majority were Celts (Scots, Irish, Welsh) and Germans.

Approximately 170,000 sailors served in on sea during this war, in all the navies of the world, not simultaneously but successively because of a huge desertion rate. About 25 or 50% of them were forcibly enlisted; others were fishermen who weren't very willing. Nearly 20,000 died from the war, of which only 1,250 were killed in

¹⁸ ●Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Henry Laurens, May 25, 1782 (Passy), Private Correspondence, pp. 225-226

¹⁹ ●Burrows, Edwin G., *Patriots or Terrorists: The Lost Story of Revolutionary War POW's*, American Heritage, Oxford (USA), 2008.

²⁰ ●Shy, John. *A People Numerous and Armed: Reflections on the Military Struggle for American Independence*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1976. pp. 249-250.

action and 18,500 from disease. The deadliest disease was scurvy, because for reasons of economy the English High Command neglected to give citrus juice to sailors. According to the Scottish historian Piers Mackesy, 42,000 sailors deserted during the war, which represents almost a quarter of the sailors in the Royal Navy²¹.

| THE AMERICAN & ENGLISH LAND ARMIES during the American Revolution | | | |
|--|----------------|--------------------------|-----------------|
| ALLIES | Country popul. | Soldiers | % of population |
| French Canadians | 90,000 | 3,500 ^{note 22} | 3.88 |
| Hesse | 2,400,000 | 30,000 | 0.82 |
| American | 2,700,000 | 25,000 | 0.92% |
| Scottish | 3,000,000 | 7,200 | 0.24% |
| Irish | 3,600,000 | 7,200 | 0.20 |
| English | 9,000,000 | 3,600 | 0.04% |

However, the London Merchant Lobbies (closely merged with the ruling class of England, as well as with the Anglo-Protestant aristocracy, which was not dishonored when engaging in commerce, unlike the French aristocracy), the merchant Lobbies, then, felt only indifference for the misfortunes of the war and the heaps of killed, disabled, widows and orphans generated by their decisions and their commercial strategies. It was as if all these big financiers were incapable of feeling any empathy for those who suffer from their wars. The massive use of non-Englishmen: Scots, Irish and Germans, allowed the London populace not to go into a frenzy when the capital's magazines and newspapers reported heavy losses. The dead were buried, and the "*gueules-cassées*"[handicapped

²¹ ●Mackesy, Piers, *The War for America: 1775–1783*, University of Nebraska Press, 1993, pp. 6 et 176.

²² ●French Canadians fought in both armies: about 2,500 served as garrisons at Quebec, Montreal, Trois-Rivières and elsewhere; the Quebec garrison alone numbered 1,500 French Canadians. 3 to 400 men fought in the 1st French-Canadian Regiment of the American Army, and a 2nd regiment also had 700 soldiers.

veterans], turned into war-disabled people, were sent home abroad to the Holy Roman Germanic Empire, to distant Scotland, scorned Ireland, with a part of the back pay and a promise never kept getting the remainder. Let us recall the significant speech, already mentioned elsewhere, made by the Charles James Fox (who belonged to both the Upper Class and to the London Merchant Lobbies) in his speech to Parliament in 1781 to criticize the enormous British war loan: *"If a nation can be buoyed up by the excitement of war, the hopes of conquest, and the gambling chances of victory, without any corresponding increase of taxes, the game would be played with eager readiness ; the motives for hostilities would be lightly examined, and the distant bloodshed of battles would cause only a transient sorrow"*²³. This most inhuman text shows that the business-class in England did not care about the misfortunes of war, but only about the benefits that never reached the rank and files.



The German mercenaries of the British Army suffered losses of approximately 1,200 killed in action, while 6,354 died of various illnesses and accidents due to the war. In fact, only 16,000 German mercenaries returned to their native Holy Roman Germanic Empire. 5,500 chose to remain in the United States after the war for a variety of reasons. Many of them became American citizens after fighting against this country.

As for the American insurgents, they had only 18,000 to 25,000 inexperienced men, ill-equipped volunteer militiamen, half soldiers, half farmers, but a very high morale and a patriotic enthusiasm most inflamed to punish the English for the persecutions that they had undergone

²³ ●Characteristic extract already mentioned in chapter III. From Earl Russell, *The Life and Times of Charles James Fox*, Richard Bentley, Londres 1866. Vol.I, p.235.

in their birth countries (Scotland, Ireland), to the point that in the XIX century the American-Irish will form irregular bands (called "*the Fenians*") to launch raids on English Canada, between years 1860 and 1880. Their numbers were sometimes reduced down to 3,000 combat-capable men, especially after the French Army intervened or took over.

Insurgents had no Navy, except for a few ships donated or subsidized by the French, and had only a few well-trained and seasoned generals. It was the beginning of the US Navy. In several of the 13 colonies, a provisional and not universal Military Service was eventually imposed on all white men between the ages of 16 and 60. However, remained generally exempt from conscription the civil servants, clergy, Yale students and teachers, Native American students, Blacks and Métis. married men (marriage was then really in vogue).

In any case, it was more than the U.S. Army could equip without creating new taxes, because French aid was essentially swallowed up by politicians and civil servants. Thus, it was possible to escape the military service by paying 5 guineas; modest sum for the rich but too high for the poor. According to Jack P. Greene²⁴, the American people suffered 25,000 deaths during the American Revolution, from combats, disease, but also by violence between Royalists and American Republicans.

According to the American historian Simeon Thayer²⁵, the English residual forces —essentially German

²⁴ ●Greene, Jack P., *The American Revolution*, University Press, New York, 1987 ; quoted in Marienstras, E., *Révoltes et révolutions*, N. Wulf, 2005, p. 98

²⁵ ●Thayer, Simeon; Stone, Edwin Martin; Rhode Island Historical Society (1867). *The Invasion of Canada in 1775: Including the Journal of Captain Simeon Thayer*, describing the Perils and Sufferings of the Army Under Colonel Benedict Arnold, in Its March Through the Wilderness to Quebec. Providence, RI: Knowles, Anthony & Co. p. VII. p.209. Thayer was more of a soldier than a historian.

mercenaries and Scots— who guarded the various strongholds in the Thirteen Colonies and Canada, totaled only 700 professional soldiers at the time of the American invasion of 1775. This insignificant number was fortunately reinforced by 1,025 French-Canadian militiamen of strong fighting ability²⁶. In June 1776, 9,000 men (mainly German and Scottish) disembarked under the command of the Scotsman Charles Douglas and John Burgoyne to reinforce the French Canadians and the Indians²⁷. It was this army of Regular troops that was captured by the Americans at the Battle of Saratoga (September-October 1777).



Money is the lifeblood, the sinews of war. It is both the cause and the engine. The fabulous sums of money that circulate in government circles in wartime, and the laxity in surveillance, determined by feverishness and sometimes war hysteria, do not fail to provide tempting opportunities of concussion to all those who, "*under cover*", far from the battlefields, are the real war profiteers. The members of the *Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations*²⁸ who were in complete symbiosis with the English Parliamentarians and the Aristocrats, were the first beneficiaries of this war manna. Speaking of the British budget of North in 1781, Fox made a harsh criticism of it; and one of his charges was: "*To complete the iniquity of the transaction, a large portion of the loan was distributed among the political supporters of the Ministers*²⁹." Investing in the war was

²⁶ ●Smith, Justin H, *Our Struggle for the Fourteenth Colony*, vol 1. G.P. Putnam's Sons, New York, 1907. Vol.1, pp. 342– 3. Aussi Alden, John R (1969 (1989)). *A history of the American Revolution*. New York: Knopf.

²⁷ ●Ibidem. Vol.2, p. 430.

²⁸ ●In other words: the London lobbies organized in Royal Administration.

²⁹ ●Earl Russell, *The Life and Times of Charles James Fox*, Richard Bentley, London, 1866. Book I, p.237.

thus a very juicy privilege, provided that it was not our child who shed his blood on the battlefield.



The American historian Bemis³⁰ has calculated that the sums provided by France to America, from 1776 to 1783, amounted to 45,500,000 *French livres* (French pounds; that is to say approximately 8,000,000.00 American dollars of this time). After some difficulties, the United States extinguished all their financial debts to France during the French Revolution³¹. The last payment on the debt with Holland was made in 1809. Spain, which refused to sign an Alliance with the Thirteen Colonies out of respect for the monarchical institution, provided only about³² \$650,000.

However, when France fell into the turmoil of the French Revolution —beginning in 1789— the Americans found reasons not to pay the French and procrastinated in making the scheduled repayments. The French immediately thought that the Americans would take advantage of the convulsions of the French Revolution to get out of debt under various pretexts. The Americans did hesitate. But Benjamin Franklin was watching, he who was simply honest and had no ulterior motive, tried to find an invincible reason for making the Congressmen pay: "the fear not of the police, but of England. "Britain will, for a long time, wait for the opportunity to recover what it has lost... if we show negligence in paying our debts, ingratitude for those who have served and treated us with friendship... we shall be attacked with the prospect of greater success for

³⁰ •Yale professor, strong anglophile.

³¹ •Bemis, Samuel Flagg, *A diplomatic history of the United States*, Holt, New York, 1936. pp. 22-24, et pp. 93-97; Payment of the French loans to the United States, 1777-1795, in *Current history*, XXIII (1926): pp. 824-831.

³² •Ibidem. pp.24, 93 n. 4.

England... So let us not fall asleep in a dangerous security³³." In other words: *if we do not pay back our debts to the French, they will no longer come to free us from the English when the latter —seizing the opportunity— will rush in to enslave us again.* For France, this "powerful monarchy continues to be the friend of the United States. This friendship is of the greatest price for our safety. It must be carefully cultivated. Great Britain cannot console itself to have lost the empire which it exercised over us. This country still flatters itself sometimes to reconquer us one day. Events may increase its hopes and encourage some dangerous attempt. *A breakup between France and us, would infallibly bring the English back on our backs, and yet there are among our countrymen some fanatics who strive to weaken the ties that bind us to France!* Let us keep our good name by honoring our commitments, our credit, by fulfilling our contracts, our friends by showing them gratitude and friendship, for we do not know if we will soon need all their resources³⁴."

Events were there to bring the Americans back into the path of honesty, like a Briard his merino sheep: in 1814-1815, seeing France facing all of Europe fevered with English gold, following the usual strategy of the London Merchant Lobbies which paid all the countries that agreed to attack France on the European Continent a part of their war costs in the form of German mercenaries, the British tried to invade the United States through

³³ •Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p. 341 et seq. letter from Benjamin Franklin to Charles Thomson, Secretary of Congress, Passy, May 13, 1784.

³⁴ •Ibidem. pp. 340 and follow. letter from Benjamin Franklin to Samuel Mather, Passy, May 12, 1784.

Louisiana³⁵, which the Americans had just purchased from France. Their objective was, in the first instance, to seize Louisiana and Florida to create a bridgehead. They failed thanks to the Louisiana pirates—still French at heart—who did not hesitate to fight alongside the Americans despite English attempts to suborn them.

According to the same Franklin, France's aid, as of August 12th, 1782, amounted to "the exact figure of 18,000,000.00 French livres, without mentioning the Dutch loan that the King [of France] had guaranteed. I am sending Mr. Morris a copy of this act. If you read it, you will see in it the kindness of the King of France to us; it amounts to nearly \$2,000,000. If you add this sum to the gifts that the King has made to us on different occasions, it makes a total of \$12,000,000 at least, in return for which we are expected to be grateful and friendly. I hope that both will be eternal³⁶."

They were not; as soon as former plenipotentiary John Adams was president. He had been jealous of Benjamin Franklin, to whom the French attached more importance in Paris. His pride had suffered. He retaliated with hostilities against France as soon as the French abolished slavery in 1794. They refused French sailors the right to "make water" in their ports. They feared that the Liberty of the French, different from the American Liberty, would jeopardize the submission of the slaves in the United States.

But this generosity of France in granting the Americans millions to pursue the war, had induced the latter to persist in this war with England without seeking the least

³⁵ • See the four battles of New Orleans – December 24 and 28, 1814, and January 1 and 8, 1815 – in *Combats franco-anglais des Guerres du Premier Empire*, by JC Castex, Éditions P-O, Vancouver, 2013. pp. 329 to 390.

³⁶ • Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Robert R. Livingston, August 12, 1782 in *Passy. Correspondence*, p.284.

compromise, and trying to wrest more from their enemy. "We rely on the ability of France to continue the war in our favor, and to provide us with constant funds, and that this country may insist to obtain more advantages than the English would like to give us, and thus lose the opportunity of making peace, so necessary for all our friends³⁷."

In essence, the United States was in the same situation as the Third World countries during the Cold War of the 20th century. All those countries that the two blocs were trying to seduce, tear off, wrestle away and ally to themselves. Like children of divorce, they were all trying to obtain the greatest advantages from both sides, and were anxious that peace should dry up the generosity of the opposing blocks.



As for *reparations* for the damage done, the chief American negotiator had a ready-made demand for compensation: *Canada*. In a letter to his colleague John Adams, Benjamin Franklin recounted his meeting with the slave trader Oswald, representative of the *Council of Trade and Foreign Plantations in London*. This man was adorned for the occasion, as mentioned *above*, with the title of "*Commissioner of His Britannic Majesty*" by the London Government. Concerning the demands of the Merchant Lobbies: they themselves demanded reparations for their expelled Loyalists so as not to give any to the Americans. "I added that the cruel evils which they have inflicted on us by burning our cities, etc., would leave long traces of resentment. [Franklin added also] that the greatest benefits to English commerce could get from peace depended on reconciliation; that peace without reconciliation would probably not be lasting; that friends who had fallen

³⁷ ●Life and Writings of Benjamin Franklin, The Private Correspondence, Derby & Jackson, New York, 1859. Vol. I, p. 547

out were never better reconciled than when the aggressor offered to make reparation for the wrong he had committed in a moment of passion. And I [Benjamin Franklin] insinuated that if England voluntarily offered us Canada as indemnity, it might have a good effect. M. Oswald liked this idea very much, and said that England was too embarrassed in his finances to provide us with a pecuniary remedy, but that he [Oswald] would make every effort to provide us with a satisfaction of the kind I was indicating³⁸ In reality, the Lobbies' representative was willing to promise anything, even the moon, to regain the flavor and especially the benefits of American trade.

In fact, all the countries were heavily in debt in that year 1782. France, that its abysmal deficit would precipitate into the Révolution seven years later, was being solicited "again and again" by the United States whose Continental Congress, already drowned by the rich Bourgeoisie, refused to increase their own taxes.

Vergennes wrote to La Luzerne on November 23rd: "You are informed, Sir, of the requests of the Continental Congress to the King of France for pecuniary aid. They amount to no less than a loan of 20 million of our livres. This sum exceeds all proportions we can consider. However, His Majesty, wishing to give the United States a new proof of his friendship and of the interest he takes in their well-being, grants them a loan of *six million of our livres* for the year 1783, of which 600,000 livres will be advanced immediately to Mr. Franklin... I will not conceal from you, Sir, that this effort is heavy after five years of a war whose expenses have been and still are enormous, and

³⁸ • Letter from Benjamin Franklin to John Adams, Passy on April 20, 1782. Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790), p. 189.

that we are not assured of seeing end so soon³⁹." One will always find a cleverer or stronger person than oneself. England itself tried to play the card of "fraternal and eternal reconciliation" to try to avoid the inconvenience of defeat, and to prevent the Americans from being as voracious as the English had been against the French after the Seven Years' War.



In London, the Parliament was still burdened by the chronic corruption inherent in British parliamentary Government, a corruption fostered by the open play of Merchant Lobbies and the unchecked bribing of members of both Houses "*for electoral reasons*". Referring to Lord North's British budget of 1781, Charles Fox had criticized it. One of his rebukes was as follows: "The profit on the loan now proposed, in every way he had been able to take it, and subject to every probable contingency, was 900,000; and this large sum was in the hands of the Minister to be granted in *douceurs*⁴⁰ to the members of that House as compensation for the expenses of an election, or for any other purpose of corrupt influence which might suit their views."... [All this money] was given as a means of procuring and continuing a majority in the House of Commons upon every occasion, and to give strength and support to a bad administration⁴¹." The corruption was unashamedly denounced. Today, it is fully accepted in the U.S. Congress, the British Parliament, and, more covertly,

³⁹ ●Doniol, Henri, *Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique*, correspondance diplomatique et documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Letter from Vergennes to La Luzerne, 23 November 1782, vol. 5, p. 1 97 Versailles, letter no. 45 of 21 December 1782 (cipher).

⁴⁰ ●The English word *douceurs*, now obsolete, in the language of Shakespeare, meant *bribe, conciliatory gift, baksheesh, treats*.

⁴¹ ●Earl Russell, *The Life and Times of Charles James Fox*, Richard Bentley, London 1866. Vol.I, p.238. This text is available on *Internet Archives*.

in the European Parliament, under the name of *electoral participation*. Hypocrisy is a tribute to Virtue.

Since the War of the Spanish Succession, England has been trying to pay its public debt by a *National Lottery*, so that the London Merchant Lobbies would not be affected by any tax increase. Thus, thanks to this lottery, it was the little people of England, fond of gambling to dream of wealth, who would pay the bill for all these endless wars, which—if victorious and fruitful—benefited the Merchant Lobbies. In the same intervention concerning the North's budget, Fox attacked these *lotteries* intended to make up the deficit: "*The lottery is an unnecessary part of these douceur and ought to be omitted from every principle of policy and in regard for the morals of the people*⁴²." However, Fox's motion was defeated by 169 votes to 111. The Honorable Members of Parliament did not see what public morality had to do with business.

Among the expedients to pay off the public debt, invented by the London Merchant Lobbies, the *Sinking Fund*, held a privileged place. As the name implied, this technique was intended to "drown" the debt, which became a "cash cow" for the lobbies. This curious technique was created at the very beginning of the 18th century. The country was then burdened by a huge debt that nobody wanted to pay. The Parliament created the *Sinking Fund* in 1716, at the end of the War of the Spanish Succession. It was established by the English Minister of Finance⁴³ Robert Walpole. Its purpose was to evade the enormous debt of £55,000,000.00 sterling that the Merchant Lobbies had accumulated by their constant wars. Here is what this trick consisted: a modest special tax was imposed on the people

⁴² •Ibidem. p.239. "The lottery was an unnecessary part of the douceur, and ought to be omitted from every principle of policy and of regard for the morals of the people.

⁴³ •Lord of the Treasury and Chancellor of the Exchequer.

with the sole purpose of symbolically reducing the global debt. This reduction of the global debt reduced at the same time the annual interest. The amount saved was immediately swallowed up in the debt. If the interest was 2%, every time the government repaid £100, it reduced the interest by that many times £2. This repayment further reduced the debt. So, in theory, year after year, the debt would decrease and the *Sinking Fund* increased proportionately and accelerated the decline in the national debt. In fact, the purpose of this miracle fund—this "pixie powder or *perlimpinpin's powder*"—was more to forget the debt by letting people think they were doing something about it, than to pay it off at all.

It seems that the American lobbies copied the same formula to evade their debt at the end of the XX century, when the American State was taken hostage by the neo-conservative of the Reggan-Bush-Trump era. During the American War of Independence, it was the surviving soldiers—that is, those who had suffered the most—who were paid in "monkey money" with *Acknowledgments of Indebtedness*⁴⁴. Those bonds were not honored until much later when the state deemed that a satisfactory number of survivors had died of old age, wounds, or had misplaced their I.O.U.



Fate of the United States

Thus, the Thirteen Colonies won their independence by getting rid of England. As had been foreseen by French diplomats and probably European diplomats as a whole, the United States became for a century the most formidable power the earth had ever produced until the BRICS⁴⁵

⁴⁴ ● IOU (I Owe You).

⁴⁵ ● Brazil, Russia, India, China, South-Africa...

challenge its dominance and economic tyranny. If the English had removed the irritants designed to torment the Catholics and the Celts, and had democratically integrated these Thirteen Colonies by allowing each county to send elected representatives to the London Parliament, the "mayonnaise of assimilation" might have taken hold and England could have adopted the arrogant Habsburg motto by replacing *Austriae* by *Britannia*: AEIOU "*Austriae est imperare orbi universo*"⁴⁶. And even if the obedient vowels had been disturbed by the unusual presence of a consonant, the lobbying thugs would have been able to rule the whole universe. But the undemocratic aspect of England's behavior *taxing the American colonists without giving them representation* in the London Parliament was not the only point that offended the Thirteen Colonies. In total the Celts⁴⁷ represented in 1780, about 20% of the American population, but they provided $\frac{3}{4}$ of the soldiers in the military campaigns⁴⁸. The 50,000 Tory *loyalists*—that is, the only Englishmen who had the audacity to declare themselves in favor of England and who suffered the consequences: *tarring and feathering*—represented only 3.33% of the English group. The other opponents either hid, or pretended to be separatist to be spared, or they really were, like Benjamin Franklin (although his own son was pro-English).

⁴⁶ • "It is up to Austria to govern the whole universe."

⁴⁷ • Population of the United States in 1780, [estimated from 1790 ICP figuresS, [Research Inter University Consortium for Political and Social.] Total population: 2,786,744 including 1,497,090 English or 53.7% of the total. 538,984 Africans or 19.3%; 213,000 Irish-Scots [expression for *Protestant Scots* settled in Ireland to colonize the island] or 7.6%; 191,700 Germans or 6.9%; 106,500 Scots or 3.8%; 71,000 Dutch or 2.5%; 10,650 French Huguenots or 0.4%; 7,100 Welsh or 0.3%; 1,420 Swedes or 0.05; and finally 142,000 others or 5.09%.

⁴⁸ • In the year 2000 the declared Celts represent more than 14% of the American population.

If we except the loyalist Tories, open or hidden, the American people of all origins were immensely grateful for French aid. We must count the great number of towns that took the name of La Fayette, to be convinced of this. Louisville (Kentucky) evokes Louis XVI, and the Grasse River (New York) the admiral De Grasse, even if today, all the celebrations of Independence try to forget that French soldiers also died to liberate the American people from tyranny⁴⁹. On the other hand, it was the jealous and hateful politicians —American of English descent— who immediately set out to eliminate France from the landscape, for various reasons.

By September 1779, French diplomats began to realize that a group of English-rooted American politicians were preparing to get rid of the French as soon as their country would gain its independence or re-establish an arrangement with England. Vergennes wrote at the time: "Although Congress has testified on all occasions its attachment to the [Franco-American] Alliance as well as its resolution to faithfully fulfill all its duties, there are nevertheless several members who are not aware of these duties, or who seek to misinterpret them. One was even suspected of intending to lead the United States to disregard them. Mr. Gérard has explained himself on this subject with such force, energy and accuracy, that we should believe in the conversion of the most obstinate francophobe; but as it is not their spirit but their passions and their personal views which give them the impulse, it is more than probable that you will still find many followers of the perverse doctrine of Adams & Lee⁵⁰."

⁴⁹ •Such is the Anglo-Saxon "patriotism": the English want to give the impression that they were the great victors of Napoleon, and the Americans try to make people forget that it was the Russians who were the main victors of Nazi Germany.

⁵⁰ •Bancroft, George, Letter written at Versailles, by Vergennes to La Luzerne, 25 September 1779, vol. 3, pp. 279 et seq.

The violent Passy disputes between the American negotiators of Paris remained memorable in the anecdotal history of the American Revolution. The Continental Congress, anxious not to give too much power to one representative by hierarchizing positions, had simply sent four non-hierarchical leaders to avoid the problem of geographic origin: southern agricultural states, versus northern states which lived on fishing and timber, the fur industry having entirely moved to Canada since 1763. It was not until the following century for the textile industry to develop the north. But as Canadian children say: "*Too many chiefs is a recipe for discord.*" The Continental Congress was itself, like the American Legation in Paris, caught in the dilemma of geographic origin: the six northern New England states looked down upon the southern farm states⁵¹. All this was going to end in Civil War, 78 years later.

When John Adams arrived in Paris and saw that the French considered the glorious Benjamin Franklin⁵² as *the one and only* representative of the United States, he was consumed with a jealousy as ardent as Cain's in the Bible. To counteract this situation, which John Adams considered unfair, he pretended to consider himself as the most representative of the US plenipotentiaries in Europe, "no longer *beside* Benjamin Franklin, but *apart* from him, and, indeed, *above* him by all the height of the mission for which he has been morally mandated by Providence. Considering the correspondence Adams immediately started

⁵¹ • Izard resided in London in 1771 and moved to Paris in 1776. That same year the Continental Congress appointed him, from 1776 to 1779, Commissioner of the United States at the Court of Tuscany. Ralph Izard was a native of South Carolina, Franklin and John Adams of Massachusetts, brothers Richard Henry Lee, William Lee and Arthur Lee of Virginia. The latter Lee was a representative in Spain, and Silas Deane was from Connecticut..

⁵² • Franklin was well known in France for his work on electricity, lightning, lightning rods, dual-focus spectacle lenses....

on everything and almost daily with the President of the Continental Congress, it seems that he really believed that the foreign policy of the United States had now passed into his hands. John Adams, a "southerner" before the time, had been appointed by a group of Representatives secretly favorable to England (of which he was the leader), to counterbalance the firmness of Franklin, who was considered Anglophobic.

Self-appointed *True Representative of the United States in France*, he tried, in the fall of 1779, to offer a trade treaty to England, if the latter wished to conclude the Peace, and this *without the knowledge of France*⁵³. In fact, this was only the concretization of all the diplomatic fiddling of the English secret agents who had succeeded in confusing the Continental Congress itself.

Upon arriving on French soil, John Adams promptly sent to the French Secretary of State a copy of the credentials which had supposedly been conferred upon him by the Continental Congress, pretending to consider his appointment as a *transcendent occult mission*. "He added that his appointment was no more secret in America than those of Jay in Madrid or Franklin in France, that it was inevitably the same in England, so well that he should not be held responsible for its disclosure if it were to occur"⁵⁴.

When Vergennes learned that John Adams "had received the mission to propose a treaty of commerce to England, he replied that the time had not yet come to make this mission known, and he ordered him in the name of the King of France to wait until the Continental Congress had

⁵³ ●Marcel Trudel, p.236. We now know that he had been entrusted with this occult mission by the southern planters of English origin who were secretly opposed to the break with the motherland.

⁵⁴ ●Doniol, Henri, *History of France's involvement in the establishment of the United States of America, diplomatic correspondence and documents*, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. T.4.p.411

heard the objections of France. The Congress took note of these French protests and, on July 12th, 1781, cancelled John Adams' Commission. *Adams felt the opposition of France as the worst of personal insults. He wrote that his country had prostituted its honor by sacrificing its delegate, that Congress had capitulated to a French Minister! How can this stain be washed away? Can we cover this affair with a veil and think no more about it?* He will write again: "*I must affirm it with the most solemnity: I am convinced that the French policy has halted the progress of our cause in Europe, more than the British policy.*" Excessive words, concludes the Canadian historian; for France, after having sent millions to America, an army and two fleets, had the right to expect something in return⁵⁵.



It is easy to understand that John Adams then became *the worst enemy of France*. And when he was elected as second president of the United States, from 1797 to 1801, he showed such hostility to Revolutionary France that it cost him his re-election against the very Francophile Thomas Jefferson, who was supported by his pro-French Republican Party in Washington. Isn't said that hatred strikes mostly those who allow it to penetrate themselves? We have known for a long time that it is not the intellectual value that leads a candidate to the White House, but rather the support of the Financial Lobbies. And the latter much prefer *straw men* who are easier to maneuver⁵⁶. In the end, thanks to the grudge of this politician who considered his own honor similar to that of his country, the French Nation came back empty-handed after so many sacrifices. But

⁵⁵ • Marcel Trudel, *The American Revolution* (1775-1783), Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. pp. 236-237.

⁵⁶ • See in particular President Reagan and the Presidents Bushes.

they were used to it, throughout their diplomatic wars against a more devious England.

At Passy, the center of American diplomacy in France, the very insidious John Adams, who wanted to supplant Franklin, quickly ignited the most violent bickering between the various American representatives jealous of the scholar's prestige and anxious to wrestle shreds of power from him like hyenas on the prowl. Not having been able to reconnect with England, they were satisfied to throw disorder among the American representation in Paris.

On Adams' arrival, this antagonism of battlefield which reigned in Passy was already a few months old. It had originated, in January 1779, with a request from Ralf Izard, another southerner troublemaker, who had asked Franklin for his annual *emoluments*⁵⁷. He had five children and his wife was pregnant. However, he was very rich and owned many slaves in his country, but "his money was [he claimed] unavailable in South Carolina." In spite of all his excellent reasons, Franklin, harassed with many different demands, from interest on loans to the equipping and repairing of the vessels, refused him any salary. Moreover, the English having finally accepted an exchange protocol⁵⁸, Franklin wished to use French money to relieve these poor patriots who were half-starved and deprived of any help. This wealthy planter [Izard] only had to borrow from a bank to feed his large family. Less than a year before, Franklin had granted Izard what he considered "an extravagant sum of money" for his trip to Florence, a trip

⁵⁷ •His salary.

⁵⁸ •As explained above, the English starved the prisoners in their various prison camps; Franklin was also to organize monthly distributions of money to each prisoner in captivity in England from France and with the money of the French, to improve their ordinary. The release of prisoners of war did not yet make it possible to dispose of these sums since it was still necessary to meet their daily needs.

that the American Representative in Tuscany had never made. Franklin saw no good reason why the Continental Congress should have to take care of Izard's growing family. "You are a wealthy gentleman," he reminded the rice planter from South Carolina... Like the Lees, the Izards came from one of the most opulent families in the South. His income far exceeded Franklin's already substantial income... Due to the fact that neither William Lee was at the Viennese Court nor Izard at the Tuscan Court⁵⁹, he owed them nothing... Franklin therefore remained deaf to all their solicitations⁶⁰."

Needless to say, the two diplomats filed a complaint directly to the Continental Congress, accusing the man from the North, Franklin, of all evils, insolence, falsehood, and brutality. They accused the old man with the most perverse charges, and in particular that of constant malice.

On December 5th, 1778, the northern newspaper *PENNSYLVANIA GAZETTE* launched attacks on the Lee brothers. Deane, a great friend of Franklin's in France, accused the two Lees (Arthur and William) of "showing a "tenacious hatred of the French nation whose assistance we solicit." And he concluded with the far more serious accusation that "*the Lee brothers were working behind the scenes in favor of a pact with England, at the expense of France*"⁶¹!" This was very likely because most of the wealthy Tories of the Thirteen Colonies wore, for fear of

⁵⁹ •These two men had been appointed by the Continental Congress to represent the Thirteen Colonies in Vienna and Tuscany (Etruria). The Grand Duchy of Tuscany — capital Florence — was then a satellite state of the Holy Roman Empire, headed by Grand Duke Peter Leopold I of Habsburg-Lorraine. This Leopold I became in 1790 Emperor of the Romans until 1792 under the name of Leopold II.

⁶⁰ •All parties, i.e. the Lee and the Izard. From Schiff, Stacy, Winner of the Pulitzer Prize, *A Great Improvisation, Franklin, France, and The Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York (NY), 2005. p.196.

⁶¹ •Schiff, Stacy, Winner of the Pulitzer Prize, *A Great Improvisation, Franklin, France, and The Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York (NY), 2005. p.200

reprisals, a false mask of "Patriots". Deane's revelations inflamed the Continental Congress, that "*volatile body already hot with regional frictions*"⁶²."

As the *Hôtel de Valentino in Passy*, the Continental Congress itself became into a frenzy, a victim of its *parochialism between the Northern and Southern states*. The radical francophobic faction led by "Richard Henry Lee and Samuel Adams—the former was a most dazzling orator, and the second the most accomplished abuser of individual liberties—had long been full of suspicion of France"⁶³. Deane's denunciation only made this problem public. It was a war in the press and the *francophile* and *francophobic parties* were formed, including, of course, all the *clandestine Tories, devious*, who only expressed their opinion on the sly. These *political parties* continued to exist for years after the full independence was achieved.

Thomas Paine⁶⁴ of course defended Arthur Lee and divulged supposedly secret information, for example, that France had helped the colonists *long before* the conclusion of the official Franco-American Alliance. What everyone knew among the courts of Europe. But carried to the top by the Press, the news was considered as serious as if it had been discovered that the archbishop of Canterbury

⁶² • "This volatile body is already feverish with regionalist tensions." The northern states (poor fishermen and foresters) and those of the south (rich planters) despised and passionately jealoused each other. The Civil War, 80 years later, was aggravated by these regional rivalries. Many atrocities were inflicted for these absurd reasons.

⁶³ • Schiff, Stacy, Winner of the Pulitzer Prize, *A Great Improvisation, Franklin, France, and The Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York (NY), 2005. p.201.

⁶⁴ • Thomas Paine was an English-born opportunist. At the time of the French Revolution, he went to France, became a naturalized French citizen on August 26th, 1792, in order to take advantage of the disorder to be elected ten days later deputy of Pas de Calais to the National Convention. Needless to say, he then hid his francophobia with great care not wishing to see the guillotine from closer.

was cheating on his wife with Sophie-Charlotte of Mecklenburg-Strelitz, wife of George III of England⁶⁵.

The French representative, Gérard, had Paine excluded by the Continental Congress. On January 12th, 1779, the Congress passed a resolution that censured Paine and at the same time *unsmilingly* affirmed that, *against all appearances, the King of France had not offered a single button, a paper round, or a pair of underpants to the American cause before the signing of the Treaty of Military Alliance*. The English would no doubt have snickered behind their Channel if their minds had not been deeply preoccupied by the panic fear that was troubling them, the fear that the French would *demand Canada back* in spite of their signing on the Franco-American Treaty.

Enemies (Lee and Izard) also launched against Benjamin Franklin perfidious and fiendish slurs, rumors of corruption, depravity, and thousand other slanders almost as shocking as if he had been having a hidden affair with some little Parisian girls. And Franklin, who also knew how to cook up revenge with a touch of humor, reduced Ralph Izard to his single letter Z "a small, venomous, hissing snake (Z), obsessed with his last place as the red lantern in the alphabet, which he considered unacceptable given his condition and exceptional potential."

The news of this public dispute spread to all European countries, *thanks to "the BBC of the time,"* the English Secret Service, which wished to discredit the Americans by describing them as a bunch of incorrigible grouchers—almost "French", chronic rebels, allergic to any logical order— and not as balanced citizens. Those who have lived through this contemporary era (under the

⁶⁵ •The name of this Queen of England was first given to the Queen Charlotte Archipelago on the west coast of Canada. In 2010, this archipelago was renamed Haïda Gwai by the local Indians.

famous neoconservative trio Bush-Cheney-Rumsfeld), when the French fries in the Congressional cafeteria was renamed out of hatred for the French, and the Champagne nectar was incredibly spilled into the gutters, can imagine how far the vileness and triviality can go on the banks of the Potomac. It was a bit the impression we had, seeing ignorant fanatics destroying the museums of Mesopotamia because the gods they represented were even more chimerical than their own.

Benjamin Franklin explained their hatred by these words: "*My too great reputation and the general goodwill that these [French] people have for me, the respect they show me and even the compliments they pay me, all this frustrates these joyless men; joyless of course by their temperament, and by the dark and unpleasant passion of jealousy, anger, suspicion, envy and malice*⁶⁶."

Consequently, supporters of Jay and Adams would have argued that to show gratitude to the French would be a mark of the greatest folly⁶⁷. William Lee, who had represented the Continental Congress to the King of Prussia, was particularly opposed to any show of gratitude, and when he heard that there was talk of erecting in Philadelphia a statue with the following inscription: *Louis XVI, Liberator of the Americans*, he vigorously opposed it⁶⁸.

However, other American politicians such as Benjamin Franklin or Thomas Jefferson were less obtuse. Jared Sparks for his part wrote: "*In the history of the American*

⁶⁶ ●Schiff, Stacy, Winner of the Pulitzer Prize, *A Great Improvisation, Franklin, France, and The Birth of America*, Henry Holt & Co., New York (NY), 2005. p.207.

⁶⁷ ●Revolutionary diplomatic correspondence of the United States. 6 vol. édités par F. Wharton. Volume VI : p. 581, lettre de Franklin à R.R. Livingston, le 22 juillet 1783.

⁶⁸ ●Letters of William Lee, III: 938. However, a statue of this king was erected in Louisville, Kentucky, in 1966. Its cost was not paid by American citizens but by the inhabitants of Montpellier, France. In fact this statue of Achille Joseph Valois, who decorated Montpellier, had been partly broken by the Revolution of 1848. It was donated in 1966 to the city of Louisville.

Revolution, nothing is easier to demonstrate than the good faith of France in its dealings with the United States during the war and at the time of peace. France honored all her commitments; her role was always generous and often magnanimous."

Yet the abyss of debt threw the French into the throes of the Revolution. It led to the fall of the monarchy and the seizure of power by the bourgeoisie⁶⁹ which as usual pushed the little people on the barricades.

Not everyone in the United States liked France, and stealthy activities tried endlessly to break the fragile harmony: "I am extremely annoyed at the language that some Americans are using on this side of the water and on yours. This will compromise the good intelligence which has, until now, subsisted so happily between the Court of France and our country. It seems that there is a party among us which wishes to destroy it. If it succeeded, it would do us an irreparable harm. It is our firm union with France that gives us weight in England and the respect of Europe. If we were to break with France, under any pretext, England would begin again to trample us underfoot and all the peoples would despise us... You will hear much about an intercepted letter communicated to us by the English Ministry⁷⁰. The channel is suspect. The letter may have been altered or something added to it but let us suppose it is true; one cannot impute the reckless zeal or the error of a

⁶⁹ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye of the Institute of France and Historical Societies of New York and Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790); p. 394; Journal de Voyage vers les États-Unis via Le Havre, 1785

⁷⁰ •This letter was supposedly written by Mr. Barbé-Marbois, Secretary of France Embassy in the United States. It was about U.S. fisheries. Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Tome II (1775-1790) ; pp. 303-304. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Samuel Cooper, Passy, on 26 December 1782.

secretary of legation to a King who, in so many ways has always shown himself our faithful and firm ally."

●

What about the Canadians in all this?

The arrival in Canada and the Maritimes of the Tories or Refugees Royalists (numbering 50,000, compared to 80,000 French Canadians) although they represented only a tiny number of the American population of English origin (3.3%), upset the demographic balance of Canada⁷¹. Not only did they have to be equipped at the expense of French-Canadians, but these refugees, frustrated by their defeat, hated everything that reminded them of the French, showed themselves to be infinitely arrogant, to such an extent that, in 1920, degradation after degradation, KKK cells invaded Canada, like cancerous metastases, KKK cells intended to destroy these infamous "French papists."

Then, with all danger removed from the Americans, England resumed its attempts to stifle the Canadian people. In the face of threats, the *Quebec Act* of 1774 had enlarged the Province of Quebec. With the threatening vultures gone, the *Constitutional Act* of 1791 *cut it in two* to create Ontario for the benefit of American refugees⁷². Looking at the fate of the Métis-French in the West, the Catholics in Ireland and the Highlanders in Scotland, Canadians were able to consider in 1870 and 1885 what would have happened to them had they been less

⁷¹ ●The consequences are always difficult to measure. Thus, when Quebec fell in 1759, there were fireworks in Boston to celebrate the fall of papism. What Bostonians did not know was that 75 years later hundreds of thousands of papists would pour from Ireland and Quebec to New England as immigrants, so much so that the anti-papists, disgusted, would flee these Catholics, move to the West Coast and found new Salem, Portland, Albany

⁷² ●Ontario is called Upper Canada and Quebec Lower Canada, which already shows the petty depreciative intent of the colonial government. While Quebec was downstream compared to Ontario, it was higher in latitude.

numerous and especially if the United States had not been there, as an intimidation for England. Had the French wished Canada to be a threat to the United States? Just as well, it was the Americans who remained intimidating to the English and allowed the French-Canadians to survive as an original nation.

Canadians had to endure two World Wars, totally alien to their people, and 100,000 (40,000+ 60,000) were killed for the benefit of England; because the Conscription⁷³ which was *not* mandatory in England was in Canada and the rate of exposure of Canadians to enemy fire was greater than for English troops: 10.8% of mobilized Canadians were killed compared to only 6.46% of English⁷⁴.

Finally, while the French had maneuvered to ensure that the English presence in Canada would neutralize American power by keeping it at bay, and that, on balance, the two nations (Canada and the US) would neutralize each other, those who benefited most from this balance of terror were the French-Canadians. Indeed, thanks to the intimidation of the Americans, they never suffered the excesses, bullying, dehumanization, that the English exercised on the Catholics of Ireland, Scotland and even England.

[

⁷³ • General and mass Conscription.

⁷⁴ • England - Total population in 1914: 36,070,492 - Citizens mobilized: 4,003,834 - Percentage mobilized: 11.1% - Number of killed: 218,676 - Percentage of killed among mobilized: 5.4% - Canada - Total population in 1914: 7,200,000 - Mobilized citizens: 620,000 - Percentage mobilized: 8.6% - Number killed: 66,944 - Percentage of killed among mobilized: 6.4% - Ireland - Total population in 1914: 4,300,000 - Mobilized citizens: 210,000 - Percentage mobilized: 4.88% - Number of Killed: 49,400 - Percentage of killed among mobilized: 23.52% - Scotland - Total population in 1914: 4,748,167 - Mobilized citizens: 527,000 - Percentage mobilized: 11.09% - Number of killed: 147,000 - Percentage of killed among mobilized: 27.89% - Wales - Total population in 1914: 1,200,000 - Citizens mobilized: 133,200 - Percentage mobilized: 11.1% - Number of killed: 40,000 - Percentage of killed among the mobilized: 30.03%

What about France?

The war was not quite over when the deafening roar resumed in earnest in the Versailles swamp. The distribution of the royal prizes was mainly to noble officers: "General officers, junior officers and soldiers of the *French Expeditionary Force* received titles, pensions, promotion or honors⁷⁵". But favoritism and nepotism still held sway in the House of France, which was on the verge of collapsing. The death of Monsieur de Maurepas, protector of the *Legion de Lauzun* who had returned from the American campaign, left his protégé, Lauzun, in a complete disgrace. The Legion was totally forgotten in the distribution of honors and pensions. If the Court of England was a den of shopkeepers and swindlers, the Court of France had really remained a basket of vipers. This injustice perhaps influenced Lauzun (who became Duc de Gontaut-Biron), 10 years later, when the royal authority was under attack and threatened by The Revolutionaries, to become general-in-chief of a republican army and to crush in blood the royalist Vendéens, manipulated by the emigrated nobility, and armed by the English. This did not prevent him from dying on the guillotine when the French Revolution became paranoïd and *ate its own children*.



Faced with the negative comments poured out on France for its action, most of the time insinuated by English diplomacy *inventor of disinformation*, Franklin, who discerned well in the French their ingenuous Don Quixote angle—some people said *foolishness*—, wrote that they are "truly a generous nation, in love with glory, and especially proud of protecting the oppressed. The Nobility who still

⁷⁵ • Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-83*, Philadelphia, 2 vol., 1891-1895. *Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-1783*. p.211 de la version française.

ruled in this country had little admiration for commerce. To tell the French that their trade will benefit from our success, and that it is in their interest to help us, is tantamount to saying: "Help us and we will not be obliged to you!" Our people have sometimes used this inadequate and unseemly language; it has not produced the best effect⁷⁶."

The intervention of France was crucial in cutting the umbilical cord between the Thirteen Colonies and their mother country, despite some American historians who wanted to minimize the usefulness of the French intervention and to magnify their own national role. France's role, they claimed, was "very limited because French troops only intervened directly in the last year. Indeed, thanks to Rochambeau's Army, the British Army was forced to surrender in *three and a half months*⁷⁷. This is like minimizing the role of America in the two World Wars, arguing that American soldiers only really fought on the European battlefields from June to November 1918, *i.e.* for five and

⁷⁶ •The Private Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary from the United States of America at the Court of France, and for the Treaty of Peace and Independence with Great Britain, &c., comprising a Series of Letters on Miscellaneous, literary, and Political Subjects written between the Years 1753 and 1790 illustrating the Memoirs of his Public and Private Life and developing the Secret History of his Political Transactions and Negotiations, published from the Originals, by his grandson William Temple Franklin, in two Volumes, Second Edition with Additions, Printed for Henry Colburn, London, 1817. Vol. II, pp. 85 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Robert R. Livingston, U.S. Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs from 1781 to 1783. The letter was written in Passy on March 4, 1782. France "is really a generous nation, fond of glory, and particularly that of protecting the oppressed. Trade is not the admiration of the noblesse, who always govern here. Telling them their commerce will be advantaged by our success, and that it is their interest to help us, seems as much as to say, help us and we shall not be obliged to you. Such indiscreet and improper language has been sometimes held here by some of our people and produced no good effects."

⁷⁷ •The French, who landed in July 1780, began fighting on 26 June 1781 and ended at Yorktown on 19 October 1781. In 3 and a half months the English army capitulated. The United States Congress declared war on Germany on April 6, 1917. But the Americans did not yet have a real army to fight the Germans, except for the cavalry regiments intended to fight the Indians. The landing of recruits began on June 13, 1917, in Boulogne-sur-Mer. During the German offensives of spring 1918, the first available American units were engaged. The U.S. Army fought from June 1918 to November.

a half months, and that during the Second World War, they had only landed in 1944, the year before last, and more specifically to avoid that the Europeans did remain entirely under the control of international Communism as the Soviets was about to overrun Berlin. The German army was, in any case, collapsing under the blows of the Russians. But the role of the French Army during the American War of Independence was probably more important than the action of the Americans during World War II. It tilted the victory on the right side while in 1944-1945, the Wehrmacht collapsing before the Red Army.

English historians, in order to minimize the humiliation of their country's defeat, believe today that England without allies was not only facing the French, but also Spain and the United Provinces. In fact, Spain and Holland provided only money, not actual military aid. England itself benefited from Dutch money. Regarding Spain, Franklin wrote to the Comte de Vergennes in February 1781: "In America, there were high hopes that we should obtain from Spain important subsidies. But this hope has been disappointed. The forces which Spain maintains in our seas have been employed in seizing small forts in Florida, without being of any direct help to the United States. On the other hand, the long delay of this Spanish Court in acceding to the treaty of commerce seems to indicate that it has little desire to link up with us. So that in order to obtain a fruitful friendship and the relief which are so necessary to us in the present situation, we can only count on France⁷⁸."

⁷⁸ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p.114 et seq. Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Charles Gravier, comte de Vergennes (1717-1787) who was the Minister of Foreign Affairs of the King of France, Louis XVI. This letter was written at Passy, Benjamin Franklin's residence in France, on February 13, 1781.

France, according to these same English historians who sneer snidely, *did not gain anything from this war but an enormous deficit which has precipitated it into the Revolution*. This is quite true in the short term; except that the strategic mission that French diplomacy had set for itself was not at all to replace England as a trading partner with the United States. If the purpose of the rank-and-file French citizen was to fight against tyranny, the goal of the French diplomat was to detach the Thirteen Colonies from their English motherland's Lobbies, to prevent the latter from becoming a superpower that no human coalition could face in the future. Time has proven French diplomats to be right and it is curious to note that English historians refuse to allude to this reality which still burns their self-esteem.

By aggravating the poverty and crisis of conscience of the French people, the American War of Independence was the ultimate convulsion which precipitated France into revolutionary madness: "What was most remarkable at the time when the French intervened in the war, it is that, at the Court as in the city, among the great as among the bourgeois, among the military as well as among the financiers, everyone fixed a sympathetic attention to the cause of the American Insurgents. It was a singular time that presented such contrasts in opinions, in tastes and in manners."

In spite of everything, the obvious signs of decadence struck the attention of those who took the trouble to observe the state of the French society. One saw then "abbots write licentious tales, prelates seeking ministries, military officers occupying themselves with philosophy and literature. One spoke about morals in the boudoirs, of democracy among the Aristocrats, of independence in the camps. The Royal Court applauded republican maxims of

Voltaire's Brutus, and the Absolute Monarch who reigned in this country finally embraced the cause of a people revolted against its King. This disorder in the ideas and in the manners, this social disorganization, were the signs of a transformation to which the American war were to give a vigorous impulse⁷⁹."

This appalling disorder was taking place amidst a distressing moral poverty. In a letter to George Whatley, Franklin mentioned at this time a phenomenon as terrible as the huge cohort of 250,000 legal abortions. 250,000 legal abortions that today plague France every year for the price of the sacrosanct freedom to welcome or to reject a child. This long crowd of death row inmates represents every year cities like Longueuil in Quebec or Rennes in Brittany. Shocked by the waste that the French were making of their children, already in the 18th century, Franklin wrote⁸⁰: "I refer you to your STATEMENT OF CHILDREN RECEIVED AT THE HOSPICE FOR ABANDONED-CHILDREN IN PARIS, since 1741 and up to 1755. I have added the following years, up to 1770. I could not obtain those which followed this time. I have noted in the margin the progressive increase, *i.e.* how from only one child out of ten thrown in charge of the public, one arrived at *one child out of three*! Fifteen years have passed since the last report, and probably that the number of foundlings today [in 1785] amounts to half of the half of the births⁸¹. Is it acceptable to encourage this monstrous lack of natural affection? A surgeon I met excused the women of Paris by saying seriously that *they could not because*, he said, *they have no nipples*. He assured me that this was a fact and

⁷⁹ ● Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-83*, Philadelphia, 2 vol., 1891-1895. *Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-1783*. p. 213 de la version française.

⁸⁰ ● And the 20,000 who mourn the Province of Quebec every year.

⁸¹ ● While it was one in 3 at the beginning of this period!

urged me to observe how flat their breasts were... May this fashion cease to send to the *Abandoned Children Service*, children as soon as they are born by noticing that "the King is in a better state than their parents to take care of them." I have it on good authority that nine tenths of these unfortunate children die soon in this Service, and it is said that it is a great relief for the hospice because otherwise its resources would not be sufficient. With the exception of a few good people of whom I have just spoken, and *the crowd* that has recourse to the *Abandoned Children Service*, the practice here is to take nannies from the countryside, where they take and raise the children... Some days, they [the nannies] come by troops to Paris to take the children. We often meet them on the roads, bands of nannies returning to the neighboring villages, each one carrying an infant in their arms. But the parents who are human enough to take this course, are not always in a position to bear the costs. The prisons of Paris are filled with unfortunate fathers and unfortunate mothers detained for "*months of nursing*"... I wish success to the new project of helping the poor who keep their children at home, because I believe that there are few or no nanny that are worth a true mother, and that if the parents did not immediately remove their children, they would begin to love them after a few days⁸²."

Such was the moral and material poverty of the French Nation at the very moment when they were setting themselves up as supporters and sponsors for the Americans. The movement of depopulation in France only increased, to such an extent that France went from being the

⁸² • Without a doubt, this surgeon was more of a barber than a surgeon. Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin,, annotated by Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de New-York et de Massachusetts, Librairie Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. Volume II (1775-1790); p.376 et seq. letter from Benjamin Franklin to George Whatley, Passy, May 23, 1785.

most populated country in Europe in 1783 to the least populated in 1945, and only the massive arrival of African immigrants restored its lost fertility.

The American Revolution had created such a stagnation, such an abysmal pit in the budget of France that it accelerated the outbreak of the French Revolution. And there was no question of *taxing the rich*, loaded by scandalous privileges, to heal this wound. As early as February 1788, there were signs that the Revolution was brewing. Franklin wrote from his distant America: "I am grieved to learn that there is internal trouble in the country I love. I hope that some good will come from it and that all will end without disaster⁸³." A year after, the French plunged into the hell of the Révolution, and two years later Benjamin Franklin went himself to join, not the hell, but the paradise and the Beyond which had so fascinated him. On November 13th, 1789, he wrote to David Hartley, his English friend: "I sincerely pray to God that this crisis may end happily for the King and the Nation⁸⁴. And on December: "The convulsions from which France suffers are accompanied by painful circumstances. But if this crisis assures France its future freedom and a good Constitution, the enjoyment of these two benefits, for a few years, will largely compensate for the evils that their acquisition will have cost. God grant that not only the love of Liberty, but a perfect knowledge of Human Rights, will win over all the nations of the earth, so that a philosopher may cry out when he sets foot anywhere on earth: "*This is my homeland*⁸⁵!"

⁸³ • Ibidem. p. 461; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Monsieur Le Vieillard, Philadelphia, February 12, 1788. Benjamin Franklin to Englishman David Hartley, in Philadelphia on December 4, 1789.

⁸⁴ • Ibidem. p. 504; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Monsieur Le Roy, Philadelphia, November 13, 1789.

⁸⁵ • Ibid. pp. 505-506; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Englishman David Hartley, Philadelphia, December 4, 1789.

He had only 4 ½ months to live, and he remained in bed because the "stones" forbade him to sit. He had to dictate his texts, and when the pain became too excruciating, he took opium, the same opium that the *British East India Co.* was mass-producing in its Bengal colony, to sell it to the whole world, including the United States in the form of an alcoholic drug (*laudanum*). It was the very company that had poured the last drop of *oil on the fire* of the American Revolution by seeking to dispose of its huge stocks of overtaxed tea, purchased from China and accumulated in its London warehouses. *Business is business!*

If the Americans who loved France were not happy to see the Revolution break out, the English on the other hand rubbed their hands, because, far from feeling the slightest gratitude for the generosity of France which had left them Canada, they dreamed only of revenge, destruction, and knew that a weakened France would be more vulnerable and that they might be able to destroy her. *Délenda est Gallia!* To this, Franklin replied to the Englishman Alexander Small: "You tell me that the French Government is well punished for the treason of which it was guilty towards England, by sending us relief. You could have noticed also that the English Government had been punished for its treason against France, for having sent help to the Corsicans and to have seized French ships in full peace and without prior declaration of war⁸⁶." Indeed, the Corsicans—deceived that the English Government had appointed an English Governor-General in their island to integrate this island into their empire, and not a Corsican, whereas Paoli would have liked this honor for himself—the Corsicans, therefore, had finally kicked out the English from their island.

⁸⁶ •Correspondence of Benjamin Franklin, Volume II (1775-1790); p. 503; Letter from Benjamin Franklin to Englishman Alexander Small, Philadelphia, November 5, 1789.



Yet the *overly disinterested* strategy of French diplomacy did not please everyone. Vergennes had to face detractors, and some historians believe that he invented new, less candid intentions, in order to save his own face. These pseudo intentions are part of a certain *Mémoire justificatif* that speaks at length about the importance of "never losing sight of the restitution of Canada to France." This text, supposedly written by Vergennes during the American Revolution, advocated the very opposite of the policy which he faithfully followed. Either it was a justification by the French politician to make it appear that he was against the abandonment of Canada and the faithful people who inhabited it, or it was, more likely, a document forged by English diplomats intended to frighten the Americans and force them to fall in line with imperial obedience, and at the same time to frighten the French about the giant they would soon have to face. No doubt, the present war is favorable to France, because it makes an advantageous diversion, and exhausts the forces of England. But we must also look at the consequences of this event, and if at this moment our colonies take advantage of the division between the English, the United Provinces of America, after having shaken off the yoke of the metropolis, will be in a position to make law to France and Spain in all America, and they will invade their possessions at the time when these two crowns think least of it⁸⁷."

A clue seems to indicate that this document is indeed the work of counterfeiters bribed by the English services. As usual, they cannot help naming the Thirteen States by

⁸⁷ ●Charles Gravier, comte de Vergennes et Ministre de Louis XVI, *Mémoire historique et politique sur la Louisiane, avec d'un Précis de la vie de ce Ministre et suivi d'autres Mémoires sur l'Indoustan [Hindoustan], Saint-Domingue, la Corse et la Guyane*, Chez Lepetit jeune, Librairie, Paris 1802 ou An X. pp. 26 et 28.

the noun *Provinces*. The word *State* seemed to burn their lips whereas the Independents wanted to hear no more of the word *province* which vassalized them to the hated England. The aim was to create panic among the French population about the future aims of the powerful nation who was being born. We can see from this that the techniques of *inversion of the truth*, used by the Nazis and the Soviets were not born in Moscow or Berlin but in London.

Whatever it was, and in spite of this English disinformation, Vergennes advised King Louis XVI, in 1784, that "the power of France should be used not to extra territory, but rather to maintain the public order of Europe, and to prevent the destruction of the different powers which form the equilibrium of Europe⁸⁸." Thus, was born the *World Gendarme Syndrome* from which the Americans, and even more so the French, are suffering at the beginning of this 21st century⁸⁹. And historian Jonathan Dull concludes that Vergennes' work in preserving peace and stability in Europe is "the basis on which this man should be honored⁹⁰."

American professor Lawrence S. Kaplan, who falsely saw in France's strategy a *commercial objective*, concluded that the success of French policy at the time of the American War was *illusory*: "It was clear that this great assumption, the one which seemed to follow logically

⁸⁸ •Quoted by historian Jonathan Dull in *The French Navy and American Independence; A Study of Arms and Diplomacy*, Princeton University Press, Princeton, New Jersey, 1975. p.340. The segment in italics was not highlighted in the original text. This text, quoted by Dull is taken from the Archives du Ministère des Affaires étrangères, Mémoires et Documents, France, volume 587: pp. 207-225, Letter from Vergennes to Louis of 29 March 1784.

⁸⁹ •See the Right of Intervention put forward by the French doctor and politician Bernard Kouchner.

⁹⁰ •Dull, Jonathan R., *The French Navy and American Independence ; A Study of Arms and Diplomacy*, Princeton University Press, Princeton (New Jersey), 1975. p.340 : "Vergennes' part in the maintenance of European peace and stability is the basis upon which he should be honored"

from this project (plan), was manifestly erroneous, namely *that Great Britain depended upon her monopoly of American trade to feed her strength and prosperity. Deprived of her colonies, Britain's position in the balance of power should have been fundamentally altered. It was not*⁹¹." Kaplan believed that France's goal was to *weaken* England when that was not the case. Rather, it was a desire to prevent England from becoming a superpower by remaining united with its American colonies⁹².

In the knowledge that England had always sought to hinder economic development in its colonies's economic development in order to whip up its own, one can guess that the world would have remained enslaved to London Merchant Lobbies (like India was). This forced parturition in which France played "in a dispassionate way"⁹³ the role of midwife and Rochambeau of forceps, was thus a success. After the separation, the Americans, as expected, became the world's leading first superpower (for a century), although they too are led by their economic lobbies of unlimited greed.

As for the rapid growth of the young American giant, the reality exceeded the hopes, or rather the fears, of the

⁹¹ ●Kaplan, Lawrence Samuel, "The Diplomacy of the American Revolution: the Perspective from France." *Reviews in American History*, The Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore (Maryland), 1976. Vol. 4. ; No 3 (september 1976), p. 389. It is clear that before he died in 2020, Kaplan must have realized that England had lost its strength by losing its Empire.

⁹² ●The United States reached a population of 76 million in 1900, 152 million in 1950, 275 million in 2000. The outlook is between 400 and 500 million in 2050. [Sources: U.S. Census Bureau, Population Division, *Interim State Population Projections*, 2005.] It can be said that, generally speaking, this American population doubled every 25 years until the Second World War, that is to say roughly, until the advent of the birth control pill and legal abortion. Without these two dams, the United States would have reached 320,000,000 inhabitants in 1963; in 1988— 640,000,000; in 2013— 1,280,000,000; in 2038— 2,560,000,000, and finally in 2063—5,120,000,000 inhabitants.

⁹³ ●According to American historian Dull, "France helped the United States *dispassionately*." Dull, Jonathan R. *The French Navy and American Independence: A Study of Arms and Diplomacy 1774–1787*, Princeton University Press, Princeton, N.J., Princeton, 1975.

European powers. Until 1770, France remained the most populous country in Europe with twenty-five million inhabitants, and the United States a demographic dwarf with 2,780,000 inhabitants. It took a century for the United States to reach demographic equality with France. In 1870, the two countries had 38 million inhabitants, while Germany had already surpassed France with 40 million. That year, the German Empire (led by Prussia) succeeded in defeating France, a task that until then had required a coalition of European states. The page of the dominant France was now over. The English, now fearful of the new Germanic imperialism, allied themselves with France to face Germany (Great War of 1914-1918), especially since it was no longer question for England to spill German blood to defend its Merchant Lobbies. Henceforth the Nepalese Gurkhas offered their own blood for the English people. If it took 90 years for the United States to equal the 38 million French, it took them 30 years to double the population of France. In 1900, while France was still languishing at 38 million, the United States reached 76 million. Thirty years later, in 1930, the Americans tripled (39 against 123,000,000); they quadrupled in 1960 (46 against 179,000,000), and quintupled in the year 2000 (60.5 versus 281,000,000). In 2020, 335 millions!

Like an Islamic kamikaze who blows himself up for his amphigoric ideal, France has renounced its destiny as a great nation⁹⁴ by sacrificing the Canadian people so that the European and world balance is not too disturbed. For peace was then only the by-product of the European balance. But peace can hardly be controlled indefinitely, because, as Bernanos said, "*peace is too beautiful a girl, married to a man too old who cannot honor her, and who*

⁹⁴ •By voluntarily giving up not only Canada but also Louisiana, to speak only of these territories.

knows that one day she will take to the sea without drawing the slightest curtsy to him."

●

What about England?

According to the Victorian historian, George Trevelyan, "King George III was determined never to recognize the independence of the Americans, and to punish their disobedience by the indefinite prolongation of that war which promised to be eternal⁹⁵." This shows just how much thousands of dead, widows and orphans, and the misfortunes of the war, tormented his conscience less than the dishonor of losing face and to sully his reign by this humiliating defeat. In History, this was indeed a royal behavior. The King "wanted" to keep the rebels harassed, anxious and poor, until the day when by a natural and inevitable evolution, discontent and disappointment would be converted into penitence and remorse."

◆

The Memorandum that Vergennes will give to Comte d'Adhémar in 1783 (that is, when England had definitely signed away all control over the Thirteen Colonies which had become the United States of America) also addresses the theme of England's *jealousy* of France, a subject that is still burning through the centuries: "There exists between France and England a jealous point which could easily excite on both sides of the movements of vivacity of mood, it is the America. It is natural that the King [of France] should seek to profit of a revolution which is his work, as it is in the interest of Great Britain, on the one hand, not to lose the commerce of America as it has lost its sovereignty, on the other hand, to form with her former subjects, some political connections which could replace

⁹⁵ ●Trevelyan, George (1912). *George the Third and Charles Fox: The Concluding Part of the American Revolution*, Longmans Green., New York, vol. 1 p. 4.

to a certain extent those which they have broken. This matter will require the greatest vigilance on behalf of the Comte d'Adhémar⁹⁶."

Sent to London as ambassador of France from 1783 to 1787, the Nîmes native Jean Balthazar d'Adhémar de Montfalcon will thus receive after the defeat of England the mission to console and to reassure the English, whose jealousy was as keen —it still is, moreover— as that of a deceived wife, and to show them that the French had not tried to force the Americans away from the English. They left them free to choose their partners and even to trade with England if they wanted to. *The only thing that changed was the removal of the ban on trading with anyone other than England, which wanted to make its colonies as private hunting grounds that were not even allowed to compete with the mother country.*

One can imagine that Adhémar's mission was very delicate, totally uncomfortable even, because it took place after a war which had strongly humiliated England. This nation usually so skillful to "get its chestnuts out of the fire by other peoples," and so "accustomed, for nearly a century to reap the benefits of its allies, [that it] will find it difficult to familiarize itself with its present situation. This Nation will hardly forget that this situation is the work of France, and it will affect England especially in the confidence the King [of France] has been able to inspire in all the Powers of Europe by his justice, his moderation and by the wisdom of his conduct. These different motives, combined with the jealousy that England naturally feels with

⁹⁶ •Mémoire pour servir d'instruction au sieur comte d'Adhémar, maréchal des camps et Armées du roi, premier Écuyer de Madame Élisabeth de France, allant en Angleterre en titre d'ambassadeur de Sa Majesté [Louis XVI], the original is in the Archives du Ministère des Affaires Étrangères, Correspondance Politique, Angleterre, Supplement volume 14, fol 360, dated April 25, 1783. Quoted by Vaucher, p. 517.

regard to France, seems to render the rapprochement of the two Royal Courts extremely difficult⁹⁷."



Master in the subtle art of diplomacy, thanks to her great power of corruption due to the famous gold guineas of the Bank of England, Britain will soon pull itself together, reclaiming its usual role of standard-bearer, of leader, to harm the commercial competition, and to unite the whole of Europe against France during the long wars of the Revolution followed by the Napoleonic Empire. Far from feeling any gratitude for France, which had refused to strip this country of its wealth as England had done to France at the end of the Seven Years' War, and which, as a result, had allowed this nation to keep not only Canada but the right to fish on the Grand Banks of Newfoundland, George III of England, full of resentment for this humiliation, was not going to delay to stir up this coalition to seek vengeance against this abhorred France. "What irritated George III most, was the obligation to again count and discuss with this France that the brave French revolutionaries had almost succeeded in bleeding dry⁹⁸. But in England it was not the King who decided on the war. It was the London Merchant Lobbies, for England is essentially comparable to the merchant nation that was Carthage. And the Treaty of Amiens, paradoxically, "by putting down the arms back in racks and shelves, had just rekindled a commercial war.

⁹⁷ ●Mémoire pour servir d'instruction au sieur comte d'Adhémar, maréchal des camps et Armées du roi, premier Écuyer de Madame Élizabeth de France, allant en Angleterre en titre d'ambassadeur de Sa Majesté [Louis XVI], the original is in the Archives du Ministère des Affaires Étrangères, Correspondance Politique, Angleterre, Supplement volume 14, fol 360, dated April 25, 1783. Quoted by Vaucher, pp. 514-515.

⁹⁸ ●Damamme, Jean-Claude, Les soldats de la Grande Armée, Éditions Perrin, Paris 1998. p. 20. L'Hexagone n'était pas parfait.

Peace established an unfortunate competition, and all the more dangerous because French industry and commerce, revived by the silence of the weapons and encouraged by the First Consul, were going to take a rise which, on the other side of the Channel, would justify⁹⁹ a war. Thus, the London Marchant Lobbies were to seek a pretext for a new war that would last 20 years. To this end, they would refuse to return Malta to its owner, *the Order of Malta*, and, for good measure, illegally seize several French merchant ships in order to provoke the French and reignite the powder keg of war. As always, the state of war was more profitable than peace for the blood-drinking London Merchant Lobbies.



Over the years, after casting a final glow like a supernova when Victoria of Hanover became Empress of India in the nineteenth century, England reduced its sails in the Twentieth Century to take on the appearance of a simple client-state of the United States. In the 21st century, after leaving the European Union, this country will probably end up, sooner or later, as the 51st American state. Already, when Queen Victoria began her reign, the English monarchy was at its worst; the Hanoverian Dynasty had been discredited by the madness¹⁰⁰ of George III and the pranks of his two sons and successors, George IV and William IV, the latter having procreated at least 10 known illegitimate children and a multitude not recognized. The English society was suffering from painful mutations generated by the Industrial Revolution. In London, it was common knowledge that a quarter of the women were prostitutes; suffrage, not yet universal, was reserved for the property

⁹⁹ ●Ibidem. p. 22.

¹⁰⁰ ●Let us also remember that the loss of the Thirteen Colonies was not *unrelated* to the late madness of George III.

class. But what is certain is that from this War of Independence of its first colony, England learned a lesson; it learned to be prudent. As soon as one of its colonies began to show signs of freedom, England preferred to get along with them and maintain a good commercial link within the Commonwealth. France, on the other hand, not yet in the same humiliation, engaged in several useless colonial wars (Indochina, Algeria).

But the London Merchant Lobbies —a murky conglomerate of shady financiers and selfish cunning traders— never admit defeat, because they can fight without risking their lives. They enjoy these wars —these chess games— which can only fatten their golden calf. Not only their children do not shed their blood but these financiers provide the equipment, the weapons, the ammunition to all the combatants, which represents a considerable market. To console themselves for the loss of the Thirteen Colonies, and, after having tried in vain to reconquer them (in 1812 and in 1815), the London Merchant Lobbies, bulimic, were going to colonize a good part of Africa, Asia and Oceania. In 1857, the British East India Co. unable to control the Cipayan Revolt¹⁰¹, sold to the British government the whole of the Indian territories, which were beginning to rebel. From then on, Queen Victoria could be crowned Empress of India, marking the apotheosis of England as a supernova, the acme of the British Empire.

In France, Napoleon III even became the eager auxiliary of England by pouring French blood in profusion for the profit of the English Imperialism and to the Glory of his friend Victoria the Good¹⁰². Thus, the French unduly

¹⁰¹ •While in Canada, the British Hudson Bay Co., itself unable to control the French-Métis of the Red River, whom it exploited outrageously, sold its immense territory to Canada for a gigantic sum of money.

¹⁰² •This is the nickname that appears on some statues of Queen Victoria and in particular on the one erected in Stanley Park in Vancouver.

participated in two bloody wars¹⁰³, under insignificant pretexts amplified and dramatized by the Press to stir up and unleash the catholic Lobbies of France who still held the top position in the Nation: the Second Opium War and the Crimean War¹⁰⁴. But all these imperial dreams of grandeur were to be beaten back again by the two World Wars, a real Baroud du Désespoir (War of Despair) of Germany, which seemed to wish to dominate the world or resign itself to die. All these wars of attrition were going to ruin imperial England, decimate Europe and make it lose its ascendancy in the world.



But it is always in crises that men of action and leaders reveal themselves. Before reaching this fateful twentieth century, great and wealthy English Lobbyists had a premonition of the coming downfall of their country and tried to invent an antidote to remedy it and save England from the imperial decadence of which Greece, Rome, Carthage had previously been the victims. Towards the end of the nineteenth century, therefore, English lobbyists and aristocrats seeing that the British Empire was necessarily going to end, like all the world's empires had come to an end after a few years of hegemony, created clandestine *think tanks*, secret societies called *The Cecil Bloc*, or *The Secret Society of Cecil Rhodes*, *Milner's Kindergarten*, *Milner Group*, *The Round Table*, *The Times Crowd*, *The*

¹⁰³ ● 2nd Opium War. French pretext: a missionary priest was killed in China. Crimea War. French pretext: the orthodox Church does not respect the catholic Church in Jerusalem.

¹⁰⁴ ● The pretext for the Crimean War was that the Slavic Orthodox clergy of Jerusalem were creating difficulties at the Holy Places. For the Second Opium War, it was the murder of a French missionary in China. In fact, England, always short of fighters to impose the decisions of its lobbies, asked for the help of Napoleon III who provided it with an army of 300,000 French soldiers, to fight in the Crimea alongside a "British" army of 95,000 soldiers. The French, who were entitled to the front lines in all the fighting, suffered losses of nearly 100,000 killed, and the "English" (91% mercenaries), 22,000 killed including 20,000 of disease. A fool's bargain!

Rhodes Crowd, The Chatham House Crowd, The All Souls Group, The Cliveden Set... They also annexed to their occult movements newspapers such as *The Times*, *The Quarterly Review*, famous Universities (Oxford and others) and institutes like the *Royal Institute of International Affairs* in which the international policy of England and the training of its diplomats were set. They also added bankers, *the Bank of England*, which remained a private institution until the end of the Second World War, not to mention the financier Viscount Astor who controlled a long series of banks, as well as the financier Rothchild, whose secret networks ensured the cooperation of the major democracies. All these people financed all the underground activities of the *think tanks* anxious to see the United States¹⁰⁵ join forces with those of England under the name of the *Anglo-Saxon World*, whose outdated adjective was brought back into fashion in this modern sense. The efforts of these secret organizations were focused on *the need to counteract the decline and perpetuate the greatness of their nation* through a new organization that would retain most of the advantages of the Empire without the disadvantages. This was called *the Commonwealth*. But one might as well want to stop the Great March of Time to freeze the beauty, the youth or the vivacity of the spirit under the corrupting attacks of decadence and decrepitude. The jewels of the Empire, on the other hand, the former Thirteen Colonies which became the United States of America, to which the inconsolable English refused obstinately to give up. It was obvious that England would no longer succeed, by force, recovering their Thirteen Colonies which had become 48 States henceforth powerfully united, the clandestine lobbies thus tried to join them by

¹⁰⁵ •Population of the United States in 1914, 75 million, France 39 million and Great Britain 41 million.

an alliance which wanted to be fraternal. *If you can't beat them, join them!* All these *think tanks* —*occult neo-imperialist organizations based on nationalism, finance and world domination*— tried to create justifications for the existence of an innovative form of British Empire, the future *Commonwealth*. Those justifications were based on more acceptable arguments of Morality, of Union in the interest of Civilization, Liberty, Eternal Peace, Fraternity, Common Resources, integrity, moral values, universal English language, colonial success, supposed invincibility....

Convince the different nations of the Commonwealth and the rest of Humanity would not be easy as England had used and abused its discretionary power to muzzle and prohibit economic development in the various entities of the British Empire, restrictive laws, prohibiting the right of the colonies to compete with the Metropole¹⁰⁶. As for the so-called "moral values", one should not have looked too closely, for in South Africa and several other British colonies (especially the Northern and Southern Rhodesias), were at the same time displayed vile racial apartheid, without the slightest recrimination from England. It was not until the 1960s before London frowned under the criticism of the rest of Europe. And then, it was necessary to forget the massive production of (opium) by the British East India Co. in its colony of Bengal; also forget the two terrible Opium Wars that followed with the support of the Royal Navy in order to force China to import English drugs to balance English trade balance with

¹⁰⁶ •The noun *think tank* is of course anachronistic for the time. We use it for clarity. The first and initiator was the famous colonialist Cecil Rhodes, but many other Englishmen accompanied and followed this founder: Lord Milner, Lord Selborne, Sir Patrick Duncan, Field Marshal Jan Smuts, Lord Lothian, Lord Brand, the Bank of England, the best universities of the Gentry,... to name only the main ones. (Carroll Quigley, *The Anglo-American Establishment*, Books in Focus, New York NY, 1981, Chapter First.

China¹⁰⁷, as well as the horrific ethno-religious cleansing of the Catholics of Ireland, the extermination of the Beothuk of Newfoundland and the Aborigines of Tasmania; and finally, the famous Test Acts created to terrorize the Catholics in the British Empire and reduce them to the state of subhuman¹⁰⁸. There was many reasons to doubt the so called Moral Values thus claimed by the Anglo-Saxon World.



One of the first achievements of these think tanks was created under the name of the *Rhodes Trust for Education*, a tool whose initial aim was to train young imperialists who were to serve as forceps for the birth of the famous British Commonwealth of Nations. England, finally stripped of its colonies, threatened to become as fragile and derisory as Austria without its Austro-Hungarian Empire. According to the theories of Charles Darwin that *only the strongest would survive*¹⁰⁹, it was necessary to regroup to stand up for themselves. As far as France was concerned this country had been the driving force in the loss of the Thirteen Colonies by England. The behavior that England adopted towards this country was of two kinds. France's indulgence, and benevolence had avoided to England in 1783 the inconveniences that defeated nations must undergo. The Americans wanted to inflict the ultimate punishment (for example take Canada from them and deny England the Newfoundland Fisheries)¹¹⁰. France was able to partially soften the rigors of defeat for England. But it

¹⁰⁷ • England imported millions of tons of Chinese tea but China refused English opium to balance the English trade balance. The First Opium War in 1840 forced China to import English drugs.

¹⁰⁸ • Like the Lacedaemonians versus the Spartans.

¹⁰⁹ • These theories were at the origin of Hitler's madness.

¹¹⁰ • The United States wanted to expel England from its other North American colonies: Canada, Newfoundland, Nova Scotia, and the Grand Banks of Newfoundland. As we have seen elsewhere in this book, France opposed it, directly or indirectly.

did not soften the ineffable resentment and the jealous acrimony of England with regard to France.

The French could believe in a lightening of the situation when England joined France at the end of the nineteenth century, for fear of Germany's imperialism. But it was not a gratuitous return in grace. The objective (the payback) was the wish that France would serve as the first line of defense and *as glacis of security* on the European continent¹¹¹. Thus, after W.W. II, by a brutal about-face and a total absence of recognition or simply of empathy towards a country bruised by four years of war, England immediately turned against France, as soon as the sound of Germanic boots seemed to fade away.

It was therefore in accordance with this strategy¹¹² that, at the end of World War I, [according to the Historian Carroll Quigley] English diplomacy tried to favor Germany not only to frustrate France of the fruit of its total victory but also with the aim of "obliging" Germany towards UK. England feared that France would gain too much power and too much prestige by a victory over a much more populated country¹¹³. It was for this specific reason that, in the hope that the two nations (Germany and England), hereditary enemies of France since the distant medieval times, would make common cause against the

¹¹¹ • Throughout the war, England refused to impose general and total conscription on the English people despite pressure from the French High Command on the English Government. The Expeditionary Force from England (BEF) was thus reduced to its simplest expression and replaced by Canadian, Scottish, Irish, Indian, Australian, New Zealand, South African troops... On the other hand, British troops were sent to Turkey to destabilize the Ottoman Empire whose oil-bearing regions (Iraq, Iran, Kuwait, Arabia, Abu Dhabi, Qatar, Oman, Ajman, Dubai, Fujairah, Ras al Khaimah, um al Qaiwain.) galvanized the attention and greed of London lobbies. Cunning as merchants, *they would carve up these territories by grouping many oil wells in tiny, vulnerable countries, which would force them to put themselves under the protection of the English.*

¹¹² • Strategy that consisted of turning against its hereditary French enemy, an idea still very polarizing for its London Merchant Lobbies and *think tanks*.

¹¹³ • In 1914, Greater Germany had a total population of 75,000,000, compared with 39,000,000 in France.

latter, that, a few years later, Hitler initially expressed the hope that the British would join his ranks in 1940. It was only the obstinacy of Churchill, who was more concerned with respecting the principles of ethics, rules hardly compatible with those advocated by the lobbyist think tanks, that avoided such a betrayal. But who is not my friend is my enemy; hatred that resulted among the Nazis was implacable, and it took the form of this speech by the German Reichminister Richard Walther Darré, in Berlin in 1940: "As soon as we have beaten England we will destroy you, English, for good. The able-bodied men and women between 16 and 45 years old will be sent as slaves on the continent. The old and the weak will be exterminated. All the men remaining as slaves in England will be sterilized. One or two million young women of the Nordic type will be sent to a number of *breeding centers* where, inseminated for 10 to 12 years by selected German males, they will be able to produce each year Nordic offsprings who will be raised as Germans. These children will form the future British population. They will be partly educated in Germany and only those meeting the Nazi criteria will be allowed to return to England for permanent residence. The others will be sterilized and will join the groups in Germany. Thus, within a generation or two, the British will have disappeared¹¹⁴."

Such a speech further anchored Churchill and the British in their determination to resist Hitler to the bitter end, and to destroy Germany by unbearably horrific

¹¹⁴ •The SS Obergruppenführer Richard Walther Darré, born in 1895 in Argentina from a German father and a German-Swedish mother. He died in Germany in 1953 after 7 years in prison.. He was one of the main Nazi theorists of the Blut und Boden (Blood & Land) ideology. Reichsleiter of the Nazi Party, he was, from 1931 to 1938, head of the Office of Race and Settlement (RuSHA) of the Schutzstaffel, and, from 1933 to 1942, Minister of Agriculture and Food of the Third Reich.

bombing raids, some details of which have been described in the *appendix*.

In 1919, during the peace talks, it was therefore with the aim to pursue this strategy of diplomatic seduction that the English think tank called the *Milner Group*¹¹⁵ and opposed penalizing Germany too severely for having caused the Great War by pushing Austria-Hungary to intransigence with Serbia. Carroll Quigley, a member in good standing of these think tanks, will clearly confirm the assertion that the British Milner Group lobbies opposed France who wanted to force Germany to pay *reparations for war damages* (to France).

This behavior of the British negotiators, secretly members of the Milner *think tank*¹¹⁶ was motivated by two very different reasons: *first*, Germany could, thanks to massive investments from Anglo-Saxon countries, once again become a pillar of the capitalistic world system. It was thus necessary to prevent that France would not weaken Germany by its aggressive and punitive *reparations*. But *the ultimate objective of the English Marchant Lobbies in scuttling punitive reparations was very clearly explained in the same book by Carroll Quigley*¹¹⁷. This

¹¹⁵ ●The aims of the Cecil Bloc (which was one of these *think tanks*) was to influence English politics in the political, educational and journalistic fields. The edition was to be supervised so that only historical works flattering to English patriotism could be published. Even today publishers do not accept critical works on the History of England of the last two centuries. In education, the most gifted children of the Establishment were to receive scholarships from founder Cecil Rhodes, and marriages were to strengthen the bonds between families in this milieu. In the political field, politicians trained within the Think Tank were to infiltrate the successive governments of the United Kingdom and the various countries within the Empire which was to prepare to transform itself into a Commonwealth in order to perpetuate the influence of England.

¹¹⁶ ●According to Professor Quigley.

¹¹⁷ ●"Blindness to the real situation in Germany was also encouraged from another point of view... Roughly, this point of view advocated a British foreign policy based on the old Balance-of-Power system. Under that old system which Britain had followed since 1500, Britain should support the second strongest power (Austria until the War of the Austrian Succession then Prussia) on the Continent against the strongest power (France), to prevent the latter from obtaining supremacy on the Continent "and thus

strategy was designed to lower France and to neutralize this country by using¹¹⁸ Germany according to the usual system of the Balance of Powers destined to benefit hegemonically to England alone. The last strategic aspect elaborated by the Milner think tank, which would allow England to acquire an enormous power, was the psychological re-annexation (so to speak) of America in order to exorcise and definitively erase the defeat of 1783 and the loss of the Thirteen Colonies.

It was necessary to create by all means an *Anglo-Saxon Fraternity* so strong and so effective that a single call for help from the English would bring about an immediate and enthusiastic reaction from the Americans¹¹⁹; and *vice versa*. Propaganda *steles* were erected (like the Peace Arch on the Canada-America border), propaganda posters were distributed in both countries, a symbolic *reunion of the two flags* encouraged on all occasions¹²⁰, a frequent presentation of the doings of the English *royal family*; and, when disputes and disagreements arose, they were to be settled *as quickly as possible* so that no trace of disagreement remained. An ephemeral victory for the Milner Group was the adoption by the American Army of the Brodie (English) helmet, which represented American and

allow England to win stronger than France. Secondly, "*Their aim became the double one of keeping Germany in the fold of redeemed sinners by concessions, and of using this revived and purified Germany against Russia and France.*" Carroll Quigley, *The Anglo-American Establishment*, Books in Focus, New York NY, 1981. p.195.

¹¹⁸ ●We remember British Petroleum which, to save a \$500,000 security coin, polluted the entire Gulf of Mexico and the South Coast of the United States. Numerous television commercials announced that \$150,000,000 had been invested in the United States while a large part had been swallowed up in commercials.

¹¹⁹ ●We have verified this during the various wars created by American lobbies: Iraq, Afghanistan... The British followed even when the causes were created from scratch by the Americans (Weapons of Mass Destruction).

¹²⁰ ●This proximity of the two national flags (USA and United Kingdom) is still highlighted in this twenty-first century

British soldiers as brothers in arms. But it was soon replaced at the end of the Great War¹²¹.

The Anglo-American separation of 1783 had to be repaired forever in order to grant England unlimited power to subjugate any nation on earth to its economic domination ; the ultimate dream of a merchant vis-à-vis his competitors! The Milner *think tank* would have liked a military alliance as symbiotic as possible with the United States: "In 1918, the Group believed that a permanent system of cooperation between England and the United States could be a possible consequence of this war. This was the great dream of Rhodes, Milner, Lothian and Curtis. They would have sacrificed anything within reason. But when it became obvious in 1920 that the United States had no intention of endorsing this policy, and that, on the contrary, it was reverting to its original prewar isolationism, the bitterness of disillusionment, within the Milner Group, was immeasurable¹²². Needless to mention that, in 1940, when the Nazi discourse included the English nation in the criminal projects (to the point of wanting to make them slaves in the same way as the Slavs), some *think tankers* must have regretted to have wanted to collaborate and *to have thwarted the will of the French to penalize Germany after the First World War*. But the Anglo-Americans made up for it with their destructive bombing on Hitler's homeland.

All in all, it was only a postponement because the lobbies never get discouraged. Except that, slowly, insensibly in the irresistible march of time, the low birth rate of

¹²¹ ●The English helmet Brodie (nicknamed *salatschüssel* –salad bowl by German soldiers) was adopted by Portugal, Norway and the United States outside the British Empire. The Adrian helmet (French) was adopted by Russia and then the USSR, Belgium, Brazil, China, Greece, Japan, Luxembourg, Morocco, Peru, Poland, Mexico, Yugoslavia, Romania, Spain, Siam, and even partially by the United States during an initial period.

¹²² ●Carroll Quigley, *The Anglo-American Establishment*, Books in Focus, New York NY, 1981. p.196.

the Anglo-Saxon fraction, made that the demographic structure of their society tended implacably towards a Spanishization of the country. It was *the revenge of the cradles* for the Hispanics and particularly for the Mexicans who had had immense territories taken away from them by the United States.

However, the political and economic London Lobbies were not to be counted on to give up the exploitation of the British Empire because it was no longer possible for them to prohibit the members of the British Commonwealth from competing economically against the industry of England, as was once the case. Nowadays, the London Merchant Lobbies have replaced this prohibition with the creation of lucrative *tax havens* through which the exploitation of the peoples of the Commonwealth (and other countries) can be perpetuated with impunity and in perfect secret. THE GUARDIAN newspaper in England admitted it on November 7th, 2013, (by the pen of *Simon Bowers*), under the title of "ENGLAND RULES THE WORLD OF TAX HAVENS. "England, in collaboration with Her Majesty's Overseas Territories and the Crown Dependencies, remains "by far the most important player in the global system of offshore tax havens and banking secrecy." The Queen will be informed tomorrow by a letter from tax experts and activists... None of these overseas territories or Crown Dependencies maintain a sufficiently transparent public register of the offshore companies, trusts and foundations they host," wrote Christensen, who began his investigation in the early 1990^s. Christensen began his career in Jersey in the trust industry. Later he became an economic advisor to the island government before resigning to become an activist for tax transparency... No one can get any information about the holders of these accounts... The victims of this hidden system are, among many others,

two billion citizens of the Commonwealth," Christensen denounced to the Queen. A recent study on 33 African countries revealed that they have lost more than one trillion in capital flight since the 1970s, including \$640 billion of which came from the 16 countries of the African Commonwealth. *These losses exceed the external debts of these 33 countries which total only 190 billion...*" The TJN (Tax Justice Network) concluded that: "The UK is the most important player in the financial secrecy world¹²³."

Indeed, in violation of international treaties, the UK controls tax havens in all parts of the world: Jersey, Guernsey, Isle of Man, City of London, Gibraltar, British Cayman Island, British Virgin Islands,... "The victims of this secret English banking system would number two billion in the Commonwealth alone." The English government has always refused to intervene because it is made up of members who benefit from the system; we remember that the Prime Minister Cameron himself had an account in the Cayman Islands. The African system of multinationals deprives the population of any benefit. Every liter of oil, every ton of ore is sold at production cost to a pseudo-sub-sidiary based in a British tax haven, which resells them at the international price, pocketing all the added value. Thus, the aptly named *Commonwealth* (like *The Empire* in

¹²³ •THE GUARDIAN titels "Britain rules the world of tax havens, "Britain, in partnership with Her Majesty's overseas territories and crown dependencies, remains by far the most important part of the global offshore system of tax havens and secrecy jurisdictions, the Queen will be told tomorrow in a letter from tax experts and campaigners. None of the overseas territories or crown dependencies operate a properly transparent public register of offshore companies, trusts and foundations, writes Christensen, who in his early career worked in the trust industry on Jersey, later being appointed economic adviser to the island's government before quitting to become a tax and transparency campaigner. "None obtain information on beneficial ownership and make this publicly available. The victims of this secrecy include, among others, 2 billion Commonwealth citizens... A recent study of 33 African countries found that they lost over \$1tr in capital flight since the 1970s, of which \$640bn came from 16 Commonwealth countries. These losses dwarf the external debts of 'just' \$190bn for the 33 countries...The UK is the most important player in the financial secrecy world."

the past) remains an inexhaustible source of wealth which allows Great Britain (though almost devoid of manufacturing industries) to retain one of the world's six leading positions.



—APPENDIX—

W.G. Sebald, *Luftkrieg und Literature*, French translation by Patrick Charbonneau, *De la destruction comme élément d'histoire naturelle*, Actes Sud, Paris, 2004. ISBN 2-7427-4614-5, p.36 and following.

The Royal Air Force, supported by the American 8th Air Fleet, carried out a series of raids on Hamburg. The aim of the operation, called "Gomorrhah", was to destroy the city by reducing it to ashes. During the raid, which took place during the night of July 28th and started at one o'clock in the morning, ten thousand tons of explosive and incendiary bombs were dropped on the densely populated urban area of Hamburg, on the eastern bank of the Elbe... First, all the windows and doors were smashed and torn out of their frames with two tons of explosive bombs. Then small incendiary charges set fire to the attics, while at the same time, bombs weighing up to thirty pounds penetrated to the lower floors. In a few minutes, over an area of some twenty square kilometers, fires had broken out everywhere, and they joined up so quickly that a quarter of an hour after the first bombs were dropped, the entire airspace, as far as the eye could see, was an ocean of flames. And five minutes later, at twenty past one, an inferno arose, of an intensity that no one would have believed possible until then. The fire, which was now rising two thousand meters into the sky, sucked up oxygen with such power that the displaced air had the force of a hurricane and rustled like gigantic organs, all the registers of which would have been simultaneously activated. The fire raged

for three hours. At its peak, the storm tore off the roofs and gables, tossed beams and billboards into the air, uprooted trees, and swept people away, turning them into living torches... and left the building to rot. Those who had fled their refuge sank, with grotesque contortions, into the melted asphalt that burst into large bubbles. No one knows exactly how many perished during this night, nor how many lost their minds before death seized them... (The next day) Lined up end to end, two hundred kilometers of buildings were completely destroyed. Everywhere lay horribly mutilated bodies. On some, still burned flames of phosphorus, others were crimson or brown, burned and reduced to a third of their natural size. They were swimming in pools of their own fat already partially congealed..."



**Alphabetical Index to the French-English Battles of
the American Revolution.**

Battle of Arcate, August-November 1780
Naval Battle of Chesapeake Bay, September 5, 1781
Naval Battle of Chesapeake Bay, March 16, 1781
Battle of Bednore, mid-April-May 3, 1783
Battle of Chilambrun, June 16, 1781
Battle of Conanicut, July 31, 1778
Battle of Conjeveram, September 9, 1780
Battle of La Dominique, September 6, 1778
Battle of Dominica, April 17, 1780
Battle of Flamborough Head, September 23, 1779
Battle of Fort St. George and Ri-chemont, July 4, 1779
Battle of Fort Prince-of-Wales, August 9, 1782
Battle of Fort-de-L'Hopital, July 2-3, 1779
Battle of Fort-Royal, April 29, 1781
Battle of Fort-Royal, winter 1779.
Battle of Fort-York of Hudson Bay, Aug. 20, 1782
Battle of Gibraltar, June 24, 1779 - Feb. 7, 1783
Battle of Gloucester, Sept. 28 - Oct. 19, 1781
Battle of Gondelour, June 18, 1783
Battle of Gondelour, June 1, 1781
Battle of Gondelour June 13-30, 1783
Battle of Grenada, naval, July 6, 1779
Naval Battle of la Gueule de Bois, Sept. 1782 see Trinquemalé
Battle of Jersey, Jan. 6, 1781
Battle of Kellinour, June 2 and 6, 1782
Battle of Mangalore, May 15, 1783-Jan. 23, 1784
Battle of Minorca, Aug. 20, 1781-Feb. 5, 1782
Battle of Negapatam, July 6, 1782
Battle of Newport, Aug. 8-10, 1778
Battle of Ouessant, July 27, 1778

Diplomacy in the American Revolution

Battle of Pondicherry, August 10, 1778
Battle of Pondicherry, August 1-September 18, 1778
Battle of La Praya, April 16, 1781
Battle of Providien, April 12-13, 1782
Battle of Quebec, November 8, 1775-January 1, 1776
Battle of Sadras, February 17, 1782
Battle of St.-Christopher, Jan. 11-Feb. 12, 1782
Battle of St.-Eustatius, Nov. 26, 1781
Battle of Les Saintes, Apr. 12, 1782
Battle of Savannah, Sept. 1-Oct. 10, 1779
Battle of St. Vincent, Jan. 1779
Battle of St. Lucia, Sept. 15-Late Dec. 1778
Battle of St. Lucia, May 15, 17, and 19, 1780
Battle of Tobago, Feb. 2, 1781
Naval Battle of Trinquemalé, see Gueule de Bois 1- Sep. 6. 1782
Battle of Trinquemalé, Aug. 25-Sept. 1, 1782
Battle of Yorktown, Sept. 29-Oct. 19



COMPARISON OF FRENCH AND ENGLISH NAVAL LOSSES DURING
THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION

(A few typos may have crept into this compilation, despite the author's infinite care.)

NAVAL LOSSES OF THE MARINE ROYALE from 1778 to 1783

1778, June 17th, Le COUREUR, 14, taken by The ALERT in the Channel. 1778, June 18th, La LICORNE, 32, taken by Lord Keppel's squadron in the Channel. 1778, June 19th, Le PALLAS, 32, taken by Lord Keppel's squadron in the Channel. 1778, August 25, Le SARTINE, 32, taken in East India by Lord Vernon's squadron. 1779, January 31st, L'OISEAU, 32, taken in the Channel. 1779, May 13, Le VALEUR, 6, sunk by Sir Wallace's squadron at Cancale Bay. 1779, May 13, L'ÉCLUSE, 8, sunk by the squadron of Sir Wallace in Cancale Bay. 1779, Le SPHINX, 20, taken by The PROSERPINE [28]. 1779, May 13, Le DIEPPE 16, cotre, destroyed by the squadron of Sir Wallace in Cancale Bay. 1779, Le FÉNELON, 14, taken by the English. 1779, May 13, La DANAË, 26, taken by The EXPERIMENT 50. 1779, June 2, La PRUDENTE, 36, taken by The RUBY [60]. 1779, June 22, L'HÉLÈNE, 16, taken by The AMBUSCADE [32]. 1779, August, Le COMPAS 18, flute, taken by The BOREAS [28]. 1779, October 2nd, Le PILOTE, 14, taken by The JUPITER [50]. 1779, October 2nd, La MUTINE, 14, taken by The APOLLO [32]. 1779, October 20th, L'ALCMÈNE, 26, taken by The PROSERPINE [32]. 1779, 21 October, La BLANCHE, 32, taken by The MAGNIFICENT [74]. 1779, 22 December, La FORTUNÉE, 32, taken by The SUFFOLK [74]. 1779, 22 December, L'ÉLISE, 28, taken by The MAGNIFICENT [74] et The STIRLING CASTLE [64]. 1780, 24 February, Le PROTÉE, 64, taken by rear--amiral Robert Digby's squadron. 1780, 26 June, Le SANS-PAREIL 12, cotre, taken by The PHŒNIX [44] & squadron. 1780, 1st july, L'ARTOIS 40, taken by The ROMNEY [50]. 1780, 5 july, Le HUSSARD, 18, taken off Ushant by The NONSUCH [64]. 1780, 5 July, La CAPRICIEUSE, 32, attacked by The PRUDENT 36 and The UNICORN [32]. 1780, 5 July, La PERLE 18, taken by The ROMNEY [50]. 1780, 12 July, La BELLE POULE, 32, taken by The NONSUCH [64]. 1780, La LÉGÈRE, 33, burnt by The NONSUCH [64]. 1780, Le RENARD, 18, taken by The BRUNE [32]. 1780, 10 August, La NYMPHE, 32, taken by The FLORA [36] & its squadron. 1780, October, L'INTRÉPIDE, 74, lost MIS in a uricane. 1780, Le PALMIER, 74, lost in a uricane. 1780, Le MAGNIFIQUE, 74, lost in a uricane. 1780, October, Le JUNON, 40, lost in a

urricane. 1780, 2 November, Le SÉNÉGAL, ex The RACEHORSE, 18, taken by the English. **1781**, 4 January, Le MINERVE, 32, ex The MINERVA, 32, taken by The COURAGEUX [74], renamed The RECOVERY. 1781, February, Le ROVER (ex Britannique), 18, taken by a corsair. 1781, L'ALERTE, 18, taken by The PERSEVERANCE [36]. 1781, 20 April, La LICORNE, 20, taken by The RESOURCE [28]. 1781, 26 July, Le LIVELY (ex Britannique), 26, taken by The PERSEVERANCE [36]. 1781, 2 September, La MAGICIENNE, 32, taken by The CHATHAM [50]. 1781, 26 October, Le NECKER, 28, taken by The HANNIBAL [50]. **1782**, 12 April, Le VILLE-DE-PARIS, 104, taken by Lord Rodney's squadron. 1782, 12 April, Le GLORIEUX, 74, taken by Lord Rodney. 1782, 12 April, L'HECTOR, 74, taken by Lord Rodney. 1782, 12 April, Le CÉSAR, 74, burnt by Lord Rodney. 1782, 12 April, L'ARDENT, 64, taken by Lord Rodney. 1782, 19 April, Le CATON, 64, taken by Lord Hood's squadron. 1782, Le BIZARRE, 64, grounded near Trinquemalé [India]. 1782, 19 April, Le JASON, 64, taken by Lord Hood. 1782, 19 avril, L'AIMABLE, 32, taken by Lord Hood's squadron. 1782, 19 April, Le CÉRÈS, 18, taken by Lord Hood. 1782, 21 April, Le PÉGASE, 74, taken by The FOUDROYANT [80]. 1782, L'ORIENT, 74, grounded near Trinquemalee, East Indies. 1782, 23 April, L'ACTIONNAIRE, 24/64, flûte, taken by The QUEEN [98]. 1782, Le DAUPHIN, 26/64, flûte taken by The ARGO [44]. 1782, 20 July, L'AMAZONE, 36, taken then abandoned. 1782, 30 July, Le TÊMÉRAIRE, 10, taken by The CORMORANT [16] & consorts. 1782, 1st September, L'AIGLE, 22, taken off Cape Henry. 1782, L'ESPION 16, cotre, taken by The LIZARD [28] off St-Kitts. 1782, 4 September, Le HÉBÉ, 40, taken by The RAINBOW [44] & consorts. 1782, 14 September, L'AIGLE 40, captured by Elphinstone's squadron off Delaware. 1782, 18 October, Le SCIPION, 74, destroyed by The LONDON [98] and The TORBAY [74], Hispaniola. 1782, 6 December, Le SOLITAIRE, 64, taken by 3 ships including The RUBY 64 in the Atlantic. 1782, 6 December, L'AMPHITRITE 18, taken by Sir R. Hugues's squadron. 1782, 12 December, La MÉNAGÈRE 34/61, flûte, taken by The MEDIATOR [44]. 1783, 11 January, Le RAILLEUR, 14, taken by The CYCLOPS [28]. **1783**, 16 January, Le CHASSEUR, 20, taken by The MEDEA [28]. 1783, 22 January, La SIBYLLE, 36, taken, off USA. 1783, 15 February, La CONCORDE, 36, taken by The St-ALBAN's squadron. 1783, 2 March, La COQUETTE, 28, taken by The RESISTANCE [44]. 1783, 14 April, La NAÏADE, 20, taken by The SCEPTRE [64]. **72 ships lost including 66 taken by the English.**

LOSSES OF THE ROYAL NAVY from 1778 to 1783

1778, The GRAMPUS 32, sunk by the French off Newfoundland. 1778, The MERMAID 28, grounded seeing d'Estaing. 1778, The MERCURY 24, destroyed off New York. 1778, The SWALLOW 16, destroyed off Good Hope Cape. 1778, The SWIFT 16, burnt by the French off Cape Henry. 1778, The CUPID 16, destroyed off Newfoundland. 1778, The DISPATCH 14, sunk in the Golfe Saint-Laurent. 1778, The YORK 12, taken by the French. 1778, The SPY 12, destroyed off NFL. 1778, The HINCHINBROKE 12, taken by French corsairs. 1778, The HELENA 12, taken by Le SENSIBLE. 1778, The OTTER 10, destroyed off Florida. 1778, The ENTERPRISE 10, captured by the American and burnt. 1778, 24 April, The DRAKE 14, taken by Le RANGER 18, off Belfast. 1778, 24 June, The FOLKESTONE 8, captured by the French. 1778, 9 July, The LIVELY 22, captured by L'IPHIGÉNIE. 1778, 17 July, The ALERT 12, cotre, captured by Le JUNON. 1778, 30 July, The KINGFISHER 16, burnt off Rhode Island]. 1778, August, The STANLEY 10, taken by Le CÉSAR. 1778, 7 August, The JUNO 32, burnt by the French off Rhode Island. 1778, 7 August, The LARK 32, burnt off Rhode Island. 1778, 7 August, The ORPHEUS 32, burnt by the French off Rhode Island. 1778, 7 August, The FLORA 32, sunk by the French off Rhode Island. 1778, 7 August, The CERBERUS 28, burnt by the French off Rhode Island. 1778, 7 August, The FALCON 16, burnt by the French off Rhode Island. 1778, 14 August, The SENEGAL [ex-THE RACEHORSE] 18, taken by d'Estaing. 1778, 17 August, The THUNDER 8, taken by d'Estaing. 1778, 22 August, The MINERVA 32, taken by the French off West Indies. 1778, 23 August, The ZEPHYR 14, taken by the French. 1778, 1 September, The ACTIVE 28, taken by the French. 1778, 10 September The FOX 28, taken by Le JUNON. 1778, October, The SOMERSET 70, sunk near Cape Cod. 1778, October, The ZEBRA 16, sunk at Egg Island Harbour. 1778, 17 December, The CERES 18, taken by the French. 1779, The SUPPLY 20 [logistics] accidentally burnt. 1779, The TORTOISE 32, sunk off NFL. 1779, The NORTH 20, sunk off Nova Scotia. 1779, The THORN 16, taken by a US frigate. 1779, The TAPAGEUR 14, cotre, sunk in West Indies. 1779, The HOPE 14, taken by a US corsair. 1779, The WEST FLORIDA 14, taken at Pensacola by the US. 1779, The YORK 12, taken by Admiral d'Estaing at Grenada. 1779, The LEVIATHAN ex-NORTHUMBERLAND 50, sunk by the French. 1779, The PENELOPE 24, sunk. 1779, The WEAZEL 16, taken by La RODEUSE. 1779, The ARETHUSA 32, sunk. 1779, The MONTREAL 32, taken

by the French. 1779, The DILIGENT 12, taken by Le PROVIDENCE. 1779, The GLASGOW 24, burnt. 1779, The EGMONT 10, schooner, taken by le WILDCAT 14, at NFL. 1779, The HAARLEM, taken by US corsairs. 1779, The HOLDERNESSE 18, cotre, taken. 1779, The ACTIVE 12, cotre, taken by La MUTINE. 1779, The ARDENT 64, taken. 1779, The SPHINX 20, taken by L'AMPHITRITE. 1779, The ROSE 20, sunk to block Savannah. 1779, The SAVANNAH 14, brick, sunk to block Savannah. 1779, The ARIEL 20, taken by L'AMAZONE. 1779, The SERAPIS 44, taken by Le BONHOMME-RICHARD. 1779, The COUNTESS-OF-SCARBOROUGH 20, taken by Le BONHOMME-RICHARD. 1779, The EXPERIMENT 50, taken by d'Estaing. 1779, The QUEBEC 32, sunk by La SURVEILLANTE. 1779, The JACKAL 14, cotre, taken by French POW. 1779, The HUSSAR 28, sunk. **1780**, The TRUE BRITON, taken by the French. 1780, The ACTIVE 14, taken by the Insurgents. 1780, The DEFIANCE, 64, Maximillian Jacobs, sunk at Savannah. 1780, The VIPER 16, sunk in the Gulf Saint-Laurence. 1780, The SCORPION 16, sunk. 1780, The COUREUR 16, schooner, taken off NFL. 1780, The CORMORANT, 16, taken by de Grasse off Charleston. 1780, The FORTUNE 18, taken by the French. 1780, The UNICORN 20, taken by the French. 1780, The VIGILANT 20, burnt at Beaufort, South Carolina. 1780, The ROVER 18, taken by the French. 1780, The BELLONA 18, sunk. 1780, The ENDEAVOUR 14, brick, lost in a storm. 1780, The NIMBLE 12, cotre, sunk. 1780, The PHŒNIX 44, lost in a storm. 1780, The VICTOR 10, brick, lost in a storm. 1780, The INCENDIARY 8, sunk. 1780, The SCARBOROUGH 20, lost in a storm. 1780, The STIRLING CASTLE, 64, lost in a storm. 1780, The BARBADOS 14, lost in a storm. 1780, The THUNDERER 74, lost in a storm. 1780, The CORNWALL 74, sunk by the French at St. Lucia. 1780, The LAUREL 28, lost in a storm. 1780, The SHARK 28 canons, sunk. 1780, The ANDROMEDA 28, lost in a storm. 1780, The DEAL CASTLE, 24, lost in a storm. 1780, The CAMELEON 14, lost in a storm. 1780, The BLANCHE 32, lost in a storm. 1780, The BEAVER'S PRIZE 16, lost in a storm. 1780, The SARTINE 32, sunk in the Indies. **1781**, The FAIRY 14, taken by the French. 1781, The CULLODEN, 74, sunk off Long Island. 1781, The TERRIBLE 74, burnt. 1781, The ROMULUS 44, taken by the French. 1781, The MENTOR 20, burnt at Pensacola. 1781, The MOLLY 20, accidentally burnt. 1781, The GERMAINE 20, taken by the US. 1781, The ECHO 18, sunk in Plymouth Sound. 1781, The MINORCA 18, sunk in Mahon by the French. 1781, The PORT-ROYAL 18, taken by the Spaniards at Pensacola.

1781, The ST-FIRMIN 16, taken by the Spanish at Gibraltar. 1781, The ATALANTA 16, taken by L'ALLIANCE. 1781, The TREPASSEY 14, taken by L'ALLIANCE. 1781, The HOPE 14, cotre, taken by the French. 1781, The ANTIGUA 14, taken by the French. 1781, The FLY 14, cotre, taken by the French. 1781, The BONETTA 14, taken by the French in Chesapeake Bay. 1781, The SNAKE 12, taken by the French. 1781, The CASTOR 36, taken by La FRIPONNE. 1781, The CRESCENT 28, taken by La FRIPONNE. 1781, The LOYALIST 14, taken by the French in Chesapeake Bay. 1781, The RATTLESNAKE 14, lost in the West Indies. 1781, The PIGMY 14, cotre, taken by the French. 1781, The ROVER 14, sunk. 1781, The GIBRALTAR 14, brick, taken by the Spanish at Gibraltar. 1781, The THUNDER 8, sunk by the French. 1781, The PELICAN 24, lost in a storm. 1781, The SANDWICH 20, taken by de Grasse. 1781, The CORMORANT 14, taken by de Grasse. 1781, The SAVAGE, 16, taken by French corsairs. 1781, The SWALLOW 16, sunk off Long island. 1781, The HOPE 16, sunk off Savannah. 1781, The SHELANAGIG 16, taken by the French. 1781, The DUCHESS OF CUMBERLAND 16, sunk off NFL. 1781, The DELIGHT 16, sunk in the Atlantic. 1781, The RACEHORSE 14, sunk by the French off Beachy Head. 1781, The PHEASANT 14, cotre, capsized in the Channel. 1781, The IRIS 32, taken by de Grasse. 1781, The RICHMOND 32, taken by de Grasse. 1781, The FOWEY 24, Peter Aplin, sunk by the French in the Chesapeake Bay. 1781, The SANDWICH 24, taken by the French off Charleston. 1781, The SYREN 24, sunk by the French off Sussex Coast. 1781, The GUADALUPE 28, sunk by the French in the Chesapeake. 1781, The GREYHOUND 28, sunk by the French off South Sand Head. 1781, The CHARON 44, sunk by the French in the Chesapeake. 1781, The THETIS 32, sunk off Ste-Lucie. 1781, The FIREBRAND, burnt by accident near Falmouth. 1781, The VULCAN 8, burnt by the French in the Chesapeake. 1781, The CONFLAGRATION 8, lost in North America. 1782, The HANNIBAL 50, taken by the French off Sumatra. 1782, The SANTA-MONICA, 36, sunk off Tortola. 1782, The BLONDE 32, sunk off Nantucket. 1782, The SOLEBAY 28, burnt off Névis. 1782, The COVENTRY 28, taken by the French in the Bay of Bengal. 1782, The HINCHINBROKE 20, sunk by the French off Jamaica. 1782, The ORONOQUE 20, confiscated by the French in the Demerara capitulation. 1782, The SYLPH 18, confiscated by the French in the Demerara capitulation. 1782, The BARBUDA 16, confiscated by the French in the Demerara capitulation. 1782, The STORMONT, 16, confiscated by the French in the

Demerara capitulation. 1782, The RODNEY 16, brick, confiscated by the French in the Demerara capitulation. 1782, 25 février, The CHASER 18, taken by the French in the Bay of Bengal. 1782, The GENERAL MONK 18, taken by Le HYDER ALI 16 [Pennsylvanien, 16]. 1782, The JACKAL 20, taken by the French. 1782, The BRITANNIA, 20, sunk in Kentish Knock. 1782, The ALLIGATOR 14, taken by the French in the Channel. 1782, The REPULSE 14, cotre, sunk by the French off Yarmouth. 1782, The SWAN 14, capsized off Waterford. 1782, The ROYAL GEORGE 100, capsized at Spithead. 1782, The RAMILLIES 74, burnt. 1782, The HECTOR 74, sunk off NFL. 1782, The CENTAUR 74, sunk. 1782, The RACoon 14, brick, taken by Le GLOIRE. 1782, The POLECAT 14, brick, taken by the French in North America. 1782, The ALLEGIANCE 14, taken by the American. 1782, The LIVELY 14, brick, taken by its French POW. 1782, The PRINCE EDWARD 14, brick, taken by its US POW. 1782, The RESOLUTION 14, taken by the French in India. 1782, The RAIKES 14, taken by the French in India. 1782, The FLYING FISH, 14, cotre, sunk by the French off Calais. 1782, The PLACENTIA 14, brick, sunk off NFL. 1782, The CORNWALLIS 14, sunk in Atlantic. **1783**, The ARGO 44, taken by La NYMPHE 36. 1783, The SUPERB 74, sunk in the Indies. 1783, The CATO 50, lost in the West Indies. 1783, The PALLAS 36, threw itself to the shore in Isle St-Georges to get away from the French. 1783, The CERBERUS 32, sunk off Bermudas. 1783, The RAVEN 16, taken by the French in West Indies. 1783, The MENTOR 16, sunk off Bermudas. 1783, The TICKLER 14, taken by a French frigate in West Indies. **In all 242 ships were lost, 103 of which were taken or destroyed by the French.**



General Bibliography

●A genuine account of some transactions in the East Indies, containing the most material occurrences on the coast of Coromandel since the death of the late Nabob of Arcot, Londres, 1753. ●Abbott, John S. C., *American Pioneers and Patriots : Benjamin Franklin : A picture of the struggles of our infant nation, one hundred Years ago*, Dodd, Mead & Company, New York, 1876. ●Allaire, B. «The occupation of Quebec City by the Kirke brothers», in R. Litalien et D. Vaugeois (dir.), *Champlain : the birth of l'Amérique française*, Éditions du Nouveau Monde et Éditions du Septentrion, Paris et Sillery, 2004, p. 245-257. ●American Historical Review (AHR), Oxford University Press, Cary (Nort Carolina). ●Amiot, Joseph-Marie, [missionary in China] *Art militaire des Chinois, ou Recueil d'anciens traités sur la guerre*, Édité chez Didot l'aîné, Paris M.DCC.LXXII [1772] (This was the first translation of the theories of the Chinese Sun Tsu into a Western language.) ●An Account of the War in India, between the English and French, on the Coast of Coromandel, from the year 1750, to the year 1760; together with a Relation of the late remarkable events on the Malabar Coast, and the expeditions to Golconda and Surat ... The whole compiled from original papers, Richard Owen Cambridge, T. Jefferys: Londres, 1761. ●An impartial View of the origin and progress of the present disputes in the East India Company, relative to Mahomed-Ally-Khan, Nabob of Arcot, and Sulja-gee, Raja of Tanjore, etc., Muhammad Ali Khan, Nabab from Arcate, Edimburgh, 1777. ●Anderson, Fred, *Crucible of War, The Seven Years' War and the Fate of Empire in British North America, 1754-1766*, Alfred A. Knopf; London et New York: Faber and Faber, 2000. ●Andros, Thomas. "The old Jersey captive: or, A narrative of the captivity of Thomas Andros...on board the old Jersey prison ship at New York, 1781. In a series of letters to a friend." W. Peirce. 1833. ●Archives de la Marine, France. ●National Archives of the United Kingdom, Collection British War Office. 4:275, Letter frpm Jenkinson to Clinton, Dec. 5th, 1780. ●Asclépiodote, *Traité de tactique*, translation by L. Poznanski, Les Belles Lettres, Paris, 1992. ●Asimov, Isaac, *The Shaping of England*, Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, 1969. ●Au Roi et à Nosseigneurs du conseil de marine, requête de Naynapa, marchand malabar de Pondichéry, appelant de la confiscation de ses biens au profit des jésuites, [non identifié et non daté]. ●Au Roi et à Nosseigneurs du conseil de marine, requête de Ramanada, marchand malabar de Pondichéry, demandeur en restitution de ses biens confisqués par le sieur Hébert, Imprimerie de J. Quillau, Paris, 1717. ●Balch, Thomas, *The French in America during the War of Independence of the United States, 1777-1783*, Philadelphia, 2 volumes, 1891-1895. French version : *Les Français en Amérique pendant la guerre de l'Indépendance -1777-1783*. ●Bancroft, George, annoté par Adolphe de Circourt, *Histoire de l'Action commune de la France et de l'Amérique pour l'indépendance des États-Unis*, Paris, 1876. 3 volumes. The 3rd volume presents historical documents. ●Batchelder, Tobert F., "The

Counterfeiting of Colonial Paper Money as Seen through the Letters of Signer of the Declaration of Independence, Josiah Bartlett," Manuscripts 31, no. 3 (Summer 1979): 207-11. ●Battistini, Olivier, *La Guerre. Trois tacticiens grecs, Enée, Asclépiodote, Onasandre*, Anthologie. Editions Nil, Paris 1994. ●Battlefields of Europe, Chilton Books, Philadelphia. ●Baudoin, Archives des Colonies, Correspondance générale. Canada. Paris, "Journal de Monsieur Baudoin", 14:4 ●Baudoin, L., *Origines de l'Inde française*, Jâne Begum (wife of Duplex), Isidore Guët, Librairie militaire de L. Baudoin, Paris, 1892. ●Beatson, William Burns, *The English in India*, from Plassey to Seringapatam, reprinted, with notes, from the "Bath Chronicle", Bath, 1891. ●Belloc, Hilaire, *British battles*. S.Swift & Co, Hugh Rees, London, 1911-1913. 6 vol. ●Bissonnette, Antoine, *Soixante Ans de Liberté 1837-1897, Souvenirs patriotiques par nos meilleurs écrivains*, Deom Frères, Montréal, 1897. ●Bonsal, Stephen, *When the French were here: a narrative of the sojourn of the French forces in America, and their contribution to the Yorktown campaign*, drawn from unpublished reports and letters of participants in the national archives of France and the Ms. Division of the Library of Congress, Doubleday, New York, 1945. ●British Colonial Office Papers in The National Archives of the United Kingdom, Manuscripts in the British Record Office, Kew, Richmond, Surrey, United Kingdom. ●British War Office Papers. Manuscripts in the British Record Office. 1:682. "Resolution of Nobility of Norfolk"; ●Calvert, Michael & Young, Peter, *A Dictionary of Battles 1715 - 1815*, New English Library, London, 1978. ●Castex, amiral Raoul, *Les Idées militaires de la marine au XVIIIe siècle. De Ruyter à Suffren*, Paris, 1911. ●Castex, amiral Raoul, *Mélanges stratégiques*, Académie de Marine, Paris, 1976. ●Castex, amiral Raoul, *Théories stratégiques*, 5 vol., Éditions maritimes, Paris, 1929-1935. ●Castex, JC, *Dictionnaire des batailles franco-anglaises de la Guerre de Succession d'Autriche*, Éditions P-O., Vancouver, 2011. ●Castries, duc de, *Le maréchal de Castries (1727-1800)*, Arthème Fayard, Paris, 1956. ●Castries, Scipion de, *Souvenirs maritimes de Scipion de Castries*, Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Édition établie, présentée et annotée par Gérard de Colbert Turgis. ●Chandernagor ou le Lit de Duplex, Georges TAILLEUR, *Africa nostra*, Montpellier, 1979. ●Chandler, David, Beckett, Ian, *The Oxford History of the British Army*, Oxford Paperbacks, Oxford, 2003. ●Chandler, David, Editor, *A Guide to the Battlefields of Europe*, Chilton Books, Philadelphia. ●Chassaigne, Philippe, *Histoire de l'Angleterre*, Éditions Aubier, Paris 1966. ●Chevalier de Chastellux, major général de l'armée du général Rochambeau, *Nouveau Voyage dans l'Amérique septentrionale en l'année 1781 et Campagne de l'Armée de M. le comte de Rochambeau par M. l'Abbé Robin*, Chez Moutard, À Philadelphie, et aussi Imprimeur-Libraire de la Reine, Paris, 1782. ●Choiseul dès 1765 : *Mémoire présenté au roi en 1765, tiré de Mémoires du duc de Choiseul, 1719-1785*, p.393 ●Chotteau, Léon, *Les Français en Amérique*, Charpentier et Cie, Librairies-Éditeurs, Paris. ●Christopher, Emma, *A Merciless Place: The Fate of Britain's Convicts after the American Revolution*, Oxford University Press, Oxford, 2010. ●Clausewitz, Carl von, *De la Guerre*,

traduction de Denise Naville, Les Editions de Minuit, Paris 1955. [5 volumes]

- Clive and Duplex; the beginning of empire, Henry Dodwell, Asian educational services, New Delhi, 1989.
- Clive; the life and death of a British emperor, Robert Harvey, Hodder & Stoughton, Londres, 1998.
- Clowes, sir William Laid, The Royal Navy, A History from the Earliest Times to the Present, Sampson Low, Marston & Company, Ltd, Londres, 1897. 7 vol.
- Colin, J., Les Grandes Batailles de l'Histoire, Paris, 1915.
- Colleville, Vicomte de, Les mission secrètes du général-major Baron de Kalb et son rôle dans la guerre de l'Indépendance américaine, Librairie académique Didier, Emile Perrin, Paris, 1885.)
- Corbett, William, Parliamentary History of England; from the Earliest Period to the Year 1803. Vol.XX (December 1778-Feb. 1780), Longman, Hurst, Rees, Orme & Brown, Debate in the Commons on the Bill for better Recruiting the Army, Jan.21 1779, Mr. Jenkinson, Secretary at War, London, 1814.
- Cornélis Henri De Witt, Thomas Jefferson : étude historique sur la démocratie américaine, Librairie académique Didier et Cie, Paris, 1861.
- Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin, traduite de l'anglais et annotée par Édouard Laboulaye de l'Institut de France et des Sociétés historiques de NewYork et de Massachusetts, Librairie de L. Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866.
- Correspondance du Conseil supérieur de Pondichéry avec le Conseil de Chandernagor, 1728-1757, Archives de l'Inde française, Alfred Martineau, Paris, 1915-1930, 6 vol.
- Correspondance Politique, Angleterre, Archives of Ministry of Foreign Affairs, Quai d'Orsay, Paris.
- Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. 530
- Correspondence of the American Revolution; Letters of Eminent Men to George Washington, from the Time of His Taking Command of the Army to the End of His Presidency, Volume I., Jared Sparks, 1853
- Cottret, Bernard, La Révolution américaine : La quête du bonheur 1763-1787, Paris, Perrin, 2003)
- Damamme Jean-Claude, Les soldats de la Grande Armée, Perrin, Paris, 1998. p.372 ISBN 978-2-262-02949-4.
- De Castries, Scipion, Souvenirs maritimes, présentés et annotés par Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Éditions du Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. Ch. IV.
- De Clercq, Recueil des Traités de la France, published under the auspices of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs by M. de Clercq, former minister plenipotentiary and M. Jules de Clercq, Consul de France, Tome 15, supplement 1713-1885, A. Durand et Pedone-Lauriel, Éditeurs, Paris, 1888.
- De Laboulaye, Edward (Édouard René Lefèbvre), Political History of the United States, The Office of the Boston Daily Advertiser, Boston. 1855-66. 3 vols.
- De Laboulaye, Edward (Édouard René Lefèbvre), The United States and France, The Office of the Boston Daily Advertiser, Boston, 1862].
- De Ségur, Louis-Philippe, [1753-1830] *Mémoires ou souvenirs et anecdotes par M. le comte de Ségur*, Alexis Eymery, Libraire-Éditeur, Paris, 1824.
- De Witt, Cornélis Henri, Thomas Jefferson, Étude historique sur la démocratie américaine, Librairie académique Didier et Cie, Paris, 1862.
- Dépêches de Conrad A. Gérard (Ambassadeur de France) à M. de Vergennes (Ministre des Affaires Étrangères), à

Philadelphie le 25 juillet 1778. ●Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. ●Muhammad Ali Khan, Nabab d'Arcate, Dispassionate observations on the subject of the death and succession of the late Nabob of Arcot, and the Carnatic, Londres, 1796. ●Documents relatifs à l'histoire constitutionnelle du Canada, 1759—1791. 2 vol. édités par Adam Shortt. ●Doniol, Henri, Histoire de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis d'Amérique, correspondance diplomatique et documents, Alphonse Picard Editeur de l'Imprimerie Nationale, Paris, 1888. Mémoire communiqué au Roi le 23 juillet 1777, et approuvé le même jour par Sa Majesté, ●Dufour, Atlas de Géographie (nombreux plans de batailles), Paris, date inconnue. ●Dull, Jonathan, The French Navy and American Revolution: A Study of Arms and Diplomacy, 1774-1787, Princeton University Press, Princeton and London, 1975. ●Duncan, Hist. of R. A., I, 164, 334. Cf. the opinions expressed by Colonel Pattison, "Letters" (N. Y. Hist. Soc. Coll. 1875). ●Dutertre, Père Jean-Baptiste, Histoire Générale des Antilles Habitées par les Français, Paris, 1667. ●Edwardes, Michael, The Battle of Plassey and the Conquest of Bengal, B. T. Batsford, London, 1963. ●Énée le Tacticien, Poliorcétique, traduction de A. Bon, Les Belles Lettres, Paris, 1967. ●Essai biographique sur Guillaume-Léonard de Bellecombe, maréchal des 531 camps et armées du roy, grand-croix de l'ordre royal et militaire de Saint-Louis, commandant général des établissements français dans l'Inde, gouverneur général des îles françaises d'Amérique sous le vent, baron de Cuzorn, seigneur de Tayrac, Fontneuve, etc. (1728-1792), H. de Bellecombe, suivi de la relation du siège de Pondichéry en 1778, Imprimerie de Vve Lamy, Agen, 1896. ●Etudes statistiques sur la population des établissements de Pondichéry et de Karikal, M. Loude, Imprimerie du Gouvernement, Pondichéry, 1868. ●Extrait du livre de Michel Brunet, Guy Frégault et Marcel Trudel, Histoire du Canada par les textes, publié chez Fides. ●Faragher, John Mack, A Great and Noble Scheme, The tragic Story of the Expulsion of the French Acadians from their American Homeland, WW Norton & Co, New York, London, 2005. ●Faucherre, Nicolas, Places fortes, bastions du pouvoir, REMPART, Desclée de Brouwer, 1986, 4ème édition de 1991, Paris ●Firminger, Walter Kelly, The Plassey expedition programme, Calcutta Historical Society, The Edinburgh Press, Calcutta, 1908. ●Fish, Hamilton, New York State, The battleground of the Revolutionary War, Vantage Press, New York, 1976. ●Foch, Ferdinand, Maréchal, Des Principes de la Guerre, Conférences faites en 1900 à l'École Supérieure de Guerre, Berger-Levrault, Libraires-Éditeurs, Nancy-Paris-Strasbourg, 1903. ●Force, Peter, American Archives, publiées de 1837 à 1853, ●Force, Peter, Extract of a letter from London about the Infamous Quebec Bill (qui deviendra le Quebec Act), dated 1st July 1774, et reproduits dans Peter Force, American Archives, 9 vol., 1837–1853, Series V, Volume I : pp.498-499. ●Force, Peter, Josiah Quincy Jr. Avocat à Boston, Memoir of the Life of Josiah Quincy, lettre d'octobre 1774, p.182, édités par E.C. Burnett. ●Ford, C. W., The Writings of George Washington, collected and edited by Worthington Chauncey Ford, G.P. Putnam's Sons, The

Knickerbocker Press, New-York, 1890. Vol.8, 1778-1780. ●Fortescue, John William History of the British Army, Macmillan and Co. Limited, St.Martin's Street 13 volumes, Londres, 1883. ●Fortescue, The Honorable Sir John William, (1859 1933), History of the British Army. London. ●Franklin, Benjamin, Œuvres posthumes de Benjamin Franklin, éditions Janet, 1817 vol.II, p.187. ●Friedrich Kapp, The soldier Trade of the German Princes to America, Berlin, ●Garnham, Neal, Military Desertion and Deserters in Eighteenth-Century Ireland, Eighteenth-Century Ireland, article publié par: Eighteenth-Century Ireland Society, Dublin, 2005. ●Garthoff, Raymond L., The Soviet Military Doctrine, Librairie Plon, Paris, 1952. ●George Pocock. Ode to General Draper. An epistle to John Sherratt, Esq., Christopher Smart, London, ●Gérard, Conrad Alexandre, Despatches and instructions of Conrad Alexandre Gérard, 1778-1780. Correspondence of the First French Minister to the United States with the Comte de Vergennes, Historical Documents par l'Institut français de Washington, The Johns Hopkins Press, Baltimore, 1939. 532 ●Gomer, History of the Liverpool Privateers and Letters of Marque with an account of the Liverpool Slaves Trade, William Heinemann Publishing, London, 1897. ●Grant, J.G., British Battles on Land and Sea. Cassel Petter & Galpin, Londres. ●Graymont, Barbara, The Iroquois in the American Revolution, Syracuse University Press, Syracuse, New York, 1972. ●Great Britain. Statute Law Committee, Chronological Table and Index of the Statutes, printed for Her Majesty's Stationery Office, Londres, Edinbourg et Dublin, 1882. ●Guibert, lieutenant-général, comte Jacques Antoine Hippolyte de, Essai de tactique générale, Paris, 1773. ●Hale, Les grands combats sur mer, de Salamine au Jutland, Paris, 1932. ●Hardy de Périni, Édouard, Batailles françaises, 6 vol. de 1214 jusqu'en 1789, Editeur Ernest Flammarion, Paris, 1894. ●Hibbert, Christopher, The English, A Social History, 1066-1945, W.W.Norton & Company, London, 1986. ●Histoire des Français dans l'Inde, depuis la fondation de Pondichéry jusqu'à la prise de cette ville (1674-1761), lieutenant-colonel anglais George-Bruce Malleson, traduction de Mme S. Le Page, Librairie de la Société bibliographique, Paris, 1874. ●Historical Fragments (of the Mogul Empire, etc.), Robert Orme, Bangabasi Office, Calcutta, 1905. ●Historique et statistique de Karikal, présentation par François Gros, Joseph Marie Emmanuel Cordier, publications de l'Institut français d'indologie, Pondichéry, 1971. ●History of Pondicherry, Ayyasamy Ramasamy, Sterling Publishers, New Delhi, 1987. ●Holmes, Richard, Soldiers: Army Lives and Loyalties from Redcoat to Dusty Warriors. HarperCollins, London, 2011. ●Huebner, Johann l'Ainé, Les Généalogies historiques des Rois, Empereurs, etc., et de toutes les maisons souveraines qui ont subsisté jusqu'à présent, etc, traduit de l'allemand en français pour diffusion internationale, 4 tomes, Paris 1736 - 1738. ●Johnson, T.R. St, Antigua and the Antiguans, 2 vol. Londres, 1842. ●Jomini, baron de, général et aide de camp de l'empereur de Russie, The Art of War, traduit du Français par le capitaine G.H. Mendell et par le lieutenant W.P. Craighill, Greenwood Press Publishers, Westport, Connecticut, USA. ●Journals of the Continental Congress. 31 vol. édités par ●Kageneck, M. de.,

Lettres de M. de Kagenack (...) au baron Alströmer, de 1779 à 1784, Paris, 1884. (rumeurs aussi selon le Canadien) ●Kaplan, Lawrence S. "The Diplomacy of the American Revolution: the Perspective from France." *Reviews in American History*, The Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore (Maryland), 1976. Vol.4. ; No.3 (septembre 1976), pp 385 à 390. review of Dull (1975) ●Kapp, Friedrich, *The soldier Trade of the German Princes* ●Kapp, Friedrich, Von Eelking, Max, Von Riedesel, Generalin, Leiste, Christian, Melsheimer, FB, Von Ewald, J, Biedermann, Karl, Pfister, Ferdinand, Seume, IG, Schlozer, August Ludwig, etc... *The Hessians, Les Hessois*, en ligne 533 ●Kenneth Scott, *Counterfeiting in Colonial America*, 2nd ed., with a foreword by David R. Johnson (Philadelphia, 2000). ●Kingship and political practice in colonial India, Pamela G. Price, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1996. ●La Chenaye-des-Bois, *Dictionnaire de la noblesse*, tome VI, Paris. ●La Fayette, Marie-Joseph, *Mémoires, correspondance et manuscrits du général La Fayette*, publiés par sa famille, Société belge de Librairie, Hauman, Cattoir et Cie. Bruxelles [publié simultanément à Paris par Fournier aîné, et à Londres par Saunders & Otley], 1837. ●La Guerre de sept ans. *Histoire diplomatique et militaire*, Richard Waddington, Firmin-Didot, Paris, 1899-1914. 5 volumes. ●La Marseillaise, chant national des Français traduit en vers tamouls par P. L. Djesingh, à Pondichéry, le 14 juillet 1887. [sans nom] ●Laboulaye, Édouard, *Correspondance de Benjamin Franklin*, traduite et annotée par Édouard Laboulaye, Tome Second 1775-1790, Hachette et Cie, Paris, 1866. ●Lacroix, Jean-Michel, *Canada et Canadiens*, Presses Universitaires de Bordeaux, Centre d'Études canadiennes, Bordeaux. P.32 ●Lang, Patrick J. "The horrors of the English prison ships, 1776 to 1783, and the barbarous treatment of the American patriots imprisoned on them." *Society of the Friendly Sons of Saint Patrick*, 1939. ●Lanning, Michael. *African Americans in the Revolutionary War*. New York: Kensington Publishing, 2000 ●Lawton, Richard, and Pooley, Colin G., *Britain 1740-1950, An Historical Geography*, Edward Arnold Publishing, London, 1992. ●Idham, Wilfred, *Britain's Convicts to the Colonies*, Library of Australian History, Sydney, 1990. ●Lee, Richard Henry, *Life of Arthur Lee*, Boston, 1829. 2 vol. ●Léon VI le sage, *Institutions militaires*, traduction de Joly de Maizeroy, in Liskenne et Sauvart, Bibliothèque historique et militaire, t.II, Paris 1840. ●Les comptoirs français de l'Inde (1664-1954). trois siècles de présence française, Arthur Anasse, La Pensée Universelle, Paris, 1975. ●Les dernières Luites des Français dans l'Inde et sur l'Océan Indien, G. B. Malleson, traduit et annoté par Edmond Gaudart, Pondichéry: Bibliothèque Publique, 1932. ●Les Indes françaises: Pondichéry, Chandernagor, Karikal, Yanaon et Mahé, Arnaud d'Aunay, Gallimard, Paris, 2001. ●Letters from Lafayette to La Luzerne, 1780-1782. Au Quartie-général. Dans *American Historical Review*, Edited by Waldo G. Leland, Vol.XX, Nos 2 and 3, January and April 1915. ●Letters of members of the Continental Congress. édition Burnett 8 vol. ●Lettre de Henry Laurens à John Lewis Gervais du 5 septembre 1777. LMCC II 478-483 Letters of Members of the Continental Congress, édition Burnett ●Life and Writings of Benjamin Franklin, The

Private Correspondance, Derby & Jackson, New York, 1859. ●Louis XV, Correspondance secrète inédite de Louis XV sur la politique étrangère avec le comte de Broglie, etc. et autres documents, Paris 1866. 2 vol. édités par Edgar Boutaric. 534 ●Louis XVI, Correspondance secrète sur Louis XVI, Marie-Antoinette, la Cour et la Ville, de 1777 à 1792. Paris 1866, 2 vol., Publié par de Lescure, d'après des manuscrits de Saint-Petersbourg. D'authenticité douteuse, ces documents sont intéressants pour l'étude des commérages de Cour et des rumeurs fantaisistes. ●Lowell, Edward J., *The Hessian and the other German Auxiliaries of Great Britain in the Revolutionary War*, Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York, 1884. ●Malleon, George Bruce Allen, *The decisive battles of India. from 1746 to 1849 inclusive.*, publié par l'auteur, Londres, 1885. ●Marshall, P.J. editor, *British Empire*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge [England], 1996. ●McHenry, Chris: *Rebel Prisoners at Quebec 1778-1783, Being a List of American Prisoners Held by the British during the Revolutionary War*, Lawrenceburg, Indiana (1981) regarding prisoners held at Fort Chambly. ●McHenry, Chris: *Rebel Prisoners at Quebec 1778-1783, Being a List of American Prisoners Held by the British during the Revolutionary War*, Lawrenceburg, Indiana (1981) regarding prisoners held at Fort Chambly. ●Mémoire de Beaumarchais Au Roi seul. Février 1776, tiré de New York Historical Society, Collections pour l'année 1886. Col.I, pp.100-108 « ●Mémoire pour servir d'instruction au sieur marquis de Noailles, mestre de camp de Cavalerie, allant à Londres pour y résider en qualité d'ambassadeur du roi auprès de Sa Majesté britannique. Versailles le 3 octobre 1776. ●Mémoires du duc de Choiseul, 1719-1785, Librairie Plon-Nourrit et Cie, Paris, 1904. Plan de campagne contre l'Angleterre rédigé vers 1778-1779, pp.427- ●Memoirs of count Lally from his embarking for the East Indies, as commander in chief of the French forces in that country, to his being sent prisoner of war to England, after the surrender of Pondichery, consisting of pieces written by himself and addressed to his judges in answer to the charges brought against him by the attorney general of his M. C. M. ... to which are added accounts of the prior part of his life, his condemnation and execution, comte Thomas Arthure Lally, F. Newbery, Londres, 1766. ●Memoirs of the revolution in Bengal, Anno. Dom. 1757, William Watts, Bimal Kanti Ghosh, Londres. ●Métraux, Alfred, Haïti, la Terre, les Hommes et les Dieux, À la Baconnière, Neuchâtel [Suisse], 1957. ●Michaud, J.F.R., *Biographie Universelle Ancienne et Moderne*, Akademische Druck-U. Verlagsanstalt, Graz-Austria, 1970. ●Michelet, Jules, *Histoire de France*, 19 vol., Paris, 1879. ●Middlekauff, Robert. *The Glorious Cause: The American Revolution, 1763-1789*, Oxford University Press, Oxford, 2005. P ●Mihm, Stephen, "Accept No Imitations: The Campaign against Counterfeits, Past and Present," *Common-Place* 4, no. 4 (July 2004). ●Moir, J. S., *Dictionnaire biographique du Canada*, t. I : « De l'an 1000 à 1700 », Québec, Les Presses de l'Université Laval, 1967, p. 416-420. ●Morgan, Kenneth, O., *The Oxford Illustrated History of Britain*, Edited by Kenneth O. Morgan, Guild Publishing, London, 1984 ●Muslim struggle for freedom in Bengal. from Plassey to Pakistan A D

1757- 1947, Muin-ud-Din Ahmad Khan, 2e édition, Islamic Foundation Bangladesh, 535 Dhaka, 1982. ●Newman, Eric P., "Nature Printing on Colonial and Continental Currency," *Numismatist* 77 (1964): 147-54, 299-305, 457-65, 613-23. ●Nicolas, sir Nicholas Harris, GCMG, A History of the Royal Navy, from the earliest times to the wars of the French Revolution, 2 vol. Londres 1847. ●Onasandre, Strategikos, traduction de Guischaridi, in Liskenne et Sauvan, Bibliothèque historique et militaire, t.III Paris, 1840. ●Origines de l'Inde française, Jâne Begum (l'épouse de Dupleix), Isidore Guët, Librairie militaire de L. Baudoin, Paris, 1892. ●Pajol, général de division, Les Guerres sous Louis XV, 7 volumes, Paris, 1883. ●Parkman, Francis, Montcalm and Wolfe, MacMillan & Co., Londres, 1884. ●Parkman, Francis, Pioneers of France in the New World,, Little, Brown & Co., Boston, 1896. ●Parton, James, Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin, Vol.II Mason Brothers, New York, 1864. p.393 ●Phillips, James, The development of British authority in southern India; the Nawab of Arcot, the East India Company, and the British Government, 1775-1785, Dalhousie University Canada, 1983. ●Plassey 1757. Clive of India's finest hour, Peter Harrington, Osprey, Londres, 1994. ●Plassey: the founding of an empire, Michael Edwardes, Hamilton, Londres, 1969. ●Pondichéry en 1746. La Compagnie de l'Inde. Des Expéditions des escadres anglaise et française dans l'Inde en 1746. Prise de Madras, [anonyme], Publications de la Société de l'histoire de l'Inde française. no. 6., Pondichéry, 1911. ●Pondichéry, 1674-1761, l'échec d'un rêve d'empire, dirigé par Rose Vincent, Editions Autrement, Paris, 1993. ●Price, Pamela G., Kingship and political practice in colonial India, Pamela G. Price, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1996. ●Puységur, Jacques-François de Chastenet, marquis de Puységur, maréchal de France, Traité de l'Art de la Guerre, par principes et par règles, ouvrage de M. le maréchal de Puységur, mis à jour par M. le marquis de Puységur son fils, etc... Paris, 1748, puis La Haye, 1749. ●Quarles, Benjamin, The Negro in the American Revolution. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1961. ●Raja-Ram, R., The Nawabship of Arcot, St. Joseph's Industrial School Press, Trichinopoly, 1912. ●Rapport de l'Archiviste de la Province de Québec [RAPQ], Département du Secrétaire de la Province, Imprimeur de Sa Majesté le Roi, Québec, [année]. 1924- 1925 : Lettres de protestation de diverses Chambres de Commerce de France en 1760-1762, contre l'intention du Gouvernement de céder le Canada. (Protestation des C de C de Bordeaux, La Rochelle, Nantes, Marseille, Lyon, Le Havre, Dunkerque et Montpellier) pp.199-228. ●Recueil des Instructions données aux Ambassadeurs et Ministres de France depuis les Traités de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française, publié sous les auspices de la Commission des Archives diplomatiques au Ministère des Affaires étrangères, XII, ESPAGNE, avec une introduction et des notes par Morel-Fatio, A., et Léonardon, H., Tome Deuxième (1701-1722), Félix Alcan Éditeur [An536 cienne Librairie Germer Baillière et Cie], Paris, 1898. ●Recueil des instructions données aux ambassadeurs et ministres de France, depuis les Traités de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française, XXV 2-ANGLETERRE Tome Troisième

(1698-1791), avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Éditions du CNRS (Centre national de la Recherche scientifique), Paris, 1965. ●Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States, Government Printing Office, Washington, 1889. 6 tomes. ●Robert F. Batchelder, "The Counterfeiting of Colonial Paper Money as Seen through the Letters of Signer of the Declaration of Independence, Josiah Bartlett," Manuscripts 31, no. 3 (Summer 1979): 207-11. ●Rogers, H.C.B., colonel, The British Army of the Eighteenth Century, George Allan & Unwin Ltd, London, 1977. ●Roncière, Charles de La, Histoire de la marine française, Plon, Paris, 1899. ●Rosengarten, Joseph G., A defence of the Hessians, The Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography, Philadelphie, 1899. ●Schiff, Stacy, A Great Improvisation : Franklin, France and the Birth of America, Owl Books ; Henry Holt Books, New York, NY 2005. ●Schneider, Lieutenant Colonel Fernand, Histoire des Doctrines militaires, PUF, Paris, 1957. ●Scott, Kenneth, Counterfeiting in Colonial America, 2nd ed., with a foreword by David R. Johnson (Philadelphia, 2000). ●Secret journals of the Continental Congress. 4 vol. ●Shy, John. A People Numerous and Armed: Reflections on the Military Struggle for American Independence. New York: Oxford University Press, 1976. ●Sir Edward Shepherd Creasy (1812-1878) est un historien britannique, The Fifteen Decisive Battles of the World : From Marathon to Waterloo, Humphrey Milford Oxford University Press, Toronto, 1915. «Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States, Government Printing Office, Washington, 1889. 6 tomes. T.1, p.342. ●Smoier, Stanley C. "Indians as Allies in the Intercolonial Wars." New York History, 17, 1936. ●Souvenirs maritimes de Scipion de Castries, édition établie, présentée et annotée par Gérard de Colbert-Turgis, Mercure de France, Paris, 1997. ●Sparks, Jared, The Diplomatic Correspondence of The American Revolution. New York. ●Stephen Mihm, "Accept No Imitations: The Campaign against Counterfeits, Past and Present," Common-Place 4, no. 4 (July 2004). ●Stillé, Charles J., Comte de Broglie, the Proposed Stadtholder of America, article dans Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography, XI, 1887. ●Stillson et Hughan, History of Freemasonry and Concordant Orders,, 1890. ●Stuart, Bérault, Traité sur l'Art de la Guerre, Introduction et Édition par Élie de Comminges, Éditions Martinus Nijhoff, La Haye, 1976. ●Sue, Eugène, Histoire de la Marine française, 1835. ●Sullivan John, Letters and Papers of Major-General John Sullivan, Continental Army, publié par O.G. Hammond, volumes XIII (1930), XIV (1931), XV (1939), Collections of the New Hampshire Historical Society. 537 ●Suntzu, L'Art de la guerre, Flammarion, Paris, 1972. [traduction de Francis Wang] ●Susane, Louis, général, Histoire de l'Artillerie française, Bibliothèque d'Éducation Hetzel & Cie, Paris, 1874. ●The Heath Papers, in Collection of the Massachusetts Historical Society, Published by the Society, Boston, 1878. vol.II, Lettre de Heath au Conseil du Massachusetts, le 9 septembre 1778. ●The Princeton Historical Association, A Brief Narrative of the Ravages of the British and Hessians at Princeton in 1776-77, Edited by Varnum Lansing Collins, Princeton, N.J., 1906. ●The Revolutionary Diplomatic

Correspondence of the United States, Edited under Direction of Congress by Francis Wharton with Preliminary, Index, and Notes Historical and Legal, Government Printing Office, Department of State, Washington, 1889. 6 volumes. •The Writings of George Washington, from the Original Manuscript Source, 1745-1799, John C. Fitzpatrick, Editor, Washington, 1936. 39 vol., •Thomas, Andros, "The old Jersey captive: Or, A narrative of the captivity of Thomas Andros...on board the old Jersey prison ship at New York, 1781. In a series of letters to a friend." W. Peirce. 1833. •Thomas, Peter D. G. British Politics and the Stamp Act Crisis: The First Phase of the American Revolution, 1763-1767, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1975. •Trevelyan, George (1912). George the Third and Charles Fox: The Concluding Part of the American Revolution, New York: Longmans, Green, New York, 1912. vol.1. •Trevelyan, George-Macauley, O.,M., Illustrated English Social History, 4 vol. Longmans Publishing, Londres, 1944. •Trevelyan, II, 33-34. Cf. Andrews, Journal of a Lady of Quality, p. 38 and Appendix I.] •Trudel, Marcel, La Révolution américaine (1775-1783), Éditions du Boréal Express, Sillery, 1976. •Un marin de l'île de Ré, Jacob Dechezeaux, au siège de Pondichéry en 1778, D. Lièvre, Alger : Imprimerie Minerva, Alger, [sans date]. •Vauban, Maréchal de, Traité de l'attaque des places, Paris 1706. •Vaucher, P., Recueil des instructions données aux ambassadeurs et ministres de France, depuis les Traités de Westphalie jusqu'à la Révolution française, XXV.2 Angleterre, Tome Troisième (1698-1791), avec une introduction et des notes par Paul Vaucher, Editions du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique, Paris, 1965. •Verne, Jules Famille-sans-nom, Guérin, Montréal, 1982. p.20 •Vidal, général, L'Armée française à travers les âges; L'Artillerie, Paris, 1933. •Vincent, Bernard et Marienstras, Élise, Les Oubliés de la Révolution américaine : femmes, Indiens, Noirs, quakers, francs-maçons dans la guerre d'Indépendance, Presses universitaires, Nancy, 1990. •Wanty, Émile, général, La pensée militaire des origines à 1914, Brépols, Bruxelles, 1962. •Washburn, Wilcomb E., Indians and the American Revolution, 538 •Watt, Thomas, B., Secret Journals of the Acts and Proceedings of Congress, Thomas B. Watt, Boston, 1821. 4 tomes, t.I, et Journals of the Continental Congress. •West, Charles E.. "Horrors of the prison ships: Dr. West's description of the wallabout floating dungeons, how captive patriots fared." Eagle Book Printing Department, 1895. •Wharton, Francis, Lettre de Franklin à James Hutton écrite à Passy (France) le 1er février 1778, Revolutionary Diplomatic Correspondence of the United States, Government Printing Office, Washington, 1889. 6 tomes. •Worthington C., Ford, Journals of the Continental Congress, Édition Ford, (31 volumes.)





This book is a critical edition of the French, English, and American's motivations during the American Revolution, because "where there is no freedom of blaming, there can be no genuine praise" (Beaumarchais). The American Revolution is in full swing. Deep in their hearts, the Canadians of the defunct New France will take advantage of the opportunity to free themselves from the English occupiers. But does France care about recovering this immense territory? For the first time without allies against France, England collapses in defeat under the applause of other European powers: Prussia, Austria, Spain, Russia, the Netherlands... Why didn't the French take advantage of this to take back New France from the humiliated England? From diplomatic documents, the author delivers in this book the key to this fascinating enigma.



9 781387 526321